



# ABSOLUTE CHOICE

BOOK 04

*Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Absolute Choice

(Jue Dui Xuan Xiang)

(绝对选项)

by

Pear Lands In The Autumn Spring

(梨落秋溪)

# Synopsis

---

A world filled with heroes with superpowers. A world attacked by calamity fiends. A modern world filled with wonders and dangers.

Shi Xiaobai, a child from normal Earth, walked into such a world, proclaiming to be its king. But at the first signs of danger, he is forced to make a choice, one which he cannot refuse for time would repeat, making him face the choice again.

He is not humble nor is he modest, but neither is he delusional. Yet, the Absolute Choice seems to make fun of him. Will the joke be on him or will he laugh at his opponents? There will be many watching his escapades, and there will be some joining him in his adventures.

To see through the world and to grasp its truth, that is the destiny of the King.

# Copyright by Lisa Hayes

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rex @ [Wuxia World](#)

Translation Edits by Lucas @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: The Avenger That Waited For The Opportunity

---

By saying those words, the shifty rookie was clearly trying to sow discord. At worst, he wanted to break the situation of no one being able to approach Shi Xiaobai. He believed his timing was not bad, hoping that other rookies that were in 'hiding' would echo him.

However, not only did the scene not become chaotic, it ended up becoming silent. Everyone was giving him strange looks.

It was most frightening when everything suddenly turned quiet.

The shifty rookie's heart skipped a beat as he felt a sense of ominous foreboding. He chuckled, "What are all of you looking at me for?"

Feng Yuanlin rolled his eyes and said, "Do you treat us as fools, or are you trying to tell us that you are a complete fool?"

The shifty rookie immediately broke out into cold sweat as he forcefully found his composure, "Did I say something wrong? We don't even know her identity, so why must we trust her?"

Pulp Farmer said, "I don't know her name, but I know she's a Gaia rookie. She comes from the same organization as Shi Xiaobai."

The shifty rookie's face turned paler as he insisted, "It's not necessarily that they are close even if they come from the same organization, right?"

Feng Yuanlin said with a sneer, "If their relationship isn't close, then why would Shi Xiaobai pull out a pair of shoes from her chest?"

Everyone immediately had an odd look. Pulling out a pair of shoes from the chest was indeed too much of a wonder. To be able to do such a thing, describing their relationship as intimate might be lacking.

The shifty rookie trembled in his heart. In his haste, he had forgotten about the matter. But having everything said and done, he could only remain stubborn and refuse to admit his error. "The saying goes that the birds in one grove are husband and wife, but they each fly away during danger. If a marital couple can betray each other, I just think that we cannot trust her fully. What if she destroyed the epaulette during a critical moment? Everyone should be treated equally. No one should be able to come within ten meters of Shi Xiaobai!"

Feng Yuanlin coldly said, "If no one is allowed to come within ten meters, the chances of you being able to destroy the epaulette amid chaos would be higher, right?"

The shifty rookie's face changed drastically as he angrily said, "Don't you slander me!"

“Enough!”

Pulp Farmer thundered angrily as he said, “Look at her hand. Even I am touched by her friendship towards Shi Xiaobai. Are you fucking blind or is your heart made of dog shit?”

The shifty rookie took a step back from Pulp Farmer’s thundering. His face turned liver-colored as he was at a loss for words.

Feng Yuanlin rolled his eyes and looked towards the crowd. He said, “This person is an idiot. None of you have any other opinions, right?”

Everyone shook their heads blankly.

Feng Yuanlin coldly said, “Since he acted as an idiot, we will look at him as an idiot. How do you think we should handle him?”

Immediately, people began suggesting.

“Beat the hell out of him then kick him out?”

“Eliminate him straight away. I have obsessive-compulsive disorder. If this kind of idiot can continue jumping here like that, I’ll definitely not be able to sleep at night.”

“I suggest giving him a happy corner!”

“I think we should let him know why the flowers are so red.”

“It’s everyone’s responsibility to educate a fool. Let me bring him to the woods to have an intimate encounter with the trees!”

“... ”

Upon hearing these malicious words and the sinister gazes from the crowd, the shifty rookie finally realized. I’m doomed, I played myself to death!

He thought it was a brilliant maneuver that he could carry the situation well, but unexpectedly, this wave of maneuvers was the maneuver of an idiot.

No one could doubt Mu Yuesheng at this moment. No one had the qualifications!

His series of doubts had not only failed to stir any emotions. Instead, it exposed himself in a retarded manner. The ‘hidden companions’ he had had cleverly betrayed him!

Although the shifty rookie did not suffer the physical pain, his Life Epaulette was destroyed by someone beside him. He was eliminated in indignation.

Everyone jokingly cursed the person’s idiotic idea, but their



moods became heavy.

The person that had shot the crossbow arrow and the idiot who tried to sow discord but ended up exposing himself proved one thing—amid the hundred rookies gathered here to ‘protect Shi Xiaobai’, there were despicable people who had impure thoughts and were scheming to shatter Shi Xiaobai’s epaulette.

There were definitely more than one of these despicable people, but as for how many there were, it was likely a very heavy figure.

At this very moment, only one idiot had been revealed. However, it was unknown how many people were waiting in hiding with sketchy thoughts, waiting for the opportunity. The wretch that used a crossbow to launch a sneak attack had yet to be found!

It was also unknown when the bloody figure that had escaped would fully revive. At that moment, the people would have to resist the bloody figure’s assault, and they would have to be wary of someone sneaking in an attack during the chaos. It was truly trouble both internally and externally, making it extremely difficult!

And the most important problem was that other than Mu Yuesheng, the rookies present were unqualified to approach closer than ten meters from Shi Xiaobai. This placed the arduous task of defending Shi Xiaobai on this girl.

Mu Yuesheng’s nerves were tight. She was in complete concentration. Her eyes were filled with firm resolve, making

others pain their hearts for her.

Feng Yuanlin chuckled and comforted the crowd, “Actually, we should look on the bright side of things. Maybe ten minutes would pass before the bloody figure fully revives?”

Just as Feng Yuanlin’s words faded away, there was a commotion in the fringe of the crowd. Someone screamed, “It’s here! The bloody figure is back!”

...

The blood figure that returned could no longer be called a blood figure. This was because his skin had completely rejuvenated. A black robe covered him once again. He looked just like when he first appeared.

However, his face was still as ugly as before. People could not help but lament. Man, since you have revived yourself, can’t you do some alterations to your look?

Feng Yuanlin was figuratively smacked in the face nearly instantly, so angrily, he cursed at the black-robed youth, “It’s not your fault to look ugly, but it’s your fault for coming here to scare the shit out of us!”

The black-robed youth ignored him. His eyes were scarlet. His gaze penetrated the crowd and landed straight on Shi Xiaobai.

“Shi Xiaobai, kill!”

The hoarse voice seemed to howl from an abyss.

“Kill your sister. You only know about killing all day!”

Feng Yuanlin stood with the crowd and with a wave of his hand, he loudly said, “Brothers, charge! Destroy him!”

The outermost rookies did not charge ahead with the winds of his command. Instead, they shivered back in fear. Immediately, the crowd was suddenly squeezed together.

The black-robed youth was holding a blood-colored sickle. Standing outside the crowd, it seemed as though he was considering how to deal with the crowd present. It was as though a bloody butcher was considering how to deal with a herd of sheep.

The outermost rookies could clearly smell the rich smell of blood and could deeply sense the terrifying aura of the black-robed youth that seemed to come from the deepest abyss. It struck fear to their very souls.

“Don’t retreat. Why are all of you retreating?”

The rookies behind created a din in puzzlement. The crowd slowly squeezed together into a huddled bunch. The person closest to the interior was about to be squeezed into the ten-meter forbidden zone.

And at this moment, the black-robed youth finally moved. His legs lifted off the ground and like an arrow, he charged at the rookies. Lifting the blood-colored sickle high, he was like the Grim Reaper here to harvest souls.

“Come on, we have so many people, there’s no reason to be afraid of him!”

The expressions of the rookies along the periphery changed drastically when they saw the black-robed youth rush at them. Without any room for retreat, they could only bite the bullet and clash head on!

The black-robed youth brandished his sickle as a sanguinary storm stirred, hitting the rookies standing in the first row!

“Ah, ah, ah...”

Loud screams followed one after another. The rookies that were struck by the sanguinary storm had their psionic barriers instantly shattered. As though they were being soaked in boiling water, their bare skin began producing ulcers. Immediately they felt excruciating pain as they screamed aloud!

At the same time, the epaulettes on their shoulders quickly melted away. They transformed into beams of golden light before being transported out of the trial.

The black-robed youth did not kill anyone. This was because his master had ordered him to kill at most twenty people. He had failed to curb himself, killing nine people on the first level. Removing the few that had to be killed on the list, the number of people he could kill as he wished was already few in number.

Shi Xiaobai was considered one. The rest of those present lacked the qualifications!

Thankfully in this level, the epaulette could be used to represent their lives. Destroying their epaulettes was equivalent of clearing these irritating bugs!

The black-robed youth continued advancing.

The second row of rookies had already gathered their powers and were ready. When the first row of rookies was instantly eliminated, they were extremely frightened, but felt furious at the same time.

The second row of rookies attacked in anger!

However, when their attacks landed on the flickering red barrier around the black-robed youth, it was as if they were swallowed by lava. Instantly, the blows vanished.

The black-robed youth waved his sickle once again, producing a sanguinary storm. The second row of rookies did not dare to use their psionic barriers to resist like the first row of rookies. They

scattered and fled.

A rookie tripped and was struck by the sanguinary storm with his mouth open. With a shrill scream, he spewed out hot blood from his mouth. Even his innards were nearly spat out. Before his epaulette melted, he was already dead. He died terribly.

The death of this rookie made the black-robed youth let out a frustrated roar. This was also the final blow to the other rookies.

“We are not his match at all. Run!”

“Run!”

“People in front, run faster. I don’t want to be eliminated. I don’t want to die!”

To most of the rookies present, protecting Shi Xiaobai was an impulsive move due to the emotional stirring of the people around them. They did not have the strong obligation to risk their lives and futures.

They could curb themselves from taking advantage of Shi Xiaobai’s perilous state and could waste ten minutes to support a campaign of ‘protecting Shi Xiaobai’, but they would not participate in an escapade that threatened their lives!

The rookies pushed and shoved as they escaped. A few rookies that had been long in hiding finally could not endure it. Taking

advantage of the chaotic situation, they wanted to sneakily destroy Shi Xiaobai's epaulette.

However, regardless of how chaotic the situation was, Mu Yuesheng, who maintained her calm and vigilance, did not give them any chance. Mu Yuesheng showed them no mercy by eliminating all of these rookies that had taken the risk!

The black-robed youth did not chase after them. He waited for the bugs to leave by themselves. Since he could not brutally trample these cockroaches, he no longer had the desire to even look at these cockroaches.

In a few moments, more than a hundred rookies had dispersed, leaving a few people behind.

Mu Yuesheng obviously did not leave.

None of the five that were forecast to be in the top ten left. They were Pulp Farmer, Feng Yuanlin, Zhou Chuchu, Liu Yu, and An Mo.

At this moment, three other unfamiliar rookies stayed behind.

These nine people became the last line of defense for Shi Xiaobai!

...

...

A kilometer away from Shi Xiaobai, in the shade of a large tree, Sen Senyuan hid within. He only revealed half a head and a muzzle.

His right arm had been ripped off from the middle, leaving him only with his left hand. As such, his combat ability had been greatly reduced.

He no longer appeared mightily in front of everyone while treating them in contempt.

A fall into the pit, a gain in his wit. He now knew the pertinence of being sinister.

Therefore, he hid a kilometer away in preparation to snipe.

He had waited six minutes for this shot!

However, he was very patient. He was accumulating his hatred, intending to vent it completely at the moment of his revenge!

He wanted vengeance. Of course, it would not be as simple as destroying the epaulette. He wanted this shot to blast Shi Xiaobai into meat pulp!

Sen Senyuan was engrossed in the commotion that was



happening a kilometer away. His eyes grew brighter and he started to look more and more eager!

The black-robed youth's appearance was the opportunity he had been waiting for!

As long as Pulp Farmer, Feng Yuanlin and the top ten rookies ranked in the forecast ran away or fought the black-robed youth, there would be only Mu Yuesheng alone near to Shi Xiaobai to defend against his bullet!

It was absolutely impossible for a person to defend against the terrifying bullet he would use at an enormous cost!

In a few more seconds, he could use the explosion and the piles of ground meat on the ground to celebrate the success of his revenge!

“Go to hell, Shi Xiaobai!”

Sen Senyuan could not help but growl, “Shi Xiaobai, I'll definitely tear you apart!”

...

# Chapter 302: The Best Protector

---

The nine rookies became Shi Xiaobai's final line of defense.

Feng Yuanlin looked at Pulp Farmer and company as he exclaimed, "I never expected that the bunch of you would stay behind."

With the black-robed youth returning after his resurrection, he had eliminated more than a dozen people in a few seconds. Furthermore, he had killed one of the rookies. At this moment, staying behind to protect Shi Xiaobai was risking elimination or their lives. Ordinary relations were not enough to keep people persisting to take such a huge risk.

However, Pulp Farmer and a few rookies who did not have intimate relationships with Shi Xiaobai had chosen to stay behind. It was quite an inexplicable thing.

Pulp Farmer raised his spear and said with a deep voice, "The reason why I stayed behind is not to protect Shi Xiaobai. I was sent retreating by the bloody figure just now. If I were to leave now, wouldn't that be tantamount to fleeing? My pride does not allow me to do this. Furthermore, I don't believe that this person can be so much stronger than me, considering we are all at the Psionic Mortal Realm!"

An Mo gave a gentle smile and said, "Agreed."

Zhou Chuchu smacked her lips, "Agreed."

Liu Yu shook his whisk and said, “Agreed. Furthermore, the slaying of demons is the duty of This Penniless Priest.”

The other three rookies no one knew did not break the combo as they immediately responded with “agreed”.

Feng Yuanlin nodded in satisfaction and said, “Very well, everyone’s reasons are excellent. Then let’s stick to the end. Remember, our goal is to stall for time. There’s no need to fight to the death. Everyone can use any dirty means appropriately, as long as we can stall for time!”

Zhou Chuchu rolled her eyes and said, “Hey, Feng Yuanlin, why did a joke like you suddenly become our leader?”

Feng Yuanlin shrugged and said, “Because I’m handsome.”

“Pui!”

Zhou Chuchu said repulsively, “It seems you haven’t looked into a mirror since you were born. I say, Feng Yuanlin, aren’t you the most afraid of dying? I even see your legs trembling. So why would you even stay behind?”

Feng Yuanlin stared widely at her and said, “Shi Xiaobai is my daddy... Oops, slip of the tongue. Shi Xiaobai is the boss I have acknowledged. I, Feng Yuanlin, am a man of indomitable spirit, so how can I do such disloyal things as running?”

Zhou Chuchu stared back, prepared to taunt him again. Just as the two jokers were chatting about, the black-robed youth, who had waited for around ten seconds, finally made a move again!

Feng Yuanlin immediately widened his eyes as he shouted, "Fuck, here he comes, kill him!"

Pulp Farmer was the bravest. He led the charge towards the black-robed youth. He thrust his spear in an awe-inspiring manner, as though he was a courageous general!

The other seven rookies fanned out after him. Standing at different spots, they began launching their attacks on the black-robed youth.

Mu Yuesheng, who was standing afar, did not charge to do battle. She had to stand by Shi Xiaobai's side to be wary against anyone from launching a sneak attack by staying behind.

Pulp Farmer's spear stabbed into the crimson barrier in front of the black-robed youth, but it felt like he was stabbing into mud. His force was completely dispersed and he could not even pull out his spear.

When the black-robed youth brandished his blood-colored sickle, a sanguinary storm immediately surged forward. Pulp Farmer's expression drastically changed as he retracted his spear and quickly retreated. However, the sanguinary storm's motions seemed instantaneous as it clung on to him.

Pulp Farmer hurriedly conjured his psionic barrier to defend against the sanguinary storm. His strength was much stronger than the rookies in the first row, so he was not taken down by the sanguinary storm. However, the redness seemed to pollute his psionic barrier, turning it red.

Pulp Farmer did not dare to make any unnecessary motions, nor did he dare to remove the psionic barrier. He could only stand in his original spot while entering a stalemate with the sanguinary storm.

The black-robed youth ignored Pulp Farmer because the attacks of the others had arrived.

A melodious tune of a flute, a vigorous whip, a slamming shield, a mysterious paper charm... All sorts of attacks struck the black-robed youth simultaneously!

However, all the attacks that hit the blood-colored barrier sunk into it, like rocks falling into a lake. Even An Mo's flute tune turned silent at the moment it struck the blood-colored barrier.

“Holy shit, what is this thing? Isn't such a defensive barrier too exaggerated?”

“It's not that his defensive barrier is exaggerated, it's that his defense far exceeds my offensive power.”

“Why can this happen? Isn’t he at the Psionic Mortal Realm? How can there be such a huge gap within the Psionic Mortal Realm? There are so many of us attacking together, yet we can’t even crack his defense?”

Everyone exclaimed.

The black-robed youth’s blood-colored sickle was brandished once again. Sanguinary storms began surging towards the remaining seven, like red locusts. These storms were very fast and appeared to have tracking abilities.

The seven immediately ran, but not one of them escaped unscathed. They were hit by the sanguinary storm one after another and had to conjure their psionic barriers to enter a stalemate with the sanguinary storm.

Pulp Farmer, Feng Yuanlin, Liu Yu, An Mo, and Zhou Chuchu were after all forecast to be the top ten rookies. They were able to withstand the sanguinary storms for a moment, but the other three unfamiliar rookies were not as lucky. They lasted for a second before being eliminated.

In less than ten seconds, only Mu Yuesheng was left as Shi Xiaobai’s last line of defense!

The black-robed youth’s strength was terrifying!

The black-robed youth did not continue using the sanguinary

storms as an attack towards the quintet. To him, these bugs would not last much longer. He could not trample the bugs to death, so he could not be bothered to do anything to these bugs that could no longer do a thing.

The black-robed youth turned his head towards Shi Xiaobai. His scarlet eyes were filled with killing intent. This hateful person was his target.

Mu Yuesheng silently walked in front of Shi Xiaobai. Icy-blue electric bolts began jumping around. She was the last person defending Shi Xiaobai. Her 'Lightning Flashstep' was unable to carry anything beyond 10kg during her movement. It was also unlikely the black-robed youth would turn his aggro on her.

Therefore, she could only face him in face-to-face battle.

Every second counted!

But with her strength, how many additional seconds could she buy?

...

...

In the woods, a petite vermilion haired girl with a blond youth were running. Their speed was not very fast, and their expressions looked like they were short of breath. They were completely

exhausted, but they were still gritting their teeth while running full speed ahead.

To Mozzie, the past ten or more minutes of running were at full speed. Her body had reached its limits, but with Sunless and Shi Xiaobai consecutively becoming 'fugitives', she had to grit her teeth and constantly surpass the limits of her physique. She forced herself to accelerate time and time again.

Kevin was in a better situation, but it was not optimistic either. He was running ahead of Mozzie by a short distance. This was because he knew the importance of a pacer in front of someone during a marathon. However, with Mozzie becoming faster and faster, he had to accelerate as well. Maintaining such a speed for more than ten minutes was a difficult trial for Kevin, who was the only one who failed to complete the hundred laps during the mini-collective training. At this moment, he was panting, and wavering about his tipping point.

The location they were in was too far away from where the crowd was gathered. They had to cross nearly the entire mountain range. The rookies who were in their vicinity chose not to run there because they knew they would not make it in time.

However, the Gaia trio had to rush there. Midway, Mu Yuesheng woke up from her breakthrough coma. Moving ahead of them, she used Lightning Flashstep to reach the battle scene at an exaggerated speed. As for the two of them, they could only follow behind while gritting their teeth running.

They were far too late for Sunless' Life and Death Assault.



But immediately following that, the fugitive of the next Life and Death Assault was Shi Xiaobai. Furthermore, from the ten seconds of imagery shown in their heads, Shi Xiaobai looked extremely weak, to the point of having fallen unconscious.

This made Mozzie and Kevin run even more desperately.

They did not know if they could arrive in time.

They did not know if their strength could do anything even if they could make it in time.

Maybe, the effort they were putting in at this moment was in vain.

However, they continued doing so without any hesitation. They ran away with full determination!

This was because back when Shi Xiaobai guided them and lured the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign away, he did so without any hesitation or doubt!

Even if they could do something extremely trivial, or even if their strength could restrain the person who wanted to harm Shi Xiaobai for a second, they had to rush there. They were resolute in their run there!

And at this moment, they had finally arrived close to Shi Xiaobai's location!

Suddenly, the duo that were running full speed ahead simultaneously heard a voice filled with hate:

“Go to hell, Shi Xiaobai. I'll definitely tear you apart!”

The quiet mountain woods accentuated the voice. Mozzie and Kevin came to a halt in shock. Turning their heads, they looked towards the direction where the voice came from.

They saw half of a head and half of a gun's barrel propping out of the shade of tree dozens of meters to their side.

An unfamiliar rookie hiding in a tree?

The firearm he was holding looked like a sniper rifle?

Did that person just say, “go to hell, Shi Xiaobai”?

These three thoughts immediately flashed in the duo's minds. In addition to the kilometer distance away from Shi Xiaobai, they immediately came to an appalling conclusion.

This unfamiliar rookie was hiding in the tree in preparation to snipe Shi Xiaobai!

Mozzie immediately turned anxious, but she did not act rashly. The rookie in the tree appeared extremely focused and had failed to notice their arrival. Mozzie knew that they could not make any sound, or it might sound off an alarm and scare him away.

Mozzie looked at Kevin, but did not say a word but mouthed the words, “What...do...we...do?”

Kevin considered for a moment and immediately thought of a solution. He gestured an ‘ok’ to Mozzie, indicating for her not to move. He then started looking around him and searching for something.

Soon, Kevin’s eyes lit up slightly. Tiptoeing to the side, he tried to suppress any sound he made.

Kevin picked up a gigantic boulder.

Mozzie’s eyes lit up and she gave Kevin a big thumbs up.

Kevin gave a delighted smile. He looked around for a spot which would not be blocked by trees. Aiming at the head that was exposed from the tree’s shade, he augmented his body with the [Price of Might] before throwing the boulder.

The boulder shot out like an artillery shell, but it was as fast as a bullet!

This move was a long-ranged ‘offensive skill’ self-created by

Kevin when he faced the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign and Titan Ape because he did not dare to go close!

You don't say, this move might seem to be just a throwing of a boulder, but with the augmentation of the Price of Might, the power was not to be underestimated. It even gave Kevin a baffling illusion that this was the most suited fighting technique for a genius like him.

At this moment, Sen Senyuan was completely engrossed in looking for the opportunity to shoot. His finger was lodged to the trigger, so he did not discover the appearance of the duo dozens of meters away to his side.

Sen Senyuan was feeling very excited because his opportunity was here. Pulp Farmer and company had been defeated, with only Mu Yuesheng left. However, in order to end it in one shot, he could not take the risk. Sen Senyuan decided to patiently wait for the moment Mu Yuesheng charged to do battle with the black-robed youth.

He had waited for so long, so it did not matter even if he waited for a few more seconds.

“Although you are definitely doomed, I have to be the one who kills you with my own hands, Shi Xiaobai!”

Sen Senyuan gritted his teeth and lodged his finger tightly on the trigger. He was waiting for that second of revenge!

Suddenly, a gust of wind blew at him. Sen Senyuan sensed danger as he turned his head in alarm. However, the boulder was already at hand. There was no time for him to even react.

Sen Senyuan was completely astounded.

“Bang!”

A loud bang was heard as Sen Senyuan’s head was directly hit by the boulder!

Sen Senyuan’s head went dizzy. He was about to faint the next moment, but the indignation in his heart fueled him. He made his last move!

He pulled the trigger!

“Go to hell! Shi Xiaobai!”

Sen Senyuan’s eyes rolled over as he fell down from the tree. However, his avenging bullet had already shot out!

However, having been hit by a boulder, his body had wavered slightly, causing the gun’s barrel to shake as well.

As such, the direction of the bullet...

In the next moment, a bullet flew past Shi Xiaobai and Mu Yuesheng's bodies. With a strange trajectory, it hit the black-robed youth!

...

# Chapter 303: Never Expected

---

Sen Senyuan, who pulled the trigger before being knocked unconscious, had shot out a bullet he had specially prepared. In order to ensure that he would succeed in killing Shi Xiaobai, the bullet he had chosen was extremely valuable. Furthermore, the most powerful function of this bullet was its stealthiness.

The bullet was silent and colorless, almost to the point of invisibility. It was hard to discern it with the naked eye unless one was constantly on high alert. It was almost impossible to defend against the bullet unless one could timely sense the danger.

And it was because of this, the biggest weakness of the bullet was how it would be greatly ineffective if the target was constantly in an extremely vigilant state. And Mu Yuesheng happened to be in such a state; therefore, Sen Senyuan was waiting for the moment Mu Yuesheng would lower her guard.

Just a second of relaxation from Mu Yuesheng would allow this nearly-invisible bullet to penetrate Shi Xiaobai's head.

Not only its power was astounding, it would also produce an earth-shaking explosion. Furthermore, its penetrative power was extremely terrifying. No matter how thick your barrier was or how thick your skull was, it would instantly blow a hole in your head if you did not dodge in time.

Therefore, this bullet was also called the 'Invisible Head-blown Bullet'. It was one of the highest grade of head-blowing

assassination bullets and could be considered a holy item for assassination.

Sen Senyuan only had one ‘Invisible Head-blown Bullet’, but as long as he killed Shi Xiaobai to avenge himself for his right arm being cleaved off, Sen Senyuan would not have a second thought.

However, at this moment, the specially prepared death banquet for Shi Xiaobai, the Invisible Head-blown Bullet, prepared for his vengeance, had changed its trajectory because of the sudden appearance of a boulder.

It also seemed to change the fate of others!

The bullet flew past Shi Xiaobai and Mu Yuesheng’s side, and with an odd trajectory, it shot towards the black-robed youth’s head.

The black-robed youth was only facing a handful of trash with power levels of five, so he obviously was not in a highly vigilant state. In fact, he was not wary at all. Therefore, he did not sense the danger of the Invisible Head-blown Bullet shooting right at him!

By the time he reacted, it was already too late. He couldn’t even conjure the blood-colored barrier. The bullet instantly penetrated his head, and his ugly head immediately burst like a watermelon!

This sudden change of events astounded everyone. Even Mu



Yuesheng exclaimed and stared agape.

The head-blown black-robed youth crashed backwards and was reduced to a pool of blood. The blood began to flow and coagulate, like bloodworms squirming, in an attempt to gather together.

Pulp Farmer came around and shouted, “Quickly prevent it from reviving!”

Mu Yuesheng immediately snapped out of her daze and stretched her hand out and shot an electro-cannon at the pool of blood.

The blood blasted apart and splattered everywhere on the ground, but soon, the blood began to gather towards a central point.

Mu Yuesheng’s expression changed slightly as she shot out another electro-cannon, blasting apart the blood that was about to coagulate.

At this moment, as the black-robed youth had suddenly died, the sanguinary storm had greatly weakened. Pulp Farmer was the first to escape the restraint of the sanguinary storm as he charged towards the pool of blood. He thrust his spear out and whipped up a storm, splattering the blood everywhere in the woods.

The others also finally managed to escape the restraints of the sanguinary storm. Feng Yuanlin angrily roared, “Destroy it!”

All of them had nearly been eliminated, so they were still feeling the lingering fear, so how could they allow the bloody person to revive? Each and every one of them attacked angrily, as though they wanted to blow the blood on the ground to nothingness.

However, regardless of how far the blood was dispersed, it would eventually coagulate together at an extremely fast speed. Furthermore, it was coagulating faster and faster.

“Holy shit, how do we kill this monster?”

Everyone tried various methods, but no matter how much they diluted the blood with water, or used fire or high temperatures to evaporate the blood, they were all ineffective. The splattered blood still coalesced at an extremely fast speed.

Pulp Farmer said with a frown, “It looks like we will not be able to kill it. We can only drag out the time for it to revive. We can’t let it revive before Shi Xiaobai leaves at least.”

Liu Yu said softly, “Why don’t each of us bring a bit of the blood and run in different directions?”

An Mo nodded and said, “Good idea. Brother Pulp Farmer, you stay behind to continue protecting Shi Xiaobai. The four of us will bring a bit of the blood and run separately in four directions. However, I’m afraid we can’t seal the blood for too long. It will continuously ‘grow stronger’, so it’s best if everyone runs at full speed, the further the better.”

Upon hearing this, everyone felt that the idea was feasible. They immediately took action. Using psionic construction, each of them constructed a vessel and then used a psionic barrier to envelop the vessel. They gathered blood, which was jumping around madly like a flea in the vessel, from the ground. It looked rather disgusting.

Everyone's nervousness lessened slightly, and immediately, someone thought of a strange question.

Feng Yuanlin wonder out aloud, "Say, why did the monster suddenly self-destruct its head?"

Pulp Farmer shook his head and said, "It wasn't a self-destruction. Although I didn't see it clearly, it was likely a bullet that splattered its brains."

Feng Yuanlin said with a gasp, "Are you serious? Then, doesn't it mean that someone is secretly helping us?"

Zhou Chuchu rolled her eyes and said, "Not helping us. That person is helping Shi Xiaobai in the dark! It should be a fan of Shi Xiaobai?"

Pulp Farmer nodded and said, "It's definitely no ordinary fan. The timing of that strike was opportune. The person waited till we were all wiped out, the moment when the bloody figure was most relaxed. This person must have waited for a very long time. His mind had to be strained for so long to be able to do this. Furthermore, that person has yet to appear up till now. You can

see that the person is one who silently gives, never asking for anything in return.”

Feng Yuanlin reflected on this, saying, “That’s a true fan!”

At this moment, An Mo urged, “It’s all been gathered. Let’s take action quickly. The speed at which this blood strengthens is astoundingly fast. It might break free of our shackles very quickly.”

The rest nodded their heads solemnly.

“I’ll head east.”

“Then I’ll go west.”

“Alright, I’ll be north.”

The trio quickly informed the rest of their directions.

At this moment, Feng Yuanlin said with a sinister smile, “Does anyone of you know where the toilet is?”

The blood that was restrained by Feng Yuanlin suddenly felt a deep sense of malice, and immediately, it began to put up a struggle.

...

...

Kevin threw out the boulder and it was a direct hit. The sniper that had revealed half his head immediately plummeted downwards from the tree.

Mozzie shouted 'nice'.

The duo hurriedly ran towards the tree and saw a short-haired teenager lying on the ground. At this moment, his head was bleeding and his eyes were white. Clearly, he had fainted.

As Sen Senyuan's bullet was silent and invisible, Mozzie and Kevin did not even know that Sen Senyuan had pulled the trigger at the final moment.

The duo looked at him but could not recognize him. However, the sniper rifle in his hand looked to be of rather high quality. As Sen Senyuan was wearing a long-sleeve shirt, the two did not realize that Sen Senyuan had lost an arm.

Kevin whispered, "Did I do a meritorious deed?"

Mozzie gave it a thought and shook her head, before saying, "Probably not. Look at him hiding here so sneakily. He did not even have a tiny bit of awareness. For him to be so easily hit, he is likely a tramp."

Kevin observed Sen Senyuan for a moment before nodding with feelings of indignation. “You are right. This person looks like a tramp from his appearance no matter how I look.”

Mozzie hesitated for a moment and said, “What do we do now? Shall we leave him here or?”

Kevin said with a deep tone, “Regardless of anything, he is Shi Xiaobai’s enemy. It’s best we not leave him here!”

Mozzie nodded.

Kevin squatted down and grabbed the Life Epaulette on Sen Senyuan’s shoulder. Using the Price of Might, he used his strength and immediately crushed the Life Epaulette.

Sen Senyuan transformed into a golden beam of light and was transported out of the trial.

If Sen Senyuan were to know that the bullet he had specially prepared had become the saving grace for Shi Xiaobai, and how he had been eliminated by two second-tier rookies from a second-tier organization, and was even looked upon with disdain as a tramp, he would probably vomit out three catties of blood and cry in the bathroom till he passed out.

Mozzie said, “Let’s go. We need to quickly defend Lord Shi Xiaobai. We might be the most useless in helping him, so we have

to work the hardest!”

Kevin sighed and said, “Alright, let’s hope we can render a tiny bit of help.”

...

...

In an endless darkness, there was a tiny space of light. There, Kali was hugging her belly laughing. She nearly felt shortness of breathing from her laughing. The bell-like laughter sounded extremely pleasant to the ears in the quiet darkness. However, no one had the fortuitous chance of hearing such heavenly chimes.

Kali finally came to a difficult stop after laughing for a very long time. She had been able to guess the opening and process of the matter regarding protecting Shi Xiaobai, but she never guessed of such an ending.

She was feeling somewhat worried to begin with. If Mu Yuesheng was defeated, she had to interfere. When that happened, the self-destruct sequence of the trial would activate. She did not wish to do so unless absolutely necessary.

But every cloud had a silver lining. Mozzie and Kevin, who she thought would be there as extras in the situation, had made the biggest contribution. She had truly never expected it.

The corners of Kali's mouth had a remnant smile, but she felt envious.

“If I can be like them and experience such exciting escapades with Shi Xiaobai, how nice would it be?”

Kali sighed and muttered to herself, “What am I thinking. That's destined to be something impossible.”

At this moment, Kali felt something jump in her heart. She waved her hand and the screen of light in front of her switched to another scene. There, the tiny black-lit person that was constantly advancing in spatial storms finally came to a stop.

Kali's heart leaped. The spot where the tiny black-lit person stopped happened to be in front of the fifth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower's spatial barrier?

Suddenly, the tiny black-lit person's black light began to converge into its body. Its body size which was a third of a human's suddenly contracted.

“Oh? Self-sealing?”

Kali frowned slightly. She had placed a seal on the tiny black-lit person's body, sealing its psionic cultivation realm, but the tiny black-lit person was putting another seal on itself!

Self-sealing was a very simple method, but removing it as not



easy. It required a period of time.

Why did the tiny black-lit person suddenly begin sealing itself?

Kali suddenly drew a gasp as she thought of a possibility.

Indeed, at the next moment, the tiny black-lit person completed its self-sealing. And it's psionic cultivation realm was surprisingly the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm!

The tiny black-lit person opened its mouth, bit on the spatial barrier, and tore open a hole. It then hurriedly rushed inside!

Kali could not help but stand up as she felt a strong ominous sense of foreboding.

The tiny black-lit person had sealed itself to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm in order to not trigger the self-destruction program of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. It had headed for the fifth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower!

Was the Original Sin of Calamity really in there? If not, why would this thing take such a huge risk by carefully sneaking inside?

...

# Chapter 304: I'll Accompany You On This Escapade

---

The three large-scale 'Apocalypses' that nearly wiped out humans were composed of three parts. Firstly, it was the Original Sin of Calamity that existed for only half an hour. Secondly, the Seven Deadly Sins would wreck havoc for three days. Thirdly, all sorts of natural disasters like earthquakes, tsunamis, and volcanic eruptions would constantly occur.

The Original Sin of Calamity was no doubt the strongest existence. Although it was unknown why the Original Sin of Calamity would only exist for half an hour, it would be able to kill nearly all the strongest people in the human world in the thirty minutes. Ten thousand years ago, the pixie species which Kali was from had all its strongest figures annihilated by the Original Sin of Calamity, including her mother and grandmother.

And in the next three days, the Seven Deadly Sins—"Pride", "Envy", "Gluttony", "Lust", "Wrath", "Sloth" and "Greed"—would begin slaughtering humans. As the Original Sin of Calamity had killed all the strong in the human world, the remaining humans were unable to withstand the wanton destruction of the Deadly Sins. Usually, there would be an extremely small number of people that could luckily survive after three days. They would then become the last members of humanity.

However, it appeared as though once the human population reached a particular number, the Apocalypse would befall. Over the ten thousand years, the Apocalypse had happened thrice, and based on time, the fourth Apocalypse was probably in the near

future.

When the first Apocalypse happened ten thousand years ago, Kali was just an innocent young girl. In human equivalent, she was only twelve or thirteen years old. Back then, she had witnessed the tragedy of the pixie species' downfall.

Accordingly, she should have died during the three days the Deadly Sins wrecked havoc, but her pixie bloodline was extremely pure. She was luckily chosen by the soon-to-wither World Tree to be its successor, therefore, she was lucky to survive.

Later on, she began searching for all sorts of inheritance of mighty figures in the human world, and slowly, she became more powerful. Following that she went to countless planes of existence for the next nine thousand years.

During the nine thousand years, she became extremely powerful. She then returned to the human world and went into slumber for a thousand years, so as to wait for the fourth Apocalypse to happen.

She did not know if her present strength was sufficient to defeat the Original Sin of Calamity, but she had to give it a try.

Not long ago, Shi Xiaobai had pulled out a sealing sword in the Underworld. This resulted in the tiny black-lit person, named 'Gluttony' to be revealed. This gave Kali an excellent opportunity.

This was because the Original Sin of Calamity would hide in the

human world every time. It would not even know its own identity until the Apocalypse happened, only then would it awaken.

In the first apocalypse, the “Original Sin of Calamity” was a weak blind old man.

In the second apocalypse, it was a king who ruled over half a continent.

In the third apocalypse, it was a three-year-old child.

Before the Original Sin of Calamity awoke, its age, gender, status, etc did not follow any rule. Kali had previously attempted to find the Original Sin of Calamity before it awoken in them, but she did not manage it.

And with ‘Gluttony’ prematurely appearing, it gave Kali a golden opportunity. This was because ‘Gluttony’ might instinctively search for the awakener of the Original Sin of Calamity, or the other Deadly Sins that were hidden.

Therefore, Kali did not immediately kill ‘Gluttony’, which had wrecked havoc in the human world three times. Instead, she created a realm seal and used it as bait, in the hopes of catching bigger fish.

And at this moment in time, it appeared as though the bait had taken the initiative to search for the big fish?

For 'Gluttony' to risk sealing itself to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, so as to not activate the self-destruct mechanism, it had entered the fifth level of Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. It proved that there was an existence 'Gluttony' had to carefully look for in the fifth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.

Other than the Original Sin of Calamity and the other Deadly Sins, who else could such an existence be?

Kali suddenly turned nervous. She had been in training for nine thousand years and had been around for ten thousand years. She did to avenge her family and clansmen, and at this moment, the awakener of the Original Sin of Calamity had apparently been revealed.

How could she not be excited?

Kali stared intently at the screen of light. The tiny black-lit person bit through a thick spatial barrier and constantly forged ahead. A few minutes later, it finally tore through the chaotic flow of space, and reached the fifth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower!

After it reached the fifth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, it did not act like it usually did, devouring everything. Instead, it was moving towards a particular direction at an extremely fast speed, as it managed to curb its instinctual desires!

Kali was unable to calm down at this moment. Similarly, she was looking forward to it.

Where was Gluttony heading?

What was it looking for?

The answer would soon be revealed.

...

...

Fifth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower

Mu Yuesheng, Mozzie, and Kevin were guarding Shi Xiaobai beside him, while warily watching their surroundings.

Pulp Farmer, Liu Yu, and Zhou Chuchu stood ten meters away to defend.

Liu Yu and Zhou Chuchu had brought a tiny portion of the blood in different directions, but very soon, the blood escaped their imprisonment, so they could only return.

The top ten rookies in the official forecast were patrolling the outer perimeter, while three rookies defended from a close

proximity. Such a defense lineup caused many rookies that were eager to attempt an attack to retreat.

Of course, there were a few desperate rookies that took the risk and tried sneaking in an attack, but they ended up in failure.

They attempted running away after their failure, but there was no way they could escape Pulp Farmer and company's clutches. All of them paid the terrible price of being eliminated due to their impulsive actions.

Just thirty seconds ago, the authoritative voice reminded everyone that there was only one minute left until the end of the present Life and Death Assault round.

“Another thirty seconds.”

Mu Yuesheng said, “We have to be even more vigilant. There might be even more people who can't tolerate it in the final thirty seconds and end up choosing to take the risk.”

Mozzie and Kevin nodded heavily as they warily concentrated on their surroundings.

Whether it would end in perfect success or complete failure depended on these final thirty seconds.

The mountain was silent. Other than the soft sounds of breathing as well as Pulp Farmer and company deliberately softening their

footsteps, there was no other sound except the occasional breeze and the rustling of leaves.

The six people were fully vigilant of the slightest movements around them.

Time quietly passed. One second, two seconds, three seconds...

No one came to the very end. Not a single one.

At this final moment, it appeared as though the nefarious rookies had given up?

“Something’s coming!”

Pulp Farmer suddenly shouted. Everyone hurriedly turned their heads. Nothing appeared out of the dark forest trail, but they could simultaneously sense a terrifying aura.

Everyone’s expression changed drastically. They could not repress an overwhelming fear that arose from their hearts.

Who was the person who came?

Before the person arrived, it had already given them such a repressive feeling?



The six hurriedly took up a battle stance.

Liu Yu gulped and said, “This time, it seems it’s something more terrifying than the bloody figure. This sinister aura makes This Penniless Priest’s Dao heart stir. It’s definitely no ordinary existence.”

Zhou Chuchu said in a speechless manner, “It’s just the Psionic Mortal Realm. How can there be so many monsters!?”

A few seconds later, the shadow that everyone was staring at intently finally turned into a strange figure that rushed at them!

The moment this figure appeared, an oppressive force accompanied it. Other than Shi Xiaobai, the other six were pushed away by the force where they landed far away. They were unable to put up even the slightest of resistance!

This figure was rushing straight at Shi Xiaobai!

“Oh no!”

Everyone stared with widened eyes. The figure that suddenly appeared was an existence they could not defend against. Furthermore, its target was extremely obvious. It was here for Shi Xiaobai.

At this moment, the authoritative voice resounded through the world.

Was all that hard work for so long going to fall short at the final moment?

“This round of Life and Death Assault has ended. Death Epaulette wearer, Shi Xiaobai, successfully ‘survived’ and will be transported to the sixth level after three seconds.”

Everyone immediately revealed an indescribable bitter smile. Three seconds. There were only three seconds left!

But the sudden appearance of this shadow was already in front of Shi Xiaobai. Would it miss the valuable three seconds?

The figure that burst forward stopped a meter in front of Shi Xiaobai. Everyone finally saw the true face of this figure and immediately gasped.

This was a figure that barely looked human, with black light shrouding it. However, it was several times smaller than a human. It looked about the size of a hand.

The tiny black-lit person floated in midair, as though it was observing Shi Xiaobai, but it did not immediately make its next move.

This tiny thing had caused them to not be able to put up any resistance?

Suddenly, the tiny black-lit person opened its mouth and issued a strange voice. It sounded like a mysterious language.

It was 'speaking' to the unconscious Shi Xiaobai?

However, it was as though the tiny black-lit person had not 'spoken' in a very long time. Its voice sounded very distorted.

But the tiny black-lit person immediately attempted to make the same sound.

The second time, it was much clearer.

However, when the tiny black-lit person was about to say the same thing a third time, a blinding light suddenly enveloped the tiny black-lit person, causing it to let out a shrill scream.

At the same time, the sky suddenly began to shatter like glass as the ground began to quake violently, as though it was doomsday.

At this moment, the three seconds were finally up. Shi Xiaobai suddenly transformed into a golden beam of light that shot into the sky and headed for the sixth level.

The light that enveloped tiny black-lit person immediately withdrew and the world turned calm.

The tiny black-lit person let out a roar of indignation and shot

into the sky. Slamming its head into the sky, it drilled a tiny hole and went through it, as though it was chasing after Shi Xiaobai.

Upon seeing this short but incredulous scene, everyone fell into a silent daze, unable to recover for a long period of time.

What had happened?

...

Kali's eyes glazed over slightly as she muttered, "Impossible... Impossible..."

"It can't be Shi Xiaobai."

"He can't be the Original Sin of Calamity."

A bitter smile suffused across Kali's lips. "Since it's impossible, why did you prevent Gluttony from saying the words for a third time? It was obvious you could hear it clearly the third time."

"What are you afraid of?"

"What are you avoiding?"

Kali gave a faint sigh. "If the truth was really that... What should I do?"

At this moment, in the light curtain, the tiny black-lit person was madly gobbling the spatial barrier. It was attempting to break through the fifth level to the sixth level. Without any doubts, it was chasing after Shi Xiaobai.

Kali's blank stare gradually recovered.

“Even if it's the truth, I'll make it false.”

A resolute look flashed in Kali's eyes.

A beam of light suddenly bloomed from her body as she disappeared into endless darkness.

Kali's face turned slightly white.

“A self-seal is very simple, isn't it?”

A beam of light suddenly broke through the darkness, as though a door had suddenly opened to blinding light. Kali stepped through it.

“Shi Xiaobai, I'll accompany you on this escapade.”

...



## Chapter 305: What A Shameless Old Hag

---

The Deadly Sin, 'Gluttony', had taken the risk to seal itself in order to enter the trial without triggering the self-destruct mechanism. It was certain that its goal was indeed Shi Xiaobai.

Kali had previously speculated that Gluttony was likely using its instinct to find the awakener of the Original Sin of Calamity or other Deadly Sins which resulted in it being so careful. And clearly, Shi Xiaobai was not one of the Deadly Sins because he did not have the characteristics of the seven Deadly Sins like Pride and Gluttony.

Therefore, the greatest possibility was—Shi Xiaobai was the awakener to the Original Sin of Calamity.

Before the Original Sin of Calamity awakened, the awakener would be no different from any other human. It would have its memories as the Original Sin of Calamity restored after it awakened; therefore, the possibility of Shi Xiaobai being the Original Sin of Calamity was extremely high.

If Shi Xiaobai was truly the awakener of the Original Sin of Calamity, he would become a devil that would destroy the world after his awakening even if he was kind and righteous.

Historically, the second Original Sin of Calamity was a conquest king who ruled over half a continent. He advocated martial force, but he was benevolent and well-liked by his subjects. However, after he awakened, the first thing the conquest king did was

destroy his capital. None of the subjects that had meritorious service to him survived.

Kali could not convince herself that Shi Xiaobai could use his will and beliefs to overcome the memories and instinct of the Original Sin of Calamity because it was impossible.

If Shi Xiaobai was truly the awakener of the Original Sin of Calamity, Kali did not know how to face him. A vengeance that had been brewing for ten thousand years appeared disproportionate to a budding love that was a month old, but to Kali, those were on two ends of an unwavering scale.

When Kali realized of the possibility of the truth, she fell into confusion before subconsciously choosing to avoid it.

She had intervened with her power, preventing Gluttony from talking in the mysterious language a third time.

This was because this language was not mysterious to Kali. Ten thousand years ago, the human world used this language, and now, it had become a historical language, but Kali had never forgotten it.

The first two times Gluttony spoke, it was distorted, so Kali had failed to catch what it had said. However, it turned clearer with each time it spoke. Kali was afraid that by the third time, she would hear the brutal truth.



If the truth was revealed, it would lead to an irrevocable outcome.

Regardless if Shi Xiaobai was the awakener to the Original Sin of Calamity, he was at present still Shi Xiaobai.

Kali was still able to maintain her clarity of mind regarding this matter because this was only a speculation.

But what if Shi Xiaobai was undoubtedly the awakener of the Original Sin of Calamity?

Could she still convince herself that Shi Xiaobai was only Shi Xiaobai?

Over the long years, she had loneliness for company. What seemed like a cold and resolute heart was just an outer shell. Inside, was a tenderness no one knew.

Hence, Kali eventually made a very, very foolish decision.

As long as the truth was not revealed, it had the possibility of it being just an illusion.

Therefore, Kali prevented Gluttony from speaking the truth!

In fact, she had two choices. One of them was to enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower directly to bring Shi Xiaobai

out, so as to distance him from Gluttony. The other was to seal herself to the Psionic Mortal Realm just like Gluttony and enter the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, preventing Gluttony from approaching Shi Xiaobai.

The former would trigger the self-destruct sequence, causing the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower to be destroyed, but this did not affect Kali in any way.

As for the latter, by sealing her psionic cultivation realm to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, it was in fact a very risky matter. This was because even for Kali, lifting the seal would require a certain amount of time. If she was attacked by a mighty figure during this period of time, Kali would not be able to use whatever divine techniques she had at her disposal due to the psionic cultivation realm restricting her. It was even possible for her to die.

Of course, this was highly unlikely as the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower limited entry to the people at the Psionic Mortal Realm. With Kali's strength, even with psionic power at the Psionic Mortal Realm, she was still able to easily annihilate enemies a few cultivation realms higher.

It was just like Gluttony having sealed itself to the Psionic Mortal Realm. Even if it's cultivation realm was the same, it still had strength that completely overwhelmed Pulp Farmer and company.

However sealing herself was always a form of risk for an existence as powerful as Kali.

However, the word ‘escapade’ was the reason why Kali chose the latter.

The experiences Shi Xiaobai encountered could always be described with the word ‘escapade’. And there were always people beside him during his escapades—Princess Xiao Xiao in the virtual world, Chen Lingcun in the Underworld, Sunless, Mu Yuesheng, Mozzie, and Kevin in the trials...

Such exciting escapades was something she—as a pixie who lived in Pixie Forest and had never seen the outside world—yearned and longed for.

While the power of the World Tree had stopped her from growing old, it had also sealed her innocent soul in the deepest depth.

Therefore, she wanted to be willful for once. She wanted to accompany Shi Xiaobai and experience a very, very silly ‘escapade’.

...

...

On the other end of the tunnel of the door of light, there was what seemed like paradise. Lush forests were everywhere, and the crystal clear lakes reflected the trees. There was a tiny island in the middle of the lake, where a gigantic willow tree grew. It had many

willow branches that cascaded down like a waterfall, and its leaves glowed. The entire willow tree appeared to be emitting a thin layer of golden light.

And beneath the willow tree lay a black-haired youth.

The youth was lying on the soft earth, with his eyes closed. The breathing through his nose was slow and regular. He was deep in sleep, while a pure black sword lay by his side.

Kali walked out of the door of light and landed in front of the youth. She slowly squatted and studied the youth's peaceful, sleeping face.

Kali slowly stretched out her fingers as a pale white light shot out from her fingers towards Shi Xiaobai's forehead. White light billowed as it completely covered Shi Xiaobai.

Soon, a wisp of black gas slowly rose from Shi Xiaobai's body before dissipating into the air. The injuries on Shi Xiaobai's back gradually disappeared, returning to the white and smooth skin.

Shi Xiaobai was still sleeping with his eyes closed. His ruffled brow gradually eased as his expression turned soft and serene.

Kali looked up slightly and with a wave of her hand, a colorful barrier of light immediately enveloped the lone island, as though she had isolated the entire world outside.

Kali hesitated for a moment before suddenly leaning her head down to gently kiss Shi Xiaobai on the forehead. She moved away the moment they made contact, as a shy smile suffused across her lips.

“What a shameless old hag.”

Kali said to herself as she burst out laughing.

Suddenly, as though she had sensed something, Kali slowly stood up and turned to look into the distance. Her eyes turned slightly cold.

“You have truly given me a great surprise.”

...

...

The sixth level was named Monster Fairyland. Its environment was beautiful like a wonderland, but in fact it was filled with monsters everywhere.

For example, a small island in the middle of a lake might actually be the back of a gigantic ten-thousand-year-old turtle.

And in this vast ocean, there was a lone island in the shape of a turtle's back. This gigantic turtle was struggling to swim with its

four limbs to head for a distant shore.

There were a myriad of strange creatures flying in the air from time to time. Gigantic pterosaurs, Atlantic Canaries bigger than eagles, huge tigers with wings...

There were often fishes of all shapes and sizes leaping out of the surface of the sea. Some strange fish had crocodile heads and shark bodies. There were dolphins with mouths filled with razor-sharp teeth, and occasionally, there would be mammoth whales that swam past as though a huge mountains were moving...

The gigantic turtle would issue alarmed calls from time to time while it carefully proceeded forward in the ocean.

In stark contrast from the terrifying scene, there were two people sitting on top of the gigantic turtle's back. The duo appeared relaxed as though they were here on a vacation.

One of them was a beautiful girl with silver hair who wore black-rimmed glasses. She was sitting on the left side of the lone island, with a thick book in hand. She relished reading the book.

The other person was a youth with ordinary looks and regular outfit. From top to bottom, he had the aura of "I'm a passer-by".

The youth's actions were even more flamboyant. It was unknown where he had obtained a table and chair. At this moment, he was sitting on the chair with his legs crossed. He constantly munching

on seeds!

Time passed slowly. From how the youth enjoyed his seeds till he finally found it boring, his expression looked more and more impatient.

The youth turned to the silver-haired girl whose back was facing him while she read her book. He said with a sigh, “I’m so bored! I finished a bag of melon seeds alone. There was a total of 1854 seeds, 26 of them were empty, 9 of them had worms in them, 6 of them did not open from the frying, and were conjoined with each other. Furthermore, 4 of them were bitter. Midway, I drank 7 cups of water. That’s right. This is solitude. That’s right. This is solitude. —In the previous sentence, there were 60 words, 12 punctuation marks, out of which 6 were periods and 6 were commas. There were 241 characters and 59 spaces. Yes. That’s right, it’s because I’m bored!”

The silver-haired girl’s ears moved slightly, but she pretended to turn a deaf ear towards him. She continued reading the book in her hand.

The youth groaned, “Girl, I remember you were rather cute when you were young, talkative like a sparrow. Why do you now refuse to say a word? Can’t you stop acting dumb and deaf and chat with me?”

The silver-haired girl continued ignoring him as she gently flipped a page.

The youth cleared his throat and suddenly used a solemn and deep voice, saying, “Obstinate plebeian, This Emperor orders you to chat with This Emperor!”

The silver-haired girl finally responded when she heard this. Turning her head sharply, she glared at the youth.

The youth gave a dry laugh and said, “Ha...ha. Forget what I just said.”

The silver-haired girl lifted her spectacle rim and looked repulsively at the seed shells on the table before turning back to continue reading the book in her hand.

The youth blabbered on, “Time truly is a pig slaughtering knife, a cute girl is not cute at all.”

The silver-haired girl buried her head lower into the book she was holding, as a melancholic flash appeared in her eyes.

Suddenly, the gigantic turtle came to a stop as the turtle’s shell began to vibrate intensely. It slightly startled the duo as the gigantic turtle kept letting out cries of terror.

The gigantic turtle was always rather timid, but this was the first time it shivered in fear.

The duo’s expressions immediately turned serious.



At this moment, at the ends of the horizon, a gigantic whirlpool suddenly appeared. A huge portion of the sea sagged downwards, as though a gigantic abyss had suddenly appeared in the sea.

From the middle of the abyss, a tiny black dot suddenly flew out.

The black dot was very, very tiny. From afar, it looked like a tiny black pearl.

However, the eyesights of the duo sitting on the turtle's back far exceeded those of ordinary mortals. They could clearly discern the black dot's true nature. It was a miniature humanoid monster shrouded in black light.

The tiny black-lit person turned around, as its eyes, that resembled two black holes, stared at the duo on the turtle's back.

The corner of the youth's mouth twitched as he said with a wry smile, "The boring time is finally over, but why can't I feel delighted at all?"

...

# Chapter 306: I'm Rushing Back To Sleep With My Boyfriend

---

The youth and the silver-haired girl did not know the true identity of the tiny black-lit person, but their sixth senses were sharper than the ordinary person's. They could clearly sense the oppressive aura emanated by the tiny black-lit person.

The tiny black-lit person was completely covered in black light. Its two eyes were two small holes to begin with, as such, they now looked like two black holes in the darkness. It was strange and terrifying.

At this moment, the tiny black-lit person was heading towards them, and its gaze had landed on them.

"I feel like he wants to eat us. What's your take?"

The youth spat out the seeds in his mouth. What he said sounded like a joke, but the tone in his voice was that of certainty.

When the silver-haired girl heard this, she nodded gently and placed the book in her hand back into the backpack beside her. Her expression looked somewhat solemn.

The youth said, "Intuition tells me that the two of us combined are not its match. It looks like we will soon become this monster's food. I have a last request I wish that you would fulfill. Girl, can you call me Brother Speechless like when you were young?"

The silver-haired girl rolled her eyes and ignored the youth's words. She remained silent.

The youth gave the silver-haired girl a serious glance as a contemplative look flashed in his eyes.

At this moment, the gigantic turtle beneath them was trembling in its spot. It was as if it did not even have the courage to run.

As for the tiny black-lit person at the ends of the horizon, it was staring at the duo's location, but it delayed taking action.

The youth said with a laugh, "It seems to be hesitating. It's like it wants to eat us up, but there is something expedient it needs to do which it doesn't want to delay. What a struggle! This is a problem we often encounter. The sudden feeling of using the bathroom while eating. Should the meal be quickly finished before taking a shit, or shitting first before returning to eat. This is a problem."

The silver-haired girl gave the youth a furious glance and gestured a vomit.

The youth had easily described their outcome as being eaten by the tiny black-lit person in front of them, but despite facing such a terrible matter, the duo did not appear especially nervous.

They had solemn expressions, but there was no fear.

The tiny black-lit person hesitated for a very long while. It was truly hoping to eat the two somewhat special humans in front of it, but it did not want to waste any more time. If it were any other time, the time it took to hesitate would have been enough to devour the two and even allow it to digest properly. However, it had sealed itself to the Psionic Mortal Realm, so it definitely could not eat the duo in a short period of time.

The tiny black-lit person finally let out a roar of indignation and was planning to turn around and leave. Compared to the 'delicacy' in front of it, the existence on the other side was more important.

But at this moment in time, a beam of light suddenly fell from the sky, enveloping the tiny black-lit person. The beam of light instantly wove itself into a radiant bird cage, imprisoning the tiny black-lit person within.

The tiny black-lit person hissed as it bit at the railings on the birdcage of light.

A 'kacha' sound resounded, but the rail remained in one piece. The tiny black-lit person's teeth seemed to shatter.

The sound of sizzling flesh immediately followed as the tiny black-lit person screamed. It shrank back hurriedly, afraid of touching the rails.

At the same time, a door of light suddenly opened in mid-air. A figure suddenly came out from the light into the sky above the sea.

A gothic dress wrapped around the petite figure, with purple hair that cascaded down to her waist like a waterfall, the person's appearance remained perfect and intricate despite wearing a white eye patch for some unknown reason. She had an azure right eye that was as bright as a crystal, bluer than the sky, and deeper than the sea.

She floated in the mid-air above the sea. Immediately, the sea and the sky lost its color because of her arrival.

Such beauty caused the youth and the silver-haired girl to gape in shock.

As for the tiny black-lit person, it felt fear. Its body was curled up. This pixie girl that had placed a divine seal on it was someone it could not resist before it completely regained its power.

Even though it had guessed that Kali had sealed herself to the Psionic Mortal Realm, it did not dare to have any thoughts of resisting. A mighty figure of this level was extremely rare in its long lifespan. This was because the top mighty figures of the human world would be wiped out by the Original Sin of Calamity in the thirty minutes before the the apocalypse began.

The tiny black-lit person really could not understand why the pixie would suddenly appear here and humiliate it by capturing it in a birdcage.

“@%\$#&...”

The tiny black-lit person spoke in a mysterious language in a slurred manner. In fact, it only wanted to ask—Why do you keep targeting me!?

When Kali heard this, she suddenly laughed. The smile on her face was fascinating. It overshadowed the pale sky and sea even more.

She was laughing because she could not understand what the tiny black-lit person was saying. The tiny black-lit person's speech had yet to recover, and from the looks of it, it was still a great deal away from normal levels.

Previously, she had interrupted the tiny black-lit person's third repeat of its speech because she believed the tiny black-lit person's rate of regaining its level of speech was very fast. But now, it looked like she had gotten a wrong read.

This somehow made Kali relieved.

Since the tiny black-lit person could not even speak clearly, her interruption from before could not be considered a form of avoidance of the truth.

Besides...

“It's not that I do not want to know the truth, but because Gluttony has slurred speech.”

Kali had such a thought as she immediately heaved a sigh of relief.

Although such a thought was very willful and unreasonable, Kali felt more relaxed. She was a capricious person to begin with.

“Stay deep in the sea and practice how to speak.”

Kali used the ancient language from ten thousand years ago when she spoke to the tiny black-lit person. With a gentle wave of her hand, the birdcage made of light sank into the sea. It kept sinking towards the deep sea that was more than ten thousand meters deep. The tiny black-lit person roared in indignation, but it quickly vanished.

Kali heaved a sigh of relief. A door of light opened in front of her as she was preparing to take a step forward to leave.

“Wait!”

At this moment, an anxious voice rang from the distance.

Kali paused slightly and turned her head and saw the duo on the gigantic turtle’s back.

In fact, she knew both of them. One of them was Speechless, a person known by nearly everyone in China. Although he had put on a disguise, he was unable to fool Kali’s eyes. And beside him was the mute girl who was second to reach City #1 when Shi Xiaobai

was defending the city.

To Kali, the duo were humans with decent talents and nothing else.

But since Speechless had shouted for her to stop, Kali did not mind stopping to hear what he had to say.

Speechless coughed slightly and looked at Kali. With a serious look, he said loudly, “I’m Speechless Li, who claims to be invincible in the Psionic Mortal Realm. Yet, I never expect to meet two existences at the Psionic Mortal Realm today that I have no confidence defeating. I can’t help but lament how there are mountains beyond mountains, and heavens beyond heavens. From today onwards, I have decided to be an honest man and cultivate diligently. After saying so much, I want to ask something—do you have a boyfriend?”

When Kali heard the speech from Speechless that sounded like a reflective piece, she felt somewhat impatient. The last sentence was rather sudden, that surprised her slightly. Only then did she react and immediately found it funny.

If this were in the past, Kali would have not paid any attention to such methods of striking a conversation. She would even teach the person a lesson, wiping away his thoughts of trying to hit on her.

But at this moment, Kali unexpectedly responded, saying, “I’m rushing back to sleep with my boyfriend.”



After Kali said this, she immediately cursed herself in her heart. What a shameless old hag. Then, with an inexplicable happiness, she walked through the door of light.

The moment the pixie whose beauty overshadowed the world left, the sky seemed to brighten.

“I heard the sound of a heart breaking.”

Speechless clutched his chest and turned his head towards the silver-haired girl and said with a pained heart, “Girl, I’m out of love.”

The silver-haired girl rolled her eyes without giving him any face. She sat back down and took out a book from her backpack and continued reading.

It was unknown from where Speechless took out another bag of seeds. With a shake of his head and a sigh, he began munching on them.

“The vicissitudes of time, the human heart doesn’t change. Everything is in flux except for this melon seed that remains so fucking salty!”

...

...

On a lone lake island, a colorful barrier isolated everything. A black-haired youth was quietly lying down on soft ground, sleeping peacefully.

Kali walked out of the light and landed beside Shi Xiaobai.

She thought for a moment and with a wave of her hand, the ground beneath Shi Xiaobai began to rise. It then transformed in an unimaginable way into a large soft bed.

Kali hesitated for a moment before taking off her shoes and laying down on the bed, lying side by side with Shi Xiaobai.

The words 'I'm rushing back to sleep with my boyfriend' she said were not a joke, nor were they words that had any deeper meaning.

She was indeed rushing back to lie beside Shi Xiaobai and get some sleep.

This was because Shi Xiaobai was sleeping in an unconscious state. It was unknown when he would wake up. It was pointless for her to wait by the side, so she decided to lie down for a while.

Kali leaned sideways and was just a few centimeters away from Shi Xiaobai. She had a bashful expression on her face, but she did not go any closer.

She slowly closed her eyes and relaxed her mind, as she attempted to get some sleep.

But in fact, she could not fall asleep. Her mind was filled with matters regarding the Original Sin of Calamity.

She thought of various possibilities, envisaging the scene of Shi Xiaobai being the Original Sin of Calamity, and also envisaged the scene that everything was just a misunderstanding.

The more she thought, the more her heart went into turmoil and her mind went into disarray.

After lying in bed for a few hours, Kali finally could not help but open her eyes. Sitting up, she realized that she could not calm herself. The feeling of her thoughts getting the better of her was terrible.

But now, Shi Xiaobai was still in deep sleep, so what could she do?

She could not just keep staring at Shi Xiaobai's face and occasionally fail to resist the urge to kiss his forehead, taking advantage of him, right?

Pui, why did she keep having such shameless thoughts?

Kali spat out lightly and began pondering before suddenly her eyes lit up.

She remembered that the clothes on Shi Xiaobai's back had been torn.

Kali immediately found something to do. With a tap of her fingers, a wide variety of clothes fell from the sky, covering the large willow tree.

Kali began choosing shirts.

This is not bad.

Eh, this is better.

Ha, this feels more lovely.

Sigh, which one should be chosen?

Kali chose for a very long while before deciding on a black and white t-shirt.

“The trousers need to be matched, right?”

After choosing a shirt, Kali suddenly had this idea. A new shirt had to match new trousers!

A pile of trousers fell from the sky. They were extremely

expensive. Not only were the designs exquisite, they were also very comfortable. The durability was extremely high, and even included a certain amount of defensive strength.

Of course, Kali was concerned only with the appearance. If she wanted to focus on heavy defense, she could find numerous invulnerable sacred-level apparels in minutes.

Kali did not want to interfere with Shi Xiaobai's growth process.

After taking a long time to select, Kali finally chose a pair of black trousers with a white stripe on the side. The trousers were tight around the waist, but relatively loose elsewhere. It allowed Shi Xiaobai to use Crab Steps without any restrictions.

After choosing the trousers, Kali continued choosing socks and shoes, doing her best to tide through the boring span of time.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not regain consciousness. The only thing left that she had not chosen for Shi Xiaobai was a pair of underpants.

Kali obviously did not do such a bold and intimate act. Choosing of underwear was something that just existed in her mind.

Kali lay back down beside Shi Xiaobai. Staring at the colorful barrier, she found it very, very boring.

Suddenly, Kali sat up again.

“Or should I just help him change into the clothes?”

She could not stop this thought the moment it appeared in her head.

On careful thought, wasn't it normal for some girls to wipe the bodies of their unconscious boyfriends or change their clothes?

Furthermore, it was just a change of clothes and not underpants. There was nothing to be ashamed of.

Furthermore, Xiaobai has been wearing this dirty shirt all along. How uncomfortable would it be? Shall I change it?

Kali instantly found countless excuses to convince herself.

She hesitated for a moment before finally taking action. She spread apart Shi Xiaobai's arms and rolled up the clothes from bottom to top. Next, she carefully let his head through, and with that a shirt was easily taken off.

“Isn't this simple?”

Kali gave a light smile as her cheeks turned slightly hot.

She was preparing to put the clothes that she had chosen on Shi Xiaobai, but at this moment, Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows wrinkled. His

eyes slowly opened...

Shi Xiaobai finally woke up!?

...

...

# Chapter 307: Trousers Just Halfway Off

---

Shi Xiaobai had a dream.

A very, very long dream.

In his dream, he was a king of a territory. He led his troops in a long war, going from one end of a continent to the other while constantly forging ahead. He conquered one country after another. When he conquered more than half, and was about to complete the feat of ruling over an entire continent, fiends of an alien world suddenly invaded. Immediately, he led his troops to face the invading fiend legion.

It was similarly a long battle, much longer than his conquest wars and much more brutal and bloody. Humans perished in great numbers but he finally succeeded in chasing the fiend legion back to the alien world.

After that battle, every country put a stop to all wars to prevent the invasion of the fiend legion or other species of alien worlds. As such, Shi Xiaobai's ambition of conquering the entire continent had to come to a stop.

But as a king of more than half of a continent, he remained the most powerful king.

He began governing his country and the process during this period was rather vague. In fact, from the moment the dream began, it was in bits and pieces. However, the dream felt extremely



real. Shi Xiaobai did not realize that he was in a dream.

But one day, two doors suddenly appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai.

A pure white door and a pure black door.

The two doors appeared together, and Shi Xiaobai instantly came to a realization that he was in a dream. This was because these two doors made him, who was in a dream, recall a memory from reality.

These two doors had appeared back when Riko was helping him with his awakening dream. Back then, he listened to Riko's instructions and entered the pure white door.

At this moment, two doors appeared again in his dream.

Just like before, the white door emitted a soft aura, attracting him to walk into it, while he felt like something inside the black door of darkness was calling out to him. It had an intense desire.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment and turned to head into the pure black door because he was very curious what was inside the pure black door.

However, Shi Xiaobai never found out what was inside the pure black door. After entering it, he felt his consciousness fall into a trance. Everything went black in front of him and his body could no longer move. He had an illusionary feeling that a lot of time had

passed.

When he recovered his consciousness, he had appeared outside the pure black door. He discovered that everything in his dream had changed.

His country was still that country. The capital and palaces were still the same, but all his subjects and commoners had disappeared. Replacing them were demons that filled the city!

Shi Xiaobai was immediately enraged. Although this was only a dream, the realism of the dream made him have feelings for his subjects and people. And at this moment, his capital had changed into a city of fiends. This meant only one thing. The fiends had killed all humans in the royal capital!

In his rage, Shi Xiaobai only had one thought—kill all fiends!

Then, Shi Xiaobai realized that he had somehow become very strong, so strong that it was chilling. With a flick of his finger, all fiends were reduced to ashes.

At the same time, Shi Xiaobai's mind became extremely powerful. He could sense that the entire human world were filled with fiends. Only seven humans of remarkable strength hid in secluded places.

Following that, Shi Xiaobai quickly realized that he was awakening from the dream soon!

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai made a decision. Using the remaining time, he teleported to various spots in the world, killing every fiend that could threaten the seven humans.

He was just in time. When Shi Xiaobai realized that he was about to awaken, the powerful fiends had been mostly destroyed.

Shi Xiaobai immediately used his mind to contact the seven hiding humans. In fact, Shi Xiaobai did not know how he could teleport or communicate telepathically. But he could do anything he thought of, so Shi Xiaobai guessed that it was because he was in a dream.

Shi Xiaobai telepathically informed the seven hiding humans that they could begin their counteroffensive. This was because the remaining fiends were no longer their match. Although relying on seven humans to complete a counteroffensive was extremely difficult, they were the final hope of humanity. Shi Xiaobai conveyed his wishes.

To snatch the human world back!

The seven hidden humans immediately took action, allowing Shi Xiaobai to finally feel at ease. At this moment, a fiery voice suddenly resounded throughout the heaven and earth, giving Shi Xiaobai a fright.

“Have you finally remembered? Sire!”

Shi Xiaobai was startled. This voice was very familiar to him, because this voice had been heard numerous times in his mind saying, 'Make your choice, Youth'. It made him grind his teeth in hate a few times, but it had helped him prevent certain regrets.

Fuck, the Absolute Choice had made a guest appearance in his dream?

But this voice had never communicated with him. Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask the world sadly, "Remember what?"

The voice fell silent for a moment.

"Remember..."

Remember what?

The answer seemed to be about to be revealed.

But in the next moment, the dream suddenly transformed into another scene.

It was a candlelit bedroom with an intimate atmosphere. Shi Xiaobai was lying on a bed, with his limbs tied. His body could not move as a good-looking girl lay beside him.

The girl was very close to him as her body fragrance assaulted his

olfactory senses.

Shi Xiaobai was stunned.

What was going on?

Suddenly, the girl got up and began taking off his clothes!

Shi Xiaobai jumped in fright. However, he did not know why he could not move at all. He could only let the girl do whatever she wanted.

Soon, Shi Xiaobai's shirt was taken off. He was naked in the upper body as he felt a cold chill.

Although Shi Xiaobai did not do much research when it came to men and women, he was no fool. He knew that if a man and woman lay in bed, it would be a huge problem when one took off the other person's clothes!

Seeing the girl about to make her next move, and despite him not knowing what she would do next, Shi Xiaobai had that nagging feeling that he was in 'grave danger'. Immediately, he began to struggle in his mind.

Then, he awoken.

He woke up from the long and fantastic dream.

...

Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes. The first things that he saw were willow branches that cascaded down at him like a waterfall, and pale gold willow leaves. Through the holes in the willow's crown, he could see the sky. The sky was clear like a mirror.

Shi Xiaobai straightened his body and surveyed his surroundings. He immediately discovered himself in the middle of a sparkling lake. The surroundings were serene and beautiful, as though he had entered paradise.

“Where is this?”

Shi Xiaobai wondered for a moment when he suddenly felt his upper body feeling a chill. Looking down, he immediately discovered that black and white clothes were covering his body. As he straightened his body, the clothes slipped down, revealing his upper body.

Shi Xiaobai was startled and immediately surveyed his surroundings, but he did not see anyone.

He was clearly the only person on this lone island.

Who was it that took off his clothes?

Shi Xiaobai saw brand new trousers beside him. Clearly, they formed a set with the black and white shirt.

At this moment, the authoritative voice resounded in Shi Xiaobai's head:

“Welcome to the sixth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Monster Fairyland!”

“Due to you reaching Monster Fairyland in an unconscious state, the announcement of the rules has been deliberately delayed.”

“In Monster Fairyland, there exist seven dragons. These seven dragons are located in seven different locations of Monster Fairyland. Your quest is to have a crusade with other trial-takers against the dragons.”

“However, only when the present dragon dies would the next dragon appear. There can only be one crusade against a dragon at any one point in time.”

“When the dragon dies, the system will determine the aggro level of the dragon, choosing the trial-taker that had accumulated the most aggro from the dragon, terming the person as a ‘Braveheart’. Only by becoming a Braveheart can one head to the seventh level. This means that only seven people can clear this level!”

“Now, four dragons have died. The crusade against the fifth dragon is currently undergoing. The location information of the

dragon will be provided to you soon.”

“This level’s Level Lord, [Chthonian Emperor Estark], will descend in an hour!”

“Please make haste! Wishing you the best of luck!”

The moment the voice faded, a miniature map materialized in Shi Xiaobai’s mind, indicating to him where the fifth dragon was.

From the position, he was more than half the map away from the fifth dragon. And from the miniature map, Monster Fairyland was many times larger than the fifth level!

However, Shi Xiaobai did not care about this at the moment. He was completely dumbfounded.

What was going on?

How did he reach the sixth level after sleeping?

Shi Xiaobai suddenly sensed something odd as he involuntarily raised his right hand slowly.

His right hand could now move!

Didn’t this mean that he had been unconscious for at least eleven



hours?

Shi Xiaobai could not help but sigh. Not only did he have a strange dream in his sleep, strange happenings had happened in reality as well.

“It appears that This King does not suit sleeping.”

Shi Xiaobai came to a simple conclusion and decided to temporarily put this matter aside.

After some thought, he put on the black and white t-shirt. He had to agree that it was extremely comfortable wearing it. The size also fit him perfectly.

From the looks of it, the person who chose the clothes for him had gone through great pains.

Shi Xiaobai looked at the trousers beside him and hesitated slightly. Finally, he decided to change into the trousers as well.

Although he did not know who it was, he could not let down the good intentions of the other person.

Furthermore, the texture of the trousers felt quite good. It was probably very comfortable wearing them.

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai unzipped the trousers and

was about to take his trousers off to put on the new pair.

Just as he took them off halfway.

A golden beam of light suddenly landed on the island!

It landed not far in front of Shi Xiaobai!

As the golden light dissipated, a figure appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai.

The person was a petite girl wearing a purple dress. She had long hair that was pink like cherry blossoms. Using purple hair ties, she tied her hair into two pigtails. Her skin was whiter than snow, and was like creamy jade. She had watery amber eyes and an exquisite face that looked like a pixie.

After the girl landed, she looked down at the trousers that were halfway down by Shi Xiaobai's knees. Blinking, she whispered, "Carry on."

The girl could have turned around, but instead, she raised her hands to cover her eyes. In between her fingers, she left a tiny gap.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent.

This King had his trousers just halfway off, and a female pervert came?

...

## Chapter 308: After Saying So Much, Can I Have A Spot On Your Friends List

---

Shi Xiaobai pulled up his trousers again. He felt somewhat awkward changing his trousers in front of a female stranger, especially when this girl was covering her eyes, but there were obvious gaps in between her fingers, as though she was prepared to peep blatantly.

“Eh, why aren’t you changing? The other pair of trousers fits your shirt better. It’s best you change into it.”

The girl lowered her hand and blinked. She said, “I can turn around.”

After saying that, the girl slowly turned her body.

Shi Xiaobai sighed.

Sigh, you should have turned around earlier. This King’s trousers would have already been pulled up!

Shi Xiaobai glanced at the girl’s back and suddenly found it familiar, as though he had seen it somewhere.

Well, it had to be a mistake. He did not know such a ‘bold’ girl.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment and finally quickly changed

his trousers.

However, just as Shi Xiaobai finished changing his trousers, without making a sound, the girl had taken the initiative to turn around. Her timing was perfect. It was hard to doubt that the girl had not been peeping.

No, there was no need for doubt. She definitely was peeping through some means!

This was because the girl's ears were slightly red.

Shi Xiaobai was at a loss as to what to say. He could only look at the girl with calm eyes.

“Ahem.”

The girl gently cleared her throat and started by saying, “Hello, Shi Xiaobai, I'm very happy to be randomly sent to the same waypoint as you. I'm your...fan. My name is Ka Xiaozi. You can call me Xiaozi.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard the girl address him as ‘Shi Xiaobai’, he was momentarily taken aback. After all, his identity to others was Tu Dahei, but Shi Xiaobai quickly recalled that back on the fifth level, the assessment program would provide the identity of the ‘fugitive’. Since he had reached the sixth level, it was very likely that he had been chosen as a ‘fugitive’. It was understandable that his identity as ‘Shi Xiaobai’ was revealed.

And after hearing the girl claiming to be his admirer, and how her name was 'Ka Xiaozi', his impression of her immediately elevated slightly.

Although the girl's peeping of him changing was somewhat odd, the name she had was rather artistic. Names like Xiaobai (Little White), Xiaohei (Little Black), Xiaozi (Little Purple) needed to be praised.

Shi Xiaobai stuck his chin outwards and said, "The number of admirers This King has is just too many. There are people claiming to be This King's admirers everywhere. This King has previously encountered two such despicable liars. Go ahead and say why you idolize This King?"

Shi Xiaobai look at the girl with suspicion. The last time people claimed to be his admirers was during his first meeting with Chen Lingcun and Ye Jiaquan.

Back then, the two of them praised him to the heavens, but in the end, the two were fucking acting!

Having learned his lesson, Shi Xiaobai no longer easily trusted the words of 'admirers'.

However, Ka Xiaozi was apparently prepared. Without any thought, she answered, "I began paying attention to you from a long, long time ago. In the beginning, I heard that Gaia recruited a dual S-class talent named Shi Xiaobai. Immediately, I wanted to

know what you looked like. That's because your name is very similar to mine. Shi Xiaobai, Ka Xiaozi. At first glance, no one can tell who is mimicking the other! Later on, I felt that if we could get to know each other, we would definitely become the best of friends."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback. This girl knew of his name so early on? From the beginning of the story, it did not sound fabricated. Immediately, Shi Xiaobai had some anticipation for what Ka Xiaozi had to say next.

However, Shi Xiaobai could not help but interrupt, "If it's mimicking, it can only be you mimicking This King. This is because This King has always been mimicked but never surpassed."

Ka Xiaozi seemed to recall of something when she heard this. She suddenly broke out into laughter. Her bright eyes narrowed into crescents, and a charming smile suffused on her lips.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly stunned. He had to say that the girl in front of him was indeed very beautiful. Her beauty could match Kali sans her eyepatch or a smiling Sunless.

If it were any ordinary person, he would have fallen head over heels for Ka Xiaozi's smile. However, Shi Xiaobai would not. He stared at Ka Xiaozi with judgmental eyes and said, "You are smiling in such a guilty manner. It can't be that your name is really deliberately mimicking This King, right?"

Probably Shi Xiaobai was the only person who could tell ‘guilt’ from a beautiful smile that could topple countries.

“Of course not! I’m laughing because...forget it. It’s best I don’t explain. After all, any explanation is to conceal, and concealment is just fabricating a story.”

Ka Xiaozi said righteously. However, the smile that blossomed on her face did not seem convincing.

However, Shi Xiaobai was susceptible to this. He nodded and said, “This King shall believe you this once. Continue on.”

“Yea.”

Ka Xiaozi nodded. She slowly wiped away her smile, but there was a faint smile lingering on her lips. She seemed to be in an extremely good mood.

She considered her words for a moment before saying, “Later on, I paid some attention to the Gaia message boards, and ended up discovering that there was nearly no news about Shi Xiaobai. However, there was a thread discussing Tu Dahei on the boards. It was said that Tu Dahei made Underworld King, Hisith, suffer in class and how he nearly eliminated all the rookies of Annihilation division. I have always been sensitive to names. I quickly guessed that the names Shi Xiaobai and Tu Dahei were clearly opposites. Could they be the same person? Back then, there were people who raised this idea on the message boards, but they were quickly refuted by others. The main reason was that Tu Dahei was already



at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. And it was rumored that Shi Xiaobai had yet to begin psionic cultivation. It was impossible to accomplish that in about ten days. Back then, I was somewhat doubtful about it, but I did not abandon this hypothesis. This was because I felt that a person who had a name like Shi Xiaobai was able to do anything.”

Shi Xiaobai felt wistful immediately upon hearing this. What Ka Xiaozi said were events that occurred in the past one or two months, but Shi Xiaobai felt like it was eons ago. Too many things had happened in the past one month.

Shi Xiaobai nodded to gesture to Ka Xiaozi to continue. Actually, he was already convinced. After all, how could an ordinary person understand him that well. Especially the words, ‘able to do anything’, was something that gained Shi Xiaobai’s approval.

Ka Xiaozi continued, “As I’m a rookie from the organization, Muses, when Princess Xiao Xiao participated in the weekly contest as representative to Muses battle arena cafe branch, I went to watch that weekly match even if I wasn’t interested in virtual competitions. I then became a fan of one of the participants. The participants name was ‘IChooseDogLeading’! Hehe, after that. From the information that ‘IChooseDogLeading’ was a representative of Gaia branch and how he happened to be at the third level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, I began to associate God DogLeading with Tu Dahei. Just a while ago, during the counteroffensive on the Demon City, I witnessed the Crab Steps you used and I was certain that you are God DogLeading!”

Shi Xiaobai was surprised.

Even a hidden identity as IChooseDogLeading had been guessed by this girl?

The way Shi Xiaobai looked at Ka Xiaozi turned slightly odd. What the girl said sounded very realistic. He never expected that a stranger would pay so much attention to him somewhere else.

This feeling felt somewhat amazing.

“I’m your admirer.”

Ka Xiaozi and Shi Xiaobai locked eyes. Be it tone or gaze, they were both extremely sincere. Shi Xiaobai could not help but nod. In fact, Shi Xiaobai had a nagging feeling that the girl in front of him was lying to him, but for some reason, this sentence sounded extremely truthful.

It was unlikely a lie that she was his admirer.

Ka Xiaozi suddenly said very passionately, “I’m really very happy, so happy to be able to participate in this selection. Although I’ve guessed that Shi Xiaobai was Tu Dahei, and Tu Dahei was God DogLeading, it was all a guess. However, at the first level, when I heard your name resound throughout the land of the trial, I suddenly felt very proud. This was because the person to clear the level in less than twenty seconds and shock everybody was Shi Xiaobai. I knew from a long time ago, and began paying attention from early on. I remember your name more than any other rookie.”

“Therefore, when I reached the second level, I was stunned by your plan on launching a counteroffensive on the Demon City. I was astounded by how you charged alone through the demonic beasts that filled the lands and how you killed the Demonic Tree in one strike. However, i wasn’t able to be a hundred percent sure that you were Shi Xiaobai. But back then, I had a thought. If Tu Dahei and Shi Xiaobai was not the same person, what relationship would they have?”

“At the third level, Shi Xiaobai’s name once again made everyone astounded. Finally at the fifth level, my guess from the very beginning was validated. Shi Xiaobai is Tu Dahei. I am unable to describe the feelings I had then. It’s probably the feeling of wanting to eat chocolates and also wanting to eat ice-cream, but because I’m afraid of getting fat, I can only choose one. However, when the service staff suddenly tells you that they sell chocolate ice-cream. Yea, anyways the feeling is very blissful.”

“Therefore, I’m very happy to be able to meet you at the sixth level and also have a chance to get to know you. I’m your admirer and will always be one!”

Be it Ka Xiaozi’s words, tone or expression, she was extremely sincere. She was like a fan who had idolized a celebrity for a very long time and finally having the chance to confess her thoughts.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat touched. Compared to what Chen Lingcun and Ye Jiaquan said in the past, he could not help but feel wistful. Look at it, take a good look at this. This is what a real fan is. Whatever she said was from the bottom of her heart!

At this moment, Ka Xiaozi suddenly blinked. Her words took a sudden twist as she said, “After saying so much, can I have a spot on your Friends list?”

Shi Xiaobai was shocked.

A spot on the Friends list?

This sentence inexplicably sounded familiar.

Back when he was playing League of Legends 1v9, after doing a heaven-defying reversal, his teammates would type: “God, can I have a spot on your Friends list?”

But the girl in front of him probably did not mean that, right?

However, Ka Xiaozi said coyly in the next moment, “I’m very weak. I got to the sixth level completely by luck. It wasn’t easy for me to meet my idol. I’m wondering if my idol can bring me along, letting me go wherever I want to go?”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent.

She really meant that?

Ka Xiaozi lowered her head slightly and softly said, “Can...I stay by your side?”

Shi Xiaobai gave the girl a serious look.

He had a nagging feeling that the girl said so much to lay the foundations for this final sentence. However, this sentence touched him the most. This was because he could feel the true feelings from the girl.

Shi Xiaobai cherished these Friendship spots and would not easily give them to others.

However, if he were to meet such a cute girl like Ka Xiaozi, he would never be stingy with his Friendship spots.

“Alright!”

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, “Let’s go. This King will take you to slay the dragon.”

# Chapter 309: This Spot Definitely Should Harden, As A Form Of Respect

---

In the sixth level, Monster Fairyland, there were seven dragons. This level's quest was to launch a crusade against the dragon. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai said, "Let's go. This King will take you to slay the dragon."

Ka Xiaozi was taken aback before she immediately beamed, "Alright!"

Slaying dragons, that sounded truly domineering!

However, their journey to slay a dragon was met with a tiny problem, from the very beginning.

At this moment, they were located in the middle of a lone island. Although it was a lake, the distance to the other end of the lake was a few hundred meters. With Shi Xiaobai's Crab Steps at the Dominating Refinement realm, he was still able to barely waterwalk for a few hundred meters. However, could the girl who claimed to be very weak be able to cross it?

Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask, "Do you know how to swim?"

By using a psionic barrier to envelop one's body, it was unlikely to wet their clothes over the few hundred meter distance. If the girl knew how to swim, swimming was a rather good idea.

Ka Xiaozhi widened her big, bright eyes and shook her head, “No, I’m very weak. Furthermore...”

Ka Xiaozhi leaned sideways slightly and pointed to the lake behind her.

Shi Xiaobai was surprised as he took a step forward. Tracing the direction in which Ka Xiaozhi pointed, he saw a large, dark shadow under the surface of the lake. If one didn’t look carefully, one would think of it as a tree’s shadow. But on a careful look, one would be appalled to realize that it was a massive monster lurking underneath the lake surface.

Although a large and odd contour could be barely made out, the forbidding scales on the behemoth could be clearly seen due to the clear lake. The behemoth was much larger than the island itself. If this behemoth was startled, survival might not be an option on this lone island.

Shi Xiaobai immediately dismissed the idea of letting the girl swim across the lake. Ignoring the fact that the girl could not swim, even if she were a swimming athlete, she might end up in the belly of the lake behemoth.

Should he just kill the behemoth under the lake?

Shi Xiaobai had such a thought, but he quickly dismissed it. The island was too tiny. If the lake behemoth went into a rage, the island might be the first to be destroyed. When the time came, he had to even rescue the girl who did not know how to swim. And

what if, what if he wet his new clothes!?

As Shi Xiaobai contemplated, Ka Xiaozi did not appear anxious. She stared unblinkingly at Shi Xiaobai, as though she believed that Shi Xiaobai would be able to figure out a way.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment before saying, “If you don’t mind, This King will piggyback you over?”

This was the only idea Shi Xiaobai could think of. Although carrying a person on his back would slightly affect his movements, it would be of little effect.

However, from Riko, Xiao Xiao, and Mu Yuesheng, Shi Xiaobai learned of something—girls did not like members of the opposite sex casually touching their bodies.

He had just gotten to know Ka Xiaozi, so he naturally had to ask if she minded.

Ka Xiaozi shook her head and said with a laugh, “Of course I don’t mind, but...”

However...

Ka Xiaozi walked towards Shi Xiaobai with light footsteps. Her eyes were bright, and her face was slightly blushed. She then slowly stretched out her arms as she said with puckered lips, “Can you carry me instead?”



Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback before he nodded. He did not find 'piggybacking' and 'carrying' very different. Although he preferred using a 'fireman's lift' because he could free up a hand to do other things, he did not mind satisfying the girl's request.

Shi Xiaobai's right hand had already recovered. He transformed the black sword in his hand into energy and kept it in his right hand. He took a step forward and with one hand holding the girl's waist, he squatted down slightly, and held the girl's legs. In a very natural manner, he lifted the girl up in a princess carry.

Ka Xiaozi exhaled slightly as she wrapped her arms around Shi Xiaobai's neck and leaned her forehead on Shi Xiaobai's shoulder.

Such a position was somewhat ambiguous. At least, Ka Xiaozi was blushing. Her eyelashes fluttered while her eyes slightly glazed over.

The girl's waist was very slender and soft. There was no excess fat, and her thigh was full and very elastic. When she was carried, her purple dress slid up, revealing a portion of her calves. They were as exquisite and beautiful as ivory. The way she lowered her head in embarrassment was endearing. A virgin fragrance assaulted his olfactory senses. If this were any other male, even if their primal instincts did not boil their blood, they would definitely have hardened, as a form of respect.

However, Shi Xiaobai was like a block of wood. He turned a blind eye towards this as he looked towards the surface of the lake and

began considering how he should traverse the lake. If not for the lake behemoth, he could easily traverse the lake, but with uncertain factors, he had to consider the safety of the girl in his arms.

Ka Xiaozi looked up and glanced at Shi Xiaobai. A smile flashed in her eyes.

“Hold tight.”

Shi Xiaobai warned her with a whisper. He was ready to traverse the lake.

Ka Xiaozi nodded and hugged Shi Xiaobai tightly. Although she looked somewhat embarrassed, she did not seem to hate such intimacy.

Shi Xiaobai took a few steps back and kicked off with a little run as he suddenly rushed forward!

To run on the surface of the lake, the most important thing was to be fast, followed by there not being any pause. It had to be done in one fell swoop.

Shi Xiaobai stepped onto the water as he advanced forward like a dragonfly skimming the surface of the water in a natural and smooth manner. In a while, he was halfway the distance.

“Be careful!”

A cry sounded beside his ear as Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows jumped slightly. Giving a sideways glance, it was unknown when a gigantic head had emerged from the surface of the lake.

The gigantic head resembled a snake or a toad, and also a bit like a hippopotamus. In summary, it was extremely strange. But at this moment, the gigantic head was in close proximity. The large mouth it had could easily devour a tiny hill!

Shi Xiaobai was slightly alarmed. From the behemoth's figure in the water, he thought that this direction was the behemoth's tail, but he never expected it to be a deceitful trick by the behemoth?

However, Shi Xiaobai did not panic. He stepped onto the surface of the lake and made an abrupt change in velocity!

“Boom!”

The behemoth's mouth snapped, producing a rumbling bang. However, the behemoth quickly roared angrily. This was because it had only bitten a mirage!

And on the other side, Shi Xiaobai, who had forcefully used Crab Phantom Image, was already charging towards the edge of the lake with Ka Xiaozi in arms!

At this moment, a gigantic shadow fell from the sky!

It was the behemoth's tail!

The gigantic tail was filled with spikes, as though swaths of towering trees came crashing down at him. If he was struck by the tail, his body would be riddled with holes even if he did not get smashed into pulp due to the lake's surface!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes narrowed slightly. His body suddenly came to a halt as he stopped for a second above the lake!

This strange motion was as though he had stepped on the brakes on the lake!

“Boom!”

The lake behemoth clearly did not expect Shi Xiaobai to forcefully stop above the surface of the lake. The gigantic tail made a wrong prediction and crashed down in front of the duo, splashing a wall of water!

“Oh no!”

Shi Xiaobai, who was extremely calm to begin with, could no longer maintain his composure. Staring with his eyes, he charged out madly. His speed was much faster than it usually was!

Shi Xiaobai instantly appeared on the banks of the lake as the water splashed down, forming ripples everywhere, as though it was raining cats and dogs.

Shi Xiaobai had broken his limits once again at this critical moment. Having already perfected his previous realm, he had not been able to make a breakthrough with his Crab Steps, but now, he had broken through from the Dominating Refinement to the Crest of Perfection realm.

Shi Xiaobai stopped only after he continued running forward for quite a distance. Immediately, an angry roar of indignation was heard behind him.

“That was close!”

Shi Xiaobai heaved a sigh of relief.

It was truly too dangerous. He nearly got his new clothes wet!

Against the demonic beasts that filled the lands and the pursuit of the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, he had faced all sorts of difficult situations. Shi Xiaobai’s Crab Steps had been stuck at the Dominating Refinement realm all this while without being able to go another step further. At this moment, in order to not wet his clothes, Shi Xiaobai had finally broken his own limits!

“Pfft!”

For some unknown reason, Ka Xiaozi burst out laughing. Her laughter was as melodious as pearly bells. Her eyes were bright, and she looked cheerful. She did not appear as though she was

shocked from the close shave from before. Instead, she seemed to be enjoying the process.

Shi Xiaobai gently lowered Ka Xiaozi. Seeing the smiling girl and hearing the melodious sound of her laughter, his mood elevated as well. He wanted to laugh with her.

As the saying goes, laughing is contagious.

Shi Xiaobai never believed it because whenever Yang Wei laughed sinisterly, Shi Xiaobai did not have the mood to laugh with him.

Now, Shi Xiaobai finally understood the reason. It was not the problem about laughing, but because the person laughing laughed in an ugly manner!

Shi Xiaobai revealed a gentle smile and said softly, “You don’t seem afraid at all?”

Ka Xiaozi nodded as her lips pouted slightly before she whispered, “I’m very weak, but I’m very daring!”

I’m very weak, but I’m very daring.

There was not a problem with this sentence!

...

...

“I’m very strong, but I’m very timid.”

In a dark cavern, a menacing and strange voice echoed.

“You mean you do not dare to make a move?”

An authoritative voice responded.

“As a cultured aristocrat, I cannot come to blows with such a pretty girl.”

“Heh heh, before you were trapped in this world, how many virgins had you killed? You were that era’s most notorious aristocrat. You symbolized death and cruelty.”

“So what about that? I can kill weak virgin female commoners, but that does not mean I can bite such a tough bone. Being self-aware is the culture of the aristocrat. In any case, I will not make a move. As for you, you claim to be a demon king from Hell. Why are you still here?”

“The law of being self-aware is equally effective in Hell.”

“Oh? Since you also know how powerful the virus is this time, yet you insist on me making the move. Are you trying to get me to

court death?”

“No, we will not be able to defeat this virus in a one against one situation. There may be some hope if it’s two against one.”

“May be? 1% or 0.01%? I will not gamble my life. To an aristocrat, honor comes first, but to me, life comes first.”

“You really aren’t a good aristocrat.”

“I’ve never been one. Thank you.”

“If the virus cannot be removed, three thousand years will be added to the imprisonment period. Can you accept this?”

“Compared to freedom, life is more important.”

“But I can’t accept it. I want freedom!”

“There’s no hope in a two against one. You won’t gain your freedom, only death.”

“Then if we go three against one, or even four against one, or even...”

“You mean...”



The dark cavern suddenly quietened. The two voices fell silent at the same time.

Moments later, the menacing voice was first to speak.

“This is no ordinary virus. It’s a virus that far surpasses any viruses from before. Just sending the two of us is definitely insufficient. We need backup. Shall we notify the top about this?”

“Yea, that should be done. You can do it.”

“Why should I be the one to do it?”

“Because you are an aristocrat.”

“So what about being an aristocrat? Must an aristocrat do the dirty, tiring and shameless jobs?”

“No, what I mean is that Aristocrat’s reputation allows for more to be done.”

“...Are all demonic kings of Hell so tactful like you?”

“Hell has its classes too.”

“A very reasonable explanation. Then let’s do it. How many do we need?”

“At least seven.”

“Fuck, we only have seven!”

...

# Chapter 310: Don't Hesitate, Quickly Kiss

---

Shi Xiaobai and Ka Xiaozi were located very far from the fifth dragon. They needed to cross more than half of the map. Although Shi Xiaobai had raised his Crab Steps to the Crest of Perfection realm because of not wanting to get his clothes wet, it would still need at least half an hour at full speed.

It was unknown if the dragon could last thirty minutes.

Furthermore, there was this girl beside him. Could she keep up with his speed?

Did he need to continue carrying her while running?

The journey to slay a dragon had just begun, but the duo had already encountered their second problem.

However, Shi Xiaobai seemed to be the only one who considered this problem. Ka Xiaozi continued smiling sweetly, and did not seem to put the dilemma at heart.

Shi Xiaobai did not plan on wasting time. He directly went forward and carried the girl like the previous time.

Ka Xiaozi's eyes flashed an astonished look, but she quickly calmed down. She naturally wrapped her arms around Shi Xiaobai's neck and leaned her head on Shi Xiaobai's shoulder.

Ka Xiaozi's body was soft and warm, as though he was carrying a warm piece of jade. Of course, most importantly, she was very light. Shi Xiaobai was very pleased with Ka Xiaozi's petite body. It could save him a lot of strength.

“Hold on tight. This King is...going to run at full speed!”

Shi Xiaobai lowered his head and reminded her with a whisper.

Ka Xiaozi gave an “orh” and very obediently hugged him even tighter. Her chest was tightly pressed to Shi Xiaobai's shoulder, but unfortunately, her chest was as flat as an airport runway. It could not produce any curves from the pressure.

In fact, Ka Xiaozi's figure and name reminded Shi Xiaobai of Kali. However, the two had clear differences in the color of their hair, eyes, as well facial features. Although both of them possessed a beauty of pixies, their temperaments were different. Their personalities were slightly different as well. As for the auras, it was like night and day.

Kali gave Shi Xiaobai a feeling that she was very strong, deep and unfathomably strong.

Ka Xiaozi gave Shi Xiaobai a feeling that she was very weak, inestimably weak.

Shi Xiaobai obviously wouldn't be silly enough to believe that Ka Xiaozi was really weak considering how she could reach the sixth

level. However, she did not seem that strong.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but lower his head to glance at Ka Xiaozi. It just so happened that Ka Xiaozi had looked up at him.

The two locked eyes up close as time seemed to stop at that moment.

Ka Xiaozi slowly closed her eyes. Her cheeks were slightly red, her tiny mouth was puckered, with an alluring look that read ‘don’t hesitate, quickly kiss’.

“It’s an illusion as expected.”

Shi Xiaobai had such a thought as he looked up and used Crab Steps to charge forward at full speed.

Ka Xiaozi gently smiled and buried her head into Shi Xiaobai’s shoulder. Her eyes were filled with embarrassment and smiles.

...

In order to be in time to slay the dragon, Shi Xiaobai used his full strength to run forward. He traversed the beautiful forest like a wind.

This was the first time Ka Xiaozi experienced being carried in someone’s arms while ‘going out on a spin’. As she was immersing

herself in this process, she produced pearly laughter along the way.

Her laughter seemed to have a magical power to it. It made Shi Xiaobai somehow feel like he had inexhaustible energy.

This world's name was Monster Fairyland. On the way, they obviously encountered several strange monsters.

For example, a metallic-colored slime, a gigantic dual-blade wielding pheasant, a tree ent that disguised itself as a tree so as to attack by surprise, a black-skinned python that was hundreds of meters long, a zombie with rotting flesh all over, a cheetah with flames all over its body, a tiger flying in the sky with wings on its back, a gigantic man-eating flower that suddenly opened its mouth from under the ground...

Countless monsters lurked in the forest. It could be said that there was danger everywhere. However, these monsters would only attack enemies that intruded into their territory. Therefore, after dodging them in an ingenious fashion, he would leave them far behind. They would then give up pursuing him.

Along the way, there were some near misses, but nothing dangerous. Shi Xiaobai used his astounding speed and reaction time to dodge the attacks from monsters time and time again.

As Ka Xiaozi said, although she was very weak, she was very bold. Despite encountering all these dangers along the way, she did not even reveal a look of apprehension, nor did she scream. Instead, she was laughing all the way.

The sweet laughter was filled with joy and excitement. It sounded like a mesmerizing piano piece, but also a tune that caused one's blood to boil in excitement.

Her laughter came from the bottom of her heart. It lacked the reserved nature of typical girls. It was graceful, open, natural, and refined.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but laugh with her. He felt inexplicably carefree, as though this boring run had become a fun and exciting escapade because of the girl's existence.

As the duo proceeded forward, they laughed, unaware of the passage of time. Very soon, they saw a group of people gathered ahead of them.

The group of people numbered about forty or fifty. When the duo saw the crowd, the crowd had also turned their heads over.

There was no other way. For this group of people, the sound of laughter had reached them before the duo arrived.

One of the laughs sounded somewhat young, but it sounded inexplicably heroic and carefree.

The other laughter was mesmerizing like a heavenly harp. They could not help but conjure an image of a beautiful girl.

The two laughs were enough to make everyone stop what they were doing. They could not help but to turn around to take a look.

Although God was usually fair, He would close a window when opening a door for you. Those girls that had ethereal and sweet voices were mostly fat girls, but it did not prevent the crowd from looking forward to something unexpected.

Then, they truly saw something unexpected.

The unexpected left many people dumbfounded.

The first thing they did was to search for the owner of that melodious voice, so they immediately saw Ka Xiaozi in Shi Xiaobai's arms.

Although her head was leaning on Shi Xiaobai's shoulder, revealing only her side profile, just her side profile was enough to make people forget to breathe.

How could there be such a pretty girl in this world?

Why was this girl that resembled a pixie carried in the arms of someone else?

Who was the bastard that had such luck?

Everyone immediately looked at the youth carrying the girl, and



their eyes nearly popped out of their sockets.

“Holy shit, it’s Shi Xiaobai again?”

“Fuck, why does this happen? Isn’t Shi Xiaobai an item with Goddess Sunless? What...is going on now!?”

“Heavens, I thought Shi Xiaobai got some dumb luck to be able to succeed in chasing Sunless. But who knew that he immediately got another even more beautiful girl. Is he two-timing two wonderful girls?”

“I feel that...if Goddess Sunless were not to have such a cold face, she would not be worse than this girl. But now, I have to say that this girl is the prettiest girl I’ve ever seen. She’s prettier than world-class female celebrities. Of course, she’s still a little young. In terms of charm, she can’t beat those world-class beauties.”

“Shut up, I feel like beating Shi Xiaobai up!”

“Yo, the main point is that none of us here can defeat Shi Xiaobai. It’s so infuriating!”

“What relationship does the two have? They feel so intimate...”

“You can know what relationship they have even if you use your knee to think. Look at that girl’s eyes. Those are the eyes of one having fallen into the river of love, but Shi Xiaobai.... Fuck, with a beauty in arms, how is Shi Xiaobai that calm?”

“This is the difference between people. Do you think Shi Xiaobai will be like a bunch of losers like you who lose to their primal instincts all the time? He might have...might have been used to it... Fuck, why do I suddenly feel like dying as I say this...”

“So infuriating!”

“...”

This group of people were clearly rookies participating in the selection. A few of them were people Shi Xiaobai recognized. Most of the youths had been hurt by this scene, receiving 10,000 points of damage.

When Shi Xiaobai saw everyone discussing, he did not put their words to heart. He now began realizing that the rookies had misunderstood his relationship with Sunless and Ka Xiaozi. However, Shi Xiaobai could not be bothered to explain, nor did he feel like there was a need to explain.

He gently lowered Ka Xiaozi.

However, Ka Xiaozi did not release her arms around his neck.

“Oh?”

Shi Xiaobai looked curiously at Ka Xiaozi.

“On the way, I laughed very happily. I’ve not laughed in such a carefree manner in a long time, a very, very long time...”

Ka Xiaozi looked up into Shi Xiaobai’s eyes. There was still a happy smile on her face. Her face was slightly red, as her eyes had a soft look to them, beautiful and crystal clear.

“This King was very happy as well.”

Shi Xiaobai grinned. Ever since he came to this world, it was as if he had never laughed so brazenly and in such a carefree manner?

This was because he encountered the calamity fiend, Sahadun, after coming to this world. He had experienced despair, and his thirst to become strong had weighed heavily on his mind.

This way of freely laughing without any worries had been a distant thing for him as well.

As Shi Xiaobai was lost in reverie, he suddenly felt a soft moistness on his cheek. Something with a slight fragrant scent was adhered to it.

Shi Xiaobai was surprised as he looked sideways. Ka Xiaozi had tip-toed and kissed him on the cheek.

The moment her lips touched him, Ka Xiaozi released her arms

and lowered her head slightly. Her feet gently rubbed the ground as she muttered, "This is a reward."

Shi Xiaobai acknowledged with an 'orh', and did not say anything. He kept feeling like he had not lost out.

When the youths in the distance saw this scene, their hearts shattered and fell to the ground.

This pixie-like girl clearly had a place for Shi Xiaobai in her heart. That coy look was truly mesmerizing, but unfortunately, it did not belong to them.

At this moment, three people walked out of the crowd towards Shi Xiaobai and Ka Xiaozi.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up slightly. Waving his hand, he greeted the three people as he walked over. Ka Xiaozi followed closely beside him.

The three people were none other than Mu Yuesheng, Mozzie, and Kevin.

To speak the truth, Shi Xiaobai did not expect to see Mozzie and Kevin on the sixth level. The rules of the fifth level disadvantaged Mozzie and Kevin because of their very poor mobility. Their strength was not as powerful as Sunless' to 'kill' groups if they came. It was difficult to snatch a Death Epaulette. Protecting a Death Epaulette was even more difficult.

It would be a breeze for Mu Yuesheng. In terms of speed, she stood head and shoulders above others.

Therefore, he never expected for Mozzie and Kevin to arrive as well.

What happened on the fifth level?

.

When the trio walked over, their eyes spontaneously landed on Ka Xiaozi. Different from the other rookies, they would not suspect that Shi Xiaobai was two-timing. This was because they knew for a fact that there was nothing ambiguous between Shi Xiaobai and Sunless. Their guesses were completely opposite from others.

However, they never expected Ka Xiaozi to be the first to greet them. Furthermore, she immediately confirmed their guesses. They heard Ka Xiaozi say, “Nice to meet you. My name is Ka Xiaozi. My relationship with Shi Xiaobai is not what you think. However, I’m working hard towards that relationship. The saying goes that it’s easy for a girl to chase a boy, but I’ve discovered that it’s not true.”

Mu Yuesheng and company were stunned. This girl was very open, bold and shameless!

Shi Xiaobai was also stunned.

He was being pursued?

.

Shi Xiaobai felt somewhat helpless. He could only sigh in his head and think,

This King is truly too excellent.

.

He looked at Ka Xiaozi and said seriously, “This King already has a girlfriend!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly discovered that having a girlfriend was quite a good thing. It could save him quite a bit of trouble!

If others were to know that Shi Xiaobai was having a headache for this matter, they would probably cry in the bathroom till they passed out.

Upon hearing Shi Xiaobai say this, Ka Xiaozi smiled sweetly and said, “I know!”

Shi Xiaobai’s heart jumped and he looked curiously at Ka Xiaozi, “You know?”

If Shi Xiaobai remembered correctly, the matter of him having a girlfriend was something only Kali and Sunless knew!

...

# Chapter 311: What Happened During This King's Afternoon Nap

---

When Shi Xiaobai claimed to already have a girlfriend, Mu Yuesheng and company were astounded. Instead, it was Ka Xiaozi who said matter-of-factly, 'I know'.

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt somewhat curious. The news of him having a girlfriend was something only Kali herself or Sunless, who he previously informed, knew.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask doubtfully, "You know?"

When Ka Xiaozi heard this, she was taken aback, but she immediately regained her composure and said, "Everyone knows. Your girlfriend is...Sunless Ye. I of course...know."

This matter was something almost all the rookies knew. Although it was a misunderstanding, that was how rumors started.

It seemed quite typical for Ka Xiaozi to misunderstand Sunless as his girlfriend.

Shi Xiaobai immediately wiped his doubts away and shook his head gently. "It's not her."

Ka Xiaozi's eyes immediately turned odd as she whispered, "So there's someone else?"



Mozzie's eyes burned with a Soul of Gossip. She looked at Shi Xiaobai and hurriedly said, "Lord Shi Xiaobai, who is it?"

Mu Yuesheng and Kevin also stared intently at Shi Xiaobai, obviously very interested in knowing who Shi Xiaobai's girlfriend was. From their point of view, Shi Xiaobai was constantly surrounded by chicks, but he had never expressed any interest in that regard.

Although his Massage Technique of God was somewhat ambiguous, he was like a block of wood himself, turning a blind eye to the alluring scenes. People could not help but sigh because of it. Either Shi Xiaobai was overly pure and innocent, or he was engaging in a long con.

As such, Mu Yuesheng and company refused to believe that Shi Xiaobai had a girlfriend. They could not imagine what girl could stir Shi Xiaobai's heart that even Sunless and Ka Xiaozi could not.

From their point of view, a girlfriend was likely an excuse Shi Xiaobai used because he found it troublesome.

In fact, Mu Yuesheng and company understood Shi Xiaobai very well, but they were only half-right.

Shi Xiaobai indeed found it troublesome, but he truly had a girlfriend. Furthermore, he did not mind telling others who his girlfriend was.

Shi Xiaobai frankly said, “This King’s girlfriend’s name is Kali. All of you probably don’t know her.”

With this said, Mozzie and company gaped, before spontaneously scoffing with a “tch”, as they gave the look of ‘whoever believes you is a fool’.

Shi Xiaobai was surprised and asked curiously, “Why that reaction?”

Kevin rarely had a chance to put Shi Xiaobai down, so how could he miss this opportunity? He said, “Although I know you picked a random name to brush us off because you do not have a girlfriend, I never expected you to use the name Kali. Shi Xiaobai...we are all from Gaia. Who doesn’t know about the three powerhouses of Gaia, Her Excellency Kali? Cough. Her Excellency Kali’s age can be your grandmother’s grandmother’s...to the n-th time. Rumor has it that she’s old and ugly. Furthermore, her temper is terrible and she has an odd personality, an old hag that strangers shy away. Yet, you say Kali is your girlfriend. This joke is way too exaggerated!”

Mozzie quipped as well, “Lord Shi Xiaobai...Grandma Kali is very famous. Don’t use her as a joke for no reason.”

Mu Yuesheng also anxiously said, “Rumor has it that Her Excellency Kali’s temper is even odder than His Excellency Hisith’s. Also, rumor has it that she has been chaste all her life, and people curse her behind her back as an old hag or old virgin.

Although, it's not pleasing to the ears, it's evident that Her Excellency Kali is a person who cares about her chastity and well-being. It's best your joke doesn't reach her ears!"

When Shi Xiaobai heard the trio's words, he frowned deeply and said with a solemn expression, "The rumors you heard are all extremely ridiculous. Kali looks more like a thirteen or fourteen-year-old girl. She's as pretty as a pixie, with a very gentle personality. This King likes her a lot. It's completely opposite from what you have heard. Forget it, it's best when you see her in person. This King will find an opportunity for all of you to meet her one day."

Seeing Shi Xiaobai's expression look so serious, as though he was fuming, the trio did not dare to say anything more. They were filled with doubts. Could all the rumors regarding Kali be fake?

Shi Xiaobai was indeed rather angry, but it was not because of the trio's words, but angry over the rumor-mongers' slanders.

Kali held a very special spot in Shi Xiaobai's heart. She was not to be slandered.

No one noticed that the silent Ka Xiaozi had lowered her head. There was a complicated looking smile on her lips, as though it was an angry sneer, but also a relieved smile.

The mood turned slightly heavy.

Shi Xiaobai did not wish to harp on this topic, so he quickly changed topics and said, “Oh right, what happened during This King’s afternoon nap?”

When the trio heard this, they were slightly taken aback before they realized what he meant. The afternoon nap Shi Xiaobai was referring to was the period he was unconscious.

Depicting unconsciousness as an afternoon nap was very Shi Xiaobai.

Mu Yuesheng, who had been defending by his side ever since he began ‘taking an afternoon nap’, knew the situation the best. She began describing what had happened during that period of time.

Mu Yuesheng did not embellish the situation too much, nor did she mention how she had hurt her hand while protecting him. She simply told Shi Xiaobai that after he fell unconscious, due to the goodwill he had accumulated in the previous levels, many rookies chose to protect him. Along the way, the black-robed youth that he had killed revived. There were people who were killed protecting him, so the rookies ran away in fright, leaving only nine people to protect him.

Mu Yuesheng very seriously informed Shi Xiaobai of the names of Pulp Farmer and company.

Mu Yuesheng finally added, “Oh right, there was a mysterious person protecting you in the dark. If not for that shot that blew up the head of the black-robed bloody figure at the critical moment,

the situation would likely have been rather dangerous.”

When Shi Xiaobai finished hearing this, he said gratefully, “Thank you to all of you. This King will remember this favor.”

Kevin embarrassedly said, “Don’t thank me. I came late. I basically didn’t help at all.”

Mozzie stuck her tongue out as she said, “It’s all my fault for running too slowly.”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, “It’s enough to do your best to rush to me. This King just woke up about half an hour ago, and slept more than ten hours. What happened during this period?”

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was eager to know how Mozzie and Kevin were able to clear the fifth level. He had a nagging feeling that this matter should have been rather complicated.

Kevin cleverly realized what Shi Xiaobai was asking about, so he said, “So you woke up half an hour ago. In that case, you were probably unconsci-...having an afternoon nap for twelve hours. There were quite a lot of things happening during this period of time. The first oddity was the fifth level’s Level Lord did not descend although the time was up. The next big thing was the bloody figure reviving. It began scouring the world to find people to vent its anger. It destroyed the Life Epauettes of many rookies, and no one could stop it. But thankfully, the bloody figure was randomly given the Death Epauette. After he vented his anger for ten minutes, he was sent away. Therefore, there were still rookies

who ‘luckily’ survived. Mozzie and I happened to tide over the calamity.”

“Later on, Mozzie was randomly assigned the Death Epaulette, but by then, the top ten in the official forecast had already cleared the level, while the remaining rookies were mostly ‘killed’ by the bloody figure. In addition to the Level Lord not descending, Yuesheng, Mozzie and I formed a three-person group and managed to succeed surviving ten minutes. Of course, it was mostly thanks to Yuesheng. After she broke through to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, her strength was almost equivalent to Pulp Farmer and the rest. Typical rookies were no problem for her. Later on, I was also randomly assigned a Death Epaulette. Yuesheng protected me as well...so, Mozzie and I, with the help of Yuesheng, together with the Level Lord being on strike and the bloody figure’s frenzy...we managed to luckily reach the sixth level.”

After Kevin depicted the series of events in detail, Shi Xiaobai could not help but give a Like to the duo’s good luck. Of course, the most important thing was because of Mu Yuesheng’s protection, if not, luck would not have been sufficient. After all, the rules of the fifth level were very disadvantageous to slower-moving people like them.

However, there was a nagging feeling that there was something odd with the fifth level’s Level Lord going on strike.

For some reason, Shi Xiaobai could not help but feel a sense of foreboding.

At this moment, Kevin seemed to think of something as he added, “Oh, right. I forgot to tell you about the situation regarding the sixth level. During the past ten or so hours, four dragons have died in the sixth level. As such, four ‘Bravehearts’ have been sent to the seventh level. It might sound like a coincidence, but the four people happen to be the top four as predicted in the official forecast—Speechless, Mu Lengxi, Sunless and Pulp Farmer. Furthermore, the order in which they slew the dragons was just like their ranking. Now, the fifth dragon has already appeared in the mountain valley in front. All the rookies are basically gathered here. I did a count, with the two of you here, there’s a total of forty-five people.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he cocked his head to give a look. They were gathered here to chat, while the other rookies that were gathered on the other side would occasionally cast curious looks at them, but no one took the liberty to disturb them.

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt somewhat curious. He asked, “When This King woke up, the fifth dragon should have descended, right? Why are all of you gathered here after half an hour?”

Kevin said with a wry smile, “The path into the mountain valley is blocked and the outer perimeter of the mountain valley has a domain which no one can break through it. Although there’s a hole in the domain, that domain is blocked by an immobile monster. No matter what we do, we aren’t able to make it move.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was slightly surprised. What monster left so many people at their wits’ end?

Shi Xiaobai immediately said, “Let’s go. Bring This King there!”

Kevin nodded and turned around to head forward. The rest immediately followed.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head sideways to Ka Xiaozi beside him. Noticing how she didn’t look well and recalling how this bubbly girl had been silent for a while, he could not help but ask out of concern, “What’s wrong? Are you not feeling well?”

Ka Xiaozi looked up and said with a smile, “Nothing. I’m just wondering what monster can block so many people.”

The group proceeded forward, walking past the gathered rookies. Turning round a bend, they saw a path that led into the mountain valley.

A monster was blocking the path.

The monster was truly extremely odd. From its shape, it was clearly a gigantic ball. Along its circumference was a disk, making it look like a medallion.

However, this ball and disk were clearly made out of diamond!

It had two eyes like night pearls that were about the size of basketballs.



This was no monster. It was basically a priceless treasure!

Wouldn't one try to carry away such a treasure even if it risked one's life?

However, the dozens of people could only stare and were unable to move the gigantic diamond monster?

At this moment, a deliberately raised voice rang out from the midst of the whispering crowd. It was filled with disdain.

“Aren't you all irritating? Stop fucking talking so highly of Shi Xiaobai. Let me make this clear, even if he were to use all his strength, he will not be able to move the monster!”

...

# Chapter 312: It's Time To Bring Out The Big Guns

---

“Aren’t you all irritating. Stop fucking talking so highly about Shi Xiaobai. Let me make this clear, even if he were to use all his strength, he will not be able to move the monster!”

The voice was deliberately raised, overwhelming the voices of everyone else. As such, it was also heard by Shi Xiaobai and company.

Everyone could not help but turn their heads over. The person who said it was a youth that looked frivolous.

When the youth saw everyone looking at him, he timidly took a step back, but quickly he worked up the courage to say, “Even the combined forces of Feng Yuanlin, Zhou Chuchu, An Mo, and Liu Yu were unable to move this diamond monster by a centimeter. Why would Shi Xiaobai be able to do so? All of you are like braindead fans saying how we can soon go past this with Shi Xiaobai here? I can’t bear hearing this anymore!”

The mood suddenly became strange. The rookies gave the youth strange looks before they gaped.

“Although Shi Xiaobai is two-timing, his strength is nothing to be maligned. If he can’t do it too, then we probably do not have any way of crossing.”

“When I heard him clear the first level in less than twenty seconds, I immediately thought that it was impossible. When I saw the legions of demonic beasts during the counteroffensive against the Demon City, I thought it was impossible too. Not long ago, I heard that only the Hero King had managed to conquer a Level Lord, and I thought no one else except the Hero King would be able to do it, but Shi Xiaobai managed to do it. So now, I believe that there is nothing Shi Xiaobai can’t do.”

“I sense some sour grapes. Although Shi Xiaobai truly makes you jealous and envious, it shouldn’t go as far as suffering from sour grapes because of him, right?”

“I’m a brainless fan, so? Are you going to bite me?”

“Pui! Even Feng Yuanlin and the others said that the monster will not be able to obstruct any further with Shi Xiaobai here. Are you unconvinced?”

“...”

What happened was rather surprising. These rookies who were cursing how Shi Xiaobai was two-timing immediately took his side and supported him. Most people believed that Shi Xiaobai had a way to move the monster as well.

The youth’s face turned extremely ugly. He was feeling as terrible as him having eaten a fly. He could only insist, “Let’s see what happens. Shi Xiaobai definitely will not be able to move the diamond monster, not even a centimeter. If, if he could to it, I’ll

run naked in the woods.”

Hearing the youth’s words that went for broke, the rookies were somewhat dumbfounded, but soon, they burst out into dismissive sneers.

“Who are you running naked for? Are you planning to blind our eyes?”

“It’s fine if you are ugly, but taking off your clothes to pollute the environment would be your fault.”

“Pui, with someone like you, you dare to reveal your dick?”

“Gross. The scene is just too sick. I don’t even dare to imagine.”

“...”

Upon hearing the crowd jeering him, the youth’s expression turned even uglier. He suddenly felt somewhat regretful for mocking Shi Xiaobai out of his inability to suppress his jealousy.

Fuck, all of you were having fun putting down Shi Xiaobai, but now, there wasn’t a single person supporting him.

What sort of magic did Shi Xiaobai have? How did Shi Xiaobai make all these rookies from various organizations, who were usually proud and mighty, so trusting of him?

From afar, Shi Xiaobai heard the crowd's conversation and felt his heart warm up. He never put jeering at heart because he would quickly use action to smack faces. However, to be supported while being jeered at, this seemed to be his first.

Of course, it appeared as though there was a danger to it. As the crowd had placed him on a high pedestal, he would suffer from a terrible fall from the pedestal if he were to fail to move the diamond monster.

However, Shi Xiaobai was never afraid of challenges, nor did he worry about being placed on a pedestal.

He only wanted to say, come on, let the praise and ravings be more intense!

Ka Xiaozi gently touched his arm and said with while beaming, "It's time to bring out the big guns."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised before he nodded. He had a nagging feeling that Ka Xiaozi would occasionally say something cheeky. For example, the sentence, "it's time to bring out the big guns", seemed to be...something he had previously said?

"A coincidence?"

At this moment, four people walked out of the crowd, towards Shi Xiaobai and company.

They happened to be Feng Yuanlin, Liu Yu, An Mo, and Zhou Chuchu.

Other than the voluptuous Zhou Chuchu, Shi Xiaobai had a slight impression of the four.

Liu Yu had once defended City #1 with him. He had met Feng Yuanlin on the crystalline grounds of the third level, Thousand Stone Doors. He remembered An Mo to be a person whose flute tunes were horrendously jarring to the ears.

Furthermore, he had learned of their names from Mu Yuesheng just a while ago. She had also briefly described their appearances, so Shi Xiaobai was able to immediately recognize them.

As such, Shi Xiaobai was the first to speak, “Thank you for protecting This King for ten minutes. This King will definitely remember it.”

Remembering it was Shi Xiaobai’s promise.

The promise sounded simple, but its value definitely exceeded everyone’s expectations.

Feng Yuanlin scratched his head and said, “Don’t, don’t thank me. It’s quite embarrassing.”

Zhou Chuchu immediately snapped, “Excuse me? The most shameless person is you!”

An Mo said with a serious expression, “Shi Xiaobai, this diamond monster’s defense is crazily high. The dozens of us have attacked the diamond monster together but to no avail. Even if you use that attack that instantly killed the black-robed bloody figure it might not be enough. However, I still choose to believe you because you have done many impossible things.”

Liu Yu said with sigh as well, “According to This Penniless Priest’s deductions, it’s impossible to shake the diamond monster’s defense at the Psionic Mortal Realm.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard what the two said, he was slightly alarmed. The attack he used to instantly kill the black-robed bloody figure was Excalibur augmented with One Second Shura. The price he paid was extremely high. It was his strongest move at the very moment. Although his psionic power back then was insufficient, preventing him from being able to fully use his power, it was still very terrifying.

This move could not even shake the diamond monster’s defenses? How terrifying was this diamond monster?

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to observe the diamond monster. It was laying on the ground silently. Its eyes did not even move, as though it was a lifeless object.

Shi Xiaobai gathered his killing intent and was surprised to

discover that the diamond monster only had one fatal red line on its body. Furthermore, the red line was located in the core of the diamond ball. The motionless line was very thin and short.

This was the diamond monster's only weakness. It was completely hidden in its interior, making it equivalent to not having any weakness at all.

At this moment, Mu Yuesheng walked towards Shi Xiaobai's side. She whispered, "Anything other than physical attacks seem to be completely ineffective against the diamond monster. My electric bolt, the flame and ice attacks of other rookies were absorbed the moment they touched the diamond monster. However, its physical defense is equally terrifying. Dozens of them attacked at the same time but failed to even leave a mark. They didn't even manage to shake it."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was slightly surprised.

Non-physical attacks were ineffective, and its physical defense was extremely heaven-defying.

What sort of history did such a diamond monster have?

As Shi Xiaobai pondered, he walked forward and came to a spot three meters away from the diamond monster.

Everyone gradually quietened down. They cast their gazes at Shi Xiaobai. Although they verbally said that they believed that Shi



Xiaobai could change the impossible into reality, they were still not certain. This was because the diamond monster's defense was too exaggerated. It was so exaggerated that they suspected if the diamond monster was something the assessment program deliberately released to eliminate them.

Shi Xiaobai reached out his right hand as a black beam of light bloomed. A black sword appeared in his hand.

At the same time, golden points of light began emerging out of the ground as they quickly gathered towards Shi Xiaobai's body, giving his body a golden luster.

Everyone held their breaths. Their hearts were both filled with anticipation and also disturbed.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly took a step forward and slashed out!

A golden sword beam struck the diamond monster like dawn casting its first light!

“Boom!”

An explosion resounded as the golden beam shattered. Dust flew into the sky and it was not immediately apparent as to what had happened.

But soon, the golden light dissipated and the dust settled. Everyone drew a gasp.

That diamond monster...still remained unmoved. Not a single mark was left on it!

“Ha...ha, hahaha...”

A mocking laughter resounded. The youth from before derided, “Look, this is the Shi Xiaobai all of you were constantly harping on. Just that bit of attack, what can it do?”

The crowd did not speak. They only gave the youth a glance like they were watching a retard.

This strike was clearly the most simple Beginner Sword. Although he had activated his Sword Truth, this was clearly a simple move for Shi Xiaobai. He was just testing the diamond monster’s defense.

Everyone’s eyes were on Shi Xiaobai, waiting for his next strike.

The next strike was the real attack.

But what astonished everyone was Shi Xiaobai putting away the black sword.

Following that, he turned around and walked back.

The crowd was alarmed.

Shi Xiaobai had given up? Did he realize that the diamond monster's defense was impenetrable after a test strike, so he had given up?

Of course, Shi Xiaobai did not give up. However, this strike that seemed like an ordinary Beginner Sword actually had terrifying destructive power. In terms of destructive power, it was not much weaker than the Kun Peng Sword Technique with Sword Truth activated.

Such power could not even shake the diamond monster, indicating how powerful its defense was.

“I will have to use that move.”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai walked towards Mozzie and company. Under everyone's astonished stares, he came in front of Kevin.

Kevin immediately felt a sense of foreboding as he said with a dry laugh, “What's the matter?”

Shi Xiaobai did not say a word as he reached out his right hand towards Kevin's chest.

This action gave everyone a fright.

They had seen this scene before. Back at the fifth level, Shi Xiaobai had once retrieved a pair of shoes from the brown-haired girl beside him!

They immediately realized what Shi Xiaobai was planning on doing, but they found it extremely odd.

Touching a chick's chest was a welfare that made people jealous.

But touching a guy's chest? Fuck, that's just disgusting.

However, the imagined gross scene did not appear. This was because when Shi Xiaobai's right hand reached about ten centimeters away from Kevin's chest, a circle of light appeared by Kevin's chest. A short sword flew out of his chest and landed in Shi Xiaobai's hand.

Kevin stared at Shi Xiaobai and realized that he could not resist at all.

When this scene landed in Mu Yuesheng's eyes, she gaped and thought, there was no need for his hand to be so close? Then why...?

Heavens, it was horrifying on pondering...

Shi Xiaobai transformed the short sword in his hand into a blob of light and stretched both his hands into it.

When Mu Yuesheng saw this scene, she could not help but turn towards Kevin and asked, “How..do you feel now?”

Kevin shook his head and said, “Nothing. That’s not right. This Genius is feeling pissed now. This bastard was so nice and friendly when he borrowed your powers, but now when it comes to my turn, he extracted it without a word. I didn’t even get to react.”

Mu Yuesheng fell silent. The feeling of her powers being borrowed was bone-chilling. It made her even lack the energy to walk. But now, Kevin did not feel a thing.

Could it be that there was a difference between men and women?

Or could it be...that Shi Xiaobai had always been going for a long con?

Mu Yuesheng did not dare to think further.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had finished his energy reconstruction. He had transformed the short sword into a meshed boxing glove!

Shi Xiaobai wore the boxing glove and walked towards the diamond monster.

When Shi Xiaobai came before the diamond monster. He turned

sideways and arched his right knee. His right hand formed a fist as he went into a pose of punching it at any time.

Everyone was alarmed. Shi Xiaobai was planning on using his fist to attack the diamond monster?

Wasn't Shi Xiaobai a swordsman?

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, "It's time to bring out the big guns."

Swordsman?

Shi Xiaobai was never a swordsman. Sword techniques were just one of his hobbies.

Speaking of which, this move had not been used in a while. It was the most damaging offensive attack Shi Xiaobai had!

...

# Chapter 313: This King Has A Diamond, Do You Have Applause?

---

Shi Xiaobai turned sideways and formed a fist as he went into a pose of punching it at any time.

Everyone was alarmed. This was because they had an impression that Shi Xiaobai was a swordsman with extremely profound swordsmanship.

And for Shi Xiaobai to suddenly pull out a short sword from the blond youth's body and then use some unknown means to transform the short sword into a meshed punching glove, the series of preparations appeared as though it was for the upcoming punch.

“Could Shi Xiaobai be like the hero, One-Pun? He usually uses a sword but his true killer move is his punch?”

“Using his fist to attack the diamond monster? To tell the truth... I'm not optimistic about it.”

“Why doesn't he use that sword strike that instantly killed the bloody figure? Is Shi Xiaobai's punch even stronger than that single sword strike?”

“...”

The crowd broke out into discussion as they stared intently at Shi Xiaobai. They were probably looking forward to Shi Xiaobai's punch giving everyone a pleasant surprise, but they were also worried that it would not be effective. The diamond monster's physical defense was too exaggerated. What sort of punch was needed to even shake it?

The people who anticipated this the most were Mozzie, Kevin, and Mu Yuesheng. This was because they had seen Shi Xiaobai's punch twice. First, it was during the four-person collective training when Shi Xiaobai punched through a steel wall. The other time was when Shi Xiaobai punched through the stadium's walls during the battle exchange, appearing in a domineering fashion.

They knew that the power of Shi Xiaobai's punch was extremely exaggerated, but they did not know how Shi Xiaobai produced such a punch. This was because in the two prior events, they had only seen the outcome of the punch, but not its process.

And at this moment, they could finally witness Shi Xiaobai using this punch. Furthermore, he had obtained Kevin's superpower, [Price of Might], augmenting that punch. The trio did not even want to blink their eyes, afraid that they would miss the stunning scene.

And logically speaking, the more powerful a punch, the faster the fist was swung. Punches with explosive power usually were so fast that one couldn't even see it with the naked eye.

Everyone stared with widened eyes, hoping to catch that instant when Shi Xiaobai punched out!



However, ten seconds quickly passed. Shi Xiaobai was still maintaining the pose of gathering his strength with his fist closed.

“Why is he not moving? Is he gathering strength?”

Some of the rookies felt their eyes hurting and could not help but complain.

At this moment, someone suddenly exclaimed, “No, Shi Xiaobai is moving! Look at his fist, isn’t it moving very subtly? It seems... it’s moving forward by a tiny bit?”

With this said, everyone looked seriously over. After quietly watching for more than ten seconds, they immediately noticed a detail they did not notice from before.

“It’s true. Shi Xiaobai’s fist is really moving...”

“It’s moving, but with my titanium divine eyes, I visually estimate Shi Xiaobai’s fist to be moving 0.001 millimeters per second.”

“Fuck, what the hell is that speed that’s slower than a snail’s crawl?”

“This must be a form of gathering strength right? But if this was something cookie-cutter, shouldn’t Shi Xiaobai suddenly punch

out, causing everyone to fail to react in time? He is probably trying to paralyze our attention, so as to create a... Forget it, I can't bullshit any further."

"It can't be? Then wouldn't we need to constantly stare at Shi Xiaobai's process of him punching? Fuck, my eyes are so sore. Where's my Refresh eye drops?"

"..."

The rookies began cursing. They now felt that Shi Xiaobai was being naughty. In order to create the effect of a sudden strike, he had come up with this lame drama to create a false impression.

They could only continue waiting, waiting till the moment Shi Xiaobai was done with his games. They had to wait for that sudden and unexpected punch that struck out like lightning.

That punch was definitely going to be as fast as lightning with shocking power.

That was what everyone had on their minds.

However, a minute passed again.

The lightning punch did not appear as they expected, but Shi Xiaobai's fist had at least succeeded in moving a few centimeters forward.

“No, I can’t take it any more. If I keep staring with full focus, my eyes will rot from soreness.”

“What is Shi Xiaobai actually doing? Does he really plan on using that turtle-speed punch to strike the diamond monster?”

“Don’t think too much about it. Shi Xiaobai must be pulling a trick on us. Wait and see. The moment you relax, he will suddenly punch out and give you a fright. I’ve been places. It’s cookie-cutter. I’ve seen plenty of cookie-cutter tricks of trying to create the mood.”

“Yea, I’m waiting. I want to see when Shi Xiaobai’s punch will strike out. Sigh, it’s really leaving me hanging.”

Some people had given up on staring intently at Shi Xiaobai. Seeing how Shi Xiaobai’s fist moved forward at a few centimeters per minute, they could only say, Bro, give us a quick one, can you?

There were others who stared even more intently, as though they were waiting for fireworks in great anticipation. If not, they were like gamers sticking to the game, bent on obtaining victory.

They all believed that Shi Xiaobai’s punch would be completed in an instant.

And that instant was a short moment in time. It would be even shorter than fireworks, brighter than meteors, something worth

looking forward to more than the sunrise.

When exactly would this punch strike out in an instant?

Everyone waited.

Waiting and waiting.

Waiting till the flowers wilted.

Waiting till their eyes went blurry.

Waiting till their hair went white.

Waiting till the heavens aged.

Waiting till the earth wizened.

Waiting till the seas dried up.

Waiting till the stones crumbled.

Waiting till...

However, there was no blooming of fireworks, nor streaking of meteors. The sunrise didn't even fucking appear. The sudden

punch everyone was looking forward to did not appear at all!

Shi Xiaobai's fist had undergone a long period of more than ten minutes, crossing over mountains and seas, experiencing a series of eighty-one tribulations before finally arriving in front of the diamond monster at a turtle's pace.

With only a few centimeters left, his fist would finally be able to touch the diamond monster.

The rookies wiped the tears from the corners of their eyes. Some of them had stared for too long, so their eyes were sore. There were others who were crying from their infuriation.

“Fuck, if he weren't Shi Xiaobai, I would have rushed up to beat him up. It's been more than ten minutes. What are we waiting for?”

“Could it be that his punch will suddenly do something explosive at the final centimeter?”

“Don't be silly. An explosive punch requires the support of an arm's strength. Without a buffer distance, it's impossible to produce the strength of the arm. I guess that Shi Xiaobai will suddenly retract his arm and then strike out again. But I want to say, was all that time waiting fucking fed to the dogs?”

“Sigh, I'm disheartened. I can't hold out any more. Shi Xiaobai, quickly do your punch and sooth our hearts, can you?”

At this moment, there was nearly no one paying full attention to Shi Xiaobai. Even Mozzie and company had given up the idea of capturing the moment Shi Xiaobai punched out. It had been more than ten minutes. Their eyes were turning blind from fatigue.

They could not understand what Shi Xiaobai was doing.

Why did he create this cookie-cutter scene for more than ten minutes?

If the person who did so was not Shi Xiaobai, the person would have incurred public outrage.

However, from what Shi Xiaobai had done during the trials, it left everyone with no choice but to wait patiently.

Now, what they were waiting for was the moment Shi Xiaobai was done messing around or the moment he would stop being so 'naughty' that made them too deep for tears.

Just as everyone relaxed, Shi Xiaobai's fist slowly and gently touched the diamond monster's diamond body!

Shi Xiaobai's Turtle-speed Divine Punch was finally completed after nearly twenty minutes!

This was the longest time Shi Xiaobai had spent gathering

strength for the Turtle-speed Divine Punch. In the past, he could only gather strength for less than five minutes, because five minutes of Turtle-speed Divine Punch was the limit of what his arm could bear.

However, when Shi Xiaobai started charging Turtle-speed Divine Punch, he was shocked to discover that his right arm's defense had reached unimaginable height.

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment before immediately realizing why. Back when the Absolute Choice punished him by sealing his right arm, 'This Turtle Is Hardest' was constantly in operation.

A seal that could make his right hand completely immobile was in effect equivalent to a near-infinite damage. During the twelve hours, 'This Turtle Is Hardest' was constantly converting the seal's "damage" to enhance his right arm's defense values.

As such, his right arm's defense value had reached an unimaginable point!

It was practically the legendary Qilin's arm!

This was probably how weal and woe depended on each other?

In short, Shi Xiaobai's punch that gathered strength for twenty minutes was actually nowhere near the limit of what his right arm could bear. However, Shi Xiaobai felt that twenty minutes were already sufficient.

Five minutes of Turtle-speed Divine Punch had always been the strongest offensive technique Shi Xiaobai had. However, as it required too much time to gather strength, he had never had a chance to use it in actual battle.

As for every minute the Turtle-speed Divine Punch gathered strength with, the power increased by several times. What sort of concept was a twenty-minute Turtle-speed Divine Punch?

Even more crazy was how this punch was augmented by a Price of Might punching glove!

Even Shi Xiaobai was unsure how powerful this punch would be!

Therefore, the moment which everyone no longer looked forward to, but Shi Xiaobai himself anticipated for twenty minutes came!

His fist gently touched the diamond monster's body!

A Turtle-speed Divine Punch at the heaven-defying level was completed!

“Boom!”

An explosion that nearly shattered eardrums boomed.



The crowd was given a scare. They nearly had a heart attack because of it as they immediately stared at the source of the explosion.

Then, they saw a stunning scene which made them exclaim 'holy shit'.

The diamond monster was gone. It had shattered into diamond fragments on the ground.

The hill behind the diamond monster was gone. A hill that was dozens of meters high had been hit by the fist winds, which immediately leveled it!

The rookies stared dumbfounded and remained silent for a long while. Even Mozzie and company were confounded, much less Feng Yuanlin and others. Their mouths were so wide open that a few chicken eggs could be stuffed in them...

This punch had refreshed their view of the world.

Shi Xiaobai was very pleased with the outcome of this fist. After all, this was augmented by the Price of Might. Furthermore, it was the Turtle-speed Divine Punch that had gathered strength for twenty minutes. The power of that one punch leveling the hill was also within expectations.

Shi Xiaobai very calmly retracted his fist while everyone stared at him in a daze. He picked up a diamond fragment from the ground.

Although it was described as a diamond fragment, it was much bigger than any diamond rings on the market.

And these diamond fragments were plentiful. They blanketed the ground in a nearly uncountable spread.

Shi Xiaobai turned around to look at the crowd that was still in a daze. He waved the diamond in his hand and said with a grin, “This King has a diamond, do you have any applause?”

# Chapter 314: We Have A Deal

---

“This King has a diamond, do you have any applause?”

This sentence broke the silence that was a result of extreme shock. Finally, everyone managed to react.

They were already at a loss as to how to express their feelings.

So shouldn't they express it with applause?

There should be applause here!

A cacophony of cheers, deafening applause erupted!

The rookies clapped with all their might as they cheered and screamed excitedly. They looked at Shi Xiaobai with shock and adulation in their eyes.

What they wanted was only for Shi Xiaobai to be able to move the diamond monster that dozens of them had been helpless against.

What Shi Xiaobai gave them was punching the diamond monster into fragments. His fist's wind pressure that flattened a hill shocked them beyond words.

That punch had overturned their imaginations.

And for them to be able to witness this punch, it was a shock, as well as an honor, but mostly excitement.

“This punch would definitely shock the nation. However, even if we tell it to others, others might not even believe us. A rookie at the Psionic Mortal Realm flattening a hill with a single punch and furthermore, it was from the wind pressure. It’s as if it’s a dream.”

“The twenty minute wait was not for nothing. Shi Xiaobai is just too cool. He has never disappointed.”

“Previously, I viewed Shi Xiaobai as a monster, but now, Shi Xiaobai is a god in my heart.”

“Ah, ah, ah. Shi Xiaobai I love you. I want to have your children!”

“...”

The crowd experienced an euphoria as their applause lasted for nearly ten minutes before it came to an end. Some of their palms had turned red from their clapping, but they continued clapping with all their might. A few girls were screaming at the top of their lungs, “Shi Xiaobai, I want to have your children”. Mixed in it were a few shameless gays.

If the various actions Shi Xiaobai had done at the trials left them in admiration and worship, this punch now made them feel like revering him.

They could only use their applause and screams to vent the impulse to kneel before him.

As the applause gradually waned, Shi Xiaobai was still enjoying the process. He said to everyone, "Take these diamonds."

The ground was littered with diamonds and rightfully belonged to him. However, he did not value money that much. Furthermore, dozens of these people were his protectors. They had once protected him on the fifth level. Although they had fled because of the bloody figure, it was an understandable act. What they did was sufficient.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai wished to use these diamonds to reward them in return.

When a number of rookies heard Shi Xiaobai's words, their eyes lit up as they looked at the diamonds that covered the ground. They could not help but swallow a mouthful of saliva.

However, a struggle flashed in the eyes of a few rookies. They loudly said, "No, we can't take it. These diamonds should belong to you."

These rookies refused it as they found it embarrassing to take the diamonds. The other rookies who wanted the diamonds were momentarily at a loss whether to proceed or not.

Shi Xiaobai sincerely said, “If none of you are taking them, This King will not take a single one.”

The rookies were stunned and were unsure as to what to do.

At this moment, Ka Xiaozi suddenly walked to Shi Xiaobai’s side. The rookies immediately cast their gazes on this pretty girl that was as pretty as a pixie.

Ka Xiaozi squatted down and picked up a diamond. Turning to the crowd, she softly said, “This isn’t a diamond, but Xiaobai’s good-intentions. I want one.”

Ka Xiaozi kept the diamond with a smile and turned to look at Shi Xiaobai. She said gently, “Thank you.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised and felt inexplicably happy. Not only did the girl have beauty, she also had an empathetic heart.

Shi Xiaobai softly said, “You’re welcome.”

The rookies gradually began to react.

“I want a piece of Shi Xiaobai’s good-intentions.”

“Me too...”

“Shall we each take one?”

“One is enough.”

“...”

The rookies began muttering to themselves as they walked forward.

Shi Xiaobai said, “There’s no need to push. Form a line, and don’t only take one. Take as many as you wish.”

The rookies naturally obeyed Shi Xiaobai’s words. Immediately, they formed very orderly lines, and as there were just too many diamond fragments, no one was afraid that there wouldn’t be enough for the people in the back.

The rookies began picking diamonds from the ground. Most people only took one, but there were some who were relatively greedy. They thickened their skin and took a few, but no one took more than five. Even though Shi Xiaobai was chatting with Ka Xiaozi and did not even turn his head over, the rookies still refrained from being overly greedy.

With Ka Xiaozi defining the diamonds as Shi Xiaobai’s good-intentions, it would be a waste of Shi Xiaobai’s thoughts if they did not take it. If they were too greedy, it would be a defilement of Shi Xiaobai’s well-intentions. The rookies who could reach the sixth level were basically the cream of the crop of the organizations’

rookies. They had their own code of ethics.

One person did not line up and instead, hesitated for a long while before he walked towards Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai turned around and was slightly surprised. The person who walked over was the one who derided him of not being able to move the diamond monster no matter how much strength he used. He was the youth that had even declared to run naked.

The youth walked in front of Shi Xiaobai and gave a deep bow. He said loudly, “Sorry!”

It turned out he was here to apologize.

Shi Xiaobai smiled and said, “There’s no need to apologize. This King did not put your words to heart. It’s commendable for you to take the initiative to apologize. Just take note in the future.”

The youth looked up to give Shi Xiaobai a glance as he said sincerely, “Thank you for your magnanimity! I was actually blinded by jealousy so I spoke without thinking. However, after witnessing that one punch, I’m convinced from the bottom of my heart. Brother Shi Xiaobai, only a heroic figure like you is worthy of a beauty like Sister-in-law!”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly alarmed.

What the heck did he mean by Sister-in-law?



Shi Xiaobai immediately came to a realization as he turned to glance at Ka Xiaozi, who was standing to his right. He noticed that she was beaming while looking at him, her eyes filled with joy and shyness.

Before Shi Xiaobai explained, the youth said once again, “Brother Shi Xiaobai, I definitely am too ashamed to want the diamond. And I feel that just a verbal apology is not enough! As a real man, I have to live up to my promises. I’ll run around naked in the forest!”

Shi Xiaobai jumped in fright as he hurriedly said, “Don’t!”

The youth firmly shook his head, “No, I have to run naked! Don’t worry, I’ll stay far away so that no one will see me!”

After the youth said this, he resolutely turned around and charged towards the forest.

Shi Xiaobai was rendered speechless. This youth was quite a character, but revealing his dick was something that hurt both others and himself!

Let’s hope no one is unlucky enough to contaminate their eyes. Amitabha.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and noticed Ka Xiaozi beside him staring at him with a burning gaze. Immediately, he felt a headache as he said, “This King already has...”

“I know!”

Ka Xiaozi cut off Shi Xiaobai’s words and said softly, “I know you have a girlfriend, and I wish that you are single-minded towards your girlfriend, never to go astray. Just treat me...treat me as a transient guest in your life. Maybe we will never have a chance to meet again after this trial. I have no other wishes. As long as I can stay by your side, experiencing an...interesting escapade, it will be enough to allow me to have memories to accompany in my loneliness.”

Shi Xiaobai could clearly see the desire in the girl’s eyes and the deep affections she had in her words, but he could not understand why she had so much affection for him despite having just met.

However, Shi Xiaobai was somewhat moved. He could not refuse a small request of her staying by his side to experience an exciting escapade.

At this moment, Ka Xiaozi gave a sweet smile and said, “Later on, during the slaying of the dragon, can you stay by my side? You know that I’m very weak.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded and declared seriously, “This King will definitely stay by your side and protect you!”

The ends of Ka Xiaozi’s lips curled upwards slightly as she turned her head to the side and whispered, “We have a deal.”

“Yea.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head heavily.

At this moment, the rookies that had lined up were finally done picking up the diamonds. Shi Xiaobai felt somewhat helpless when he turned to take a look. The diamonds that filled the ground had only reduced slightly. There were still countless diamonds that filled the ground.

Shi Xiaobai said in a speechless manner, “Why aren’t all of you getting more?”

The rookies hurriedly shook their heads as they said, “It’s enough, we can’t take any more.”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent.

How could he keep that many diamonds in his pockets?

Should he just leave them there?

Just as Shi Xiaobai was feeling vexed as to what to do with the diamonds, he felt something by his waist shake a few times.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback as he stretched his hand into his pocket. Immediately, he touched the item that was moving.

When he took it out, it was a golden ball.

Master Conquest ball?

Shi Xiaobai was surprised and immediately remembered the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign that was reduced to a mini white dog after it entered the Master Conquest Ball.

For the ball to suddenly shake, could it be that the tiny white dog wanted to come out?

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai pressed the open button on the golden ball as a golden beam shot out. To everyone's amazement, a tiny white dog that stood up like a human appeared in mid-air.

The tiny white dog had snow-white skin with its paws retracted to its chest. Its big, watery eyes made it look extremely cute and very clever.

“Wow, so cute!”

“What is this...it's quite cute.”

The crowd exclaimed in praises.

However, the moment the tiny white dog appeared out of the

Master Conquest ball, it flew towards the diamonds with a swish. Its speed astounded everyone.

After the tiny white dog landed on the pile of diamonds, it began picking up diamonds. Its eyes were squinted while it produced cries of happiness.

However, the tiny white dog was just too tiny. It would pick up a diamond with one paw and hold the diamonds to its chest with the other. Soon, it could not hold any more. Every diamond picked caused another diamond to immediately drop.

The tiny white dog spent a long time picking, but it did not pick more than ten. It finally realized that it was impossible for it to pick up all the diamonds. Immediately, it turned around to look at Shi Xiaobai with watery, pleading eyes. It let out a whining call.

It didn't sound like a dog's bark, but more like a sultry cat's mew.

Quite a number of girls had their hearts melting.

However, Shi Xiaobai felt a black cloud over his head. Although the tiny white dog had apparently lost its memory after being conquered by the Master Conquest Ball, making it resemble a child, its greedy nature did not change at all.

Shi Xiaobai sighed. The whining calls of the tiny white dog and its teary eyes were just too cute. It made him unable to sit idly.

Shi Xiaobai considered for a moment and walked towards the pile of diamonds. Opening the golden ball in his hand, he scanned the diamonds, and immediately, a golden beam of light bloomed. Like a vacuum, the golden ball instantly swept up all the diamonds on the ground together with the tiny white dog.

Since the Master Conquest Ball had space within it, it was likely able to store the pile of diamonds.

Indeed, the golden ball did not move anymore. The tiny white dog was probably drunk on enjoying itself in the diamond pile.

Shi Xiaobai turned to see everyone looking at him with strange looks. Clearly, they felt somewhat speechless about the endless stream of weird things on his body.

Shi Xiaobai coughed lightly and said, “Let’s go. Let’s go slay the dragon.”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai took the lead to walk into the mountain valley. Ka Xiaozi followed closely beside him. With the duo standing side-by-side, their backs looked like an immortal couple.

The crowd immediately followed behind him with smiles.

Three minutes later, they had traveled through the leveled hill and finally came to the dragon’s location indicated on the map.

The mountain valley was large, incredibly large. The mountains that surrounded the valley were far away towards the horizons.

However, there was nothing in the valley, only barren soil and desolate rocks.

There were no trees, grass or any life.

Of course, there was no so-called dragon.

“Where’s the dragon?”

“The map indicates it to be here. We shouldn’t have gotten lost, right?”

“That’s not right. The first four dragons were waiting for us at the spot the map indicated. Why is this dragon playing hide and seek?”

“Hide and seek? Can you even see somewhere for the dragon to hide in this valley? Could we be scammed by the system? Think about that diamond monster. If not for Shi Xiaobai, we would have been stuck here. Now, even the dragon has disappeared. It’s clearly planned so that we won’t be able to clear the level!”

The rookies were tremendously confused as they broke out into discussion.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings as he suddenly felt a sense of ominous foreboding.

There was a problem with this place.

Shi Xiaobai thought in his mind.

At this moment, time suddenly came to a halt!

“Make your choice, youth!”

The familiar fiery voice resounded in his head once again as the world came to an instantaneous standstill.

A few lines of black text slowly materialized in front of Shi Xiaobai.

[ Choice 1: Save all rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley (B-level reward) ]

[ Choice 2: Prevent Ka Xiaozi from raging (B-level reward) ]

[ Choice 3: Push down the raging Ka Xiaozi (A-level reward) ]

“Make your choice, youth!”



...

# Chapter 315: Sudden Turn Of Events

---

[ Choice 1: Save all rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley (B-level reward) ]

[ Choice 2: Prevent Ka Xiaozi from raging (B-level reward) ]

[ Choice 3: Push down the raging Ka Xiaozi (A-level reward) ]

Seeing the three choices in front of him, Shi Xiaobai was somewhat dumbfounded.

Prevent Ka Xiaozi from raging?

Push down the raging Ka Xiaozi?

What the heck was this!?

Did the choices mean that Ka Xiaozi was about to rage?

Shi Xiaobai could not know beforehand why Ka Xiaozi would rage, nor could he imagine what would happen after Ka Xiaozi raged. After suffering a headache for a moment, he decided to temporarily put aside those two choices.

This time, the Absolute Choice did not have any gentle reminders

and there were three choices. Shi Xiaobai had encountered such a type of Absolute Choice only twice—the first being saving Little Fatso, and the second was saving Chen Lingcun.

This type of Absolute Choice was the kind Shi Xiaobai did not wish to encounter the most.

Furthermore, this Absolute Choice was different from the previous two. All three choices in the Absolute Choice this time had very high rewards. Even the lowest was a B-level reward.

According to past experience, trying to complete something with a B-level reward was already rather difficult. Heading to the Underworld to save Chen Lingcun was only a B-level reward after all.

As Shi Xiaobai could only temporarily put the second and third choices aside, he could only choose the first one—[ Choice 1: Save all rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley (B-level reward) ].

Shi Xiaobai was in no hurry to make the choice as he began to seriously contemplate.

Dragon Mountain Valley was clearly the valley they were currently in. The meaning of the choice's words was very simple. Save the rookies that numbered more than forty.

But in a trial, saving could have two ways of interpretation. First, it was to save the lives of all the rookies, while the second was to

prevent the rookies from being eliminated.

The former was much easier than the latter. This was because elimination was too simple. A random appearance of a dragon might cause a few people to shout the exit command, and if it was to save the lives of the rookies, the exit command could be used as a life-saver for the rookies. There was no need for Shi Xiaobai to save them.

However, Shi Xiaobai actually did not hope that the ‘save’ meant ‘saving lives’. This was because this was a B-level difficulty choice. It was impossible for the saving to be simple. If it was ‘saving lives’, that meant that matters that would cause the deaths of the rookies would happen next.

But, what sort of crisis or life-threatening danger would happen in this large and empty valley? What would cause the rookies to not be able to even say the exit command?

Shi Xiaobai considered for a very long time until the Absolute Choice began counting down. Only then, did he choose choice 1.

Stopped time began turning once again.

...

...

A dead silence filled the desolate valley. The gray-brown earth

looked rather cold and the boulders that littered the ground had been weathered by the elements. It added to the vast and empty valley an additional flavor of the vicissitudes of time.

This spot was clearly where the dragon was, but not only was there no dragon, there was not even a bug to be seen. It was as though it was a holy land of dead creatures, a forbidden ground to the living.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings once again with utmost seriousness. Other than the undulating mountain range across the horizons, all he saw was the brown soil and rugged boulders.

Seeing this lifeless scene, Shi Xiaobai suddenly felt an eerie and terrifying aura. A sense of ominous foreboding rose in him.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head. A pair of amber eyes were staring at him as they glowed slightly.

They were Ka Xiaozi's eyes.

Shi Xiaobai immediately recalled the two choices that he could not make heads or tails of.

Preventing Ka Xiaozi from raging was the same difficulty as saving everyone. How hard was it to prevent this?

Raging most likely referred to losing reason due to infuriation.

Was Ka Xiaozi actually a person who could not control her raging temper?

Shi Xiaobai softly said to Ka Xiaozi, “In a while, regardless of what happens, you have to remind yourself to maintain your calm. Also, do not go further than three meters from This King.”

Although he had not chosen choice 2, Shi Xiaobai wanted to take preventive measures. He wanted to see if he could prevent the instance of her ‘raging’, something which he had no idea how it would happen.

Ka Xiaozi quizzically blinked her eyes before nodding and saying, “Alright.”

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment, and finally could not help but ask, “If...This King is saying if. If you were to encounter something that is extremely infuriating, so maddening that you would lose all reason. What might you possibly do?”

Shi Xiaobai’s intuition told him that Ka Xiaozi’s raging would be a terrifying matter.

Ka Xiaozi frowned slightly. She was clearly curious why Shi Xiaobai was suggesting such a hypothetical situation, but she did not ask. Instead, she fell into deep thought for a moment before gently saying, “I don’t know. That’s because even though I have been infuriated, I have never lost my reason.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was filled with even more questions.

If Ka Xiaozi really never lost her reason, what would happen next that would cause her to rage?

What could have happened that would reach a B-level reward when prevented?

Shi Xiaobai was left clueless. He could only think of a way to not let Ka Xiaozi wander too far from him and see how he could do his best at protecting Ka Xiaozi, whether he could inadvertently prevent the baffling raging.

There was something urgent that troubled Shi Xiaobai as well—he needed to save all the rookies present, even though he did not know what would happen at all.

At this moment, the rookies had began searching the valley, but they did not find even a grass, worm or fly.

“Why do I find this place so gloomy. The weather is clearly very hot, but my back is cold.”

“Me too. I keep feeling like something is watching us. I’m almost having goosebumps.”

“This valley doesn’t have a dragon at all. What shall we do? Should we wait here till the dragon returns or go to the other end of the valley to take a look?”

“This place is slightly odd. Shall we quickly get out of here?”

“...”

The rookies sounded out. There was nothing living in the desolate valley, the dead silence was dreadful.

Shi Xiaobai thought for a moment before saying to the crowd, “Since the dragon is not in the valley, why don’t we leave this place. This King also finds this place somewhat odd. Something bad might happen if we stay here any longer.”

Although this valley only had gray soil and rugged boulders, it gave Shi Xiaobai a feeling that danger lurked everywhere. He felt that it was best if he led the crowd in departing.

Due to the stunning punch from before, Shi Xiaobai enjoyed an extremely high status among the rookies that numbered more than forty. Therefore, they would choose to listen to anything Shi Xiaobai said as long as it wasn’t problematic.

Furthermore, it was not only one rookie who found the atmosphere in the valley eerie.

The crowd immediately echoed him and began planning to leave



the valley.

Shi Xiaobai warned them, “Everyone, do not split apart. Pay attention to protecting each other.”

Shi Xiaobai was constantly wary of danger happening at any moment. Therefore, he said those words with a very serious expression.

However, the rookies did not notice this and did not put Shi Xiaobai’s words to heart.

The silent valley felt gloomy, but there was not a single bug.

What danger could there be?

The rookies nodded their heads in response. They did not gather together with nervous expressions, but instead, they walked towards the valley’s exit in scattered groups.

Shi Xiaobai did not say anything more as well. It was not convincing to stress the dangers of an empty valley.

Shi Xiaobai could only focus on the exit. He stood in the rear, while Ka Xiaozi quietly stood beside him.

“What’s the matter? You’ve been looking odd from just a moment ago till now. Are you not feeling well?”

Ka Xiaozi asked out of concern.

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and softly said, “Nothing important. It’s just that This King has an ominous foreboding.”

At this moment, the rookies walking right in front had walked out of the exit. Nothing dangerous had happened, and with a few rookies safely departing, the rookies behind followed closely behind.

Shi Xiaobai heaved a sigh of relief. It appeared as though the danger did not lie in this strange valley.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not relax his vigilance. He was still constantly monitoring everything around him. Logically speaking, this vast mountain valley had nothing obstructing it, and that should result in strong winds, but having walked in here for more than a few minutes, there was not even the tiniest of breezes.

All he could hear was the shuffling of feet and the occasional conversations, nothing else.

The rookies streamed out of the valley’s exit, with more than ten rookies having left the valley.

“Ah!”

Suddenly, a scream rang in the empty valley!

Shi Xiaobai's heart leaped as he widened his eyes.

He saw in the crowd, a laughing rookie walking while his entire head suddenly disappeared, leaving behind half his neck. Hot blood spewed out of the broken neck, splattering on the rookies around him. The girl closest to him had her face completely splattered with blood as she issued a scream of fear.

In just an instant, this rookie, who was right in the middle of the crowd, had his head severed in front of Shi Xiaobai's eyes. Furthermore, at the instant his head was severed, his head did not fly into the air before dropping to the ground. Instead, it had instantly disappeared into thin air!

What the hell was going on?

What just happened!?

The valley was still the valley that had nothing. Other than them, there was no other creature. Yet, a rookie had suddenly his head cleaved off in front of everyone else.

They did not even know what had happened!

“Make your choice, youth!”

Shi Xiaobai fell into a trance for a moment before the scene in front of him changed.

Shi Xiaobai was not given any time to probe the situation. The moment the rookie's head was cleaved off, the rookie had only a few seconds of thought before dying. It also meant the failure of the choice.

Time wound back to the moment the Absolute Choice appeared. Everyone was still standing in the middle of the valley.

Time stood still, and in front of Shi Xiaobai were the three rows of black text that had already materialized.

There were still the three choices, as well as the fiery voice that incessantly resounded in his mind.

“Make your choice, youth!”

# Chapter 316: Blood-Red Fireworks

---

The scene of that rookie being beheaded came too sudden. The moment his head separated from his neck, it had disappeared as well, as though it had been swallowed by the air.

Although Shi Xiaobai was paying attention to the movement of the crowd, the rookie was in the middle of the group, and the speed at which he was beheaded was too fast. He did not manage to catch the entire process. His timely glance only allowed him to see the rookie's neck tear apart from the middle, while blood spewed out like a fountain.

The scene was bloody and terrifying, but it was even weirder.

However, Shi Xiaobai had instantly forced himself to calm down. His strong state of mind allowed him to remain calm as he observed the blood spewing wound while facing the bloody scene.

Life was fragile, it was as though a gentle wind could break it.

However, life was also tough. Even when beheaded, one's mind was able to remain active for a second or two.

The rookie struggled instinctively before his death, buying a second or two for Shi Xiaobai.

This one or two seconds were very precious and Shi Xiaobai did not waste any of it. He stared intently at the half of the bloody

neck. Before the corpse collapsed to the ground, he discovered a very critical piece of information.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes were very good, so when he focused from afar, he discovered that the broken neck seemed like a neat, clean cut, but through the spewing blood, he could see a tiny row of holes.

The rookie's head was not cut, pulled or twisted off, but...bitten off!

A cold beam flashed in Shi Xiaobai's eyes as the fiery voice constantly repeated in his head.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Shi Xiaobai chose choice one without any hesitation—save all rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley.

...

...

Shi Xiaobai looked up and surveyed the air above the mountain valley. Shi Xiaobai had judged from the rookie's wound that his head had been bitten off. That meant the disappearing head must have been swallowed into the belly of an invisible monster.

However, the sky was clear. There was not the slightest oddity.

There was not even a gentle breeze blowing through the valley.

Shi Xiaobai found his senses rather keen, with his sixth sense particularly empowering. However, he could not sense any indications of other lives.

If there were truly a monster which had bitten off the rookies head and swallowed it, that meant the monster was not only invisible, its aura, breathing and killing intent could be hidden. Its sounds could even be extinguished. If not, when the rookies head was being bitten off, there should have been a sound, but there was none.

What sort of monster could conceal itself in such an impossible manner?

Could it be that the rookie's head was not bitten off?

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a moment. He said to the rookies that were discussing how gloomy the valley was, "Since the dragon is not in the valley, why don't we leave this place. This King also finds this place somewhat odd. Something bad might happen if we stay here any longer."

Shi Xiaobai repeated what he had said previously ad verbatim. He had even deliberately mimicked his tone.

The rookies agreed and began planning to leave the valley.

Shi Xiaobai warned them, “Everyone, do not split apart. Pay attention to protecting each other.”

Just like before, the rookies did not put his words to heart as they walked towards the valley exit in scattered groups.

Ka Xiaozi’s concerned voice was heard once again, and Shi Xiaobai gave her the same answer.

There was no difference from what had happened, as though it was a repeat of everything.

And the rookie who had suffered decapitation was about to walk to the spot of his death. Shi Xiaobai had remembered the location in those valuable one or two seconds.

As the rookie was walking, he was talking and laughing with the girl beside him. He looked rather relaxed.

Shi Xiaobai did his best to control his emotions. He tried not to turn his gaze above the rookie’s head as he hid the anger and killing intent in his heart, as though he was a killer lurking in the shadows, waiting for a prey to appear.

“Three!

“Two!”



A black beam suddenly bloomed in Shi Xiaobai's right hand as a black sword appeared.

“One!”

Shi Xiaobai thundered angrily as he slashed at the rookie's head. Anger that exuded from the golden sword beam tore through the sky!

If an invisible monster had truly eaten the rookie's head, that meant that the moment the rookie's head was severed, the monster's head would appear above the rookie!

Shi Xiaobai's only chance was to grasp that fleeting moment!

And this strike was timed perfectly!

“Roar!”

A roar winced with pain resounded in the sky above the valley. When the golden sword beam flew to the spot above the rookie's head, it had indeed struck something invisible. The sword beam shattered and at the same time, bright red blood burst out of the sky like a lotus' bloom.

The rookie and the girl beside him were drenched in the blood as they immediately gave panicked screams.

The rookies turned their heads.

Shi Xiaobai roared, “Quickly conjure your psionic barrier and defend. There are invisible monsters in the valley. Protect yourselves well!”

The crowd jumped in fright, but their reactions were not slow. They hurriedly conjured their psionic barriers.

They looked up into the sky and saw nothing in mid-air, but there was blood constantly dropping.

The monster only issued a cry after it was injured but it no longer made a sound after that. However, there was no way to hide the wound caused by the sword strike. Blood was constantly dripping.

The location where the blood dripped changed positions with every drip. Its trajectory was haphazard in the air, as though the invisible monster was moving in mid-air while rolling about in air due to the pain.

The crowd could even imagine the picture of the monster flying around disorderly. However, other than the constantly dripping blood, they could not see a thing.

What was most terrifying that although the monster was moving so violently, it did not make a sound. Despite moving so fast, it did not stir up even the slightest breeze.

If not for the wound or the dripping blood, they would not be able to see, hear or even sense the existence of the monster.

“Heavens, what monster is this?”

“What should we do? It doesn’t seem like invisibility is the only attribute the monster has.”

“How terrifying. No wonder I kept feeling an eeriness in this valley.”

“Just now, the monster had flown above my head. If not for Shi Xiaobai’s strike, what would have happened? Would that monster... have messed up my hair style?”

“What do we do now? Kill it?”

“Quickly kill it. Once the blood in its wound clots up, we would not be able to see it any further!”

The rookies sounded out and felt somewhat nervous. There were already people suggesting to kill the monster.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had struck once again.

The rookies did not know what terrifying event would have happened if not for Shi Xiaobai’s timely strike; therefore, they only panicked slightly but were not overly apprehensive. But for Shi

Xiaobai, he could not forget the scene of that rookie having his head swallowed.

A bloody death had previously appeared in front of his eyes as a cruel form of reality.

Shi Xiaobai had to force himself to repress his grief and anger. In that previous second, he had calmly observed the wound on the rookie's neck. He also had to memorize the location of his death.

The more negative emotions he had to repress, the deeper they went, and the anger that brewed turned more intense!

Shi Xiaobai's killing intent was roused!

“Kill it!”

Shi Xiaobai bellowed and charged at the invisible monster moving in mid-air. Although he still could not see the monster, the dripping blood from the wound exposed the monster's trajectory.

Shi Xiaobai slashed out!

Kun Peng's Sword of Wind, Ten Thousand Li Hurricane!

A hurricane sword beam slashed into mid-air. There was a need for a certain level of judgment as when the blood dripped, the monster would have moved away. There was no way to guess

where it would go in the next second. There were six directions it could go!

“Roar!”

The sword hurricane struck something mid-air when a shrill roar was heard. Several blots of blood bloomed like flowers!

“It hit!” the rookies exclaimed.

It was not as simple as being hit. The monster had clearly been severely wounded by the strike. Although the monster was invisible, its defensive strength was extremely poor.

However, after that one strike, blood was still dripping, and it became even more frequent. The trajectory of the moving monster also became strange and unpredictable.

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. He had a nagging feeling that the shrill cry was somewhat odd.

At this moment, Feng Yuanlin roared, “Everyone attack together and kill this monster!”

After Feng Yuanlin said this, he was the first to throw his shield into the air!

The other rookies immediately reacted.

Since Shi Xiaobai had shouted ‘kill it’, what were they waiting for?

Mu Yuesheng raised her hands and shot out several bolts of lightning into the sky.

Liu Yu waved upwards as numerous charms flew into the sky!

An Mo began playing his flute, producing sonic waves into the sky.

Zhou Chuchu lashed out with her whip towards the sky!

Kevin picked up a rock from the ground and, using the Price of Might, hurled it towards the sky.

Mozzie constructed a psionic warhammer. With the burning inferno of Grilling Hammer, she shot it towards the sky!

Over forty of the other rookies began attacking as well, sending their attacks into the sky!

However, the monster moved too fast, and its trajectory was too messy. There was no way to judge where the monster was from the dripping blood. At this moment, the crowd’s attacks were not focused on one point, but spread out, nearly blanketing the entire sky!

Therefore, even if they failed to accurately capture the monster's motion, there was no room for the monster to escape under such wide scale attack!

Explosions boomed one after another!

The rookies pricked up their ears, waiting for the moment the scream would expose it amid the explosions.

“Roar!”

Very soon, the painful roar they were waiting for was heard, but it was not only one!

“Roar! Roar! Roar! Roar!”

Roars began to fill the sky in every position like rolling thunder. At the same time, bursts of blood began blooming in the sky, as though there were blood-red fireworks filling the sky. Blood began to rain down like a torrential flood.

Everyone was immediately left astounded.

Shi Xiaobai similarly had a drastic change of expression. He finally understood why the second scream sounded somewhat odd. It was because the cry had subtle differences from the first cry.

His two strikes had struck two different monsters.

High above the valley, there was not only one or two invisible monsters. From the dense cries and blood, the number of invisible monsters probably numbered in the hundreds, into the thousands!

At this moment of time, forlorn screams that caused one's expression to change were suddenly heard.

Everyone turned their heads and they saw a rookie in the periphery with his psionic barrier shattered. His head and four limbs were probably bitten by five invisible monsters because the next moment, he was ripped apart!

A scene more bloody than being ripped apart instantly appeared in front of everyone.

At the same time, the rookies in the periphery suffered the attacks by the invisible monsters. Their psionic barriers were instantly shattered from an unknown direction, and immediately their bodies were separated for food!

In just a second or two, the valley became hell on earth!

“Damn it!”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes turned red at that moment. He was extremely infuriated.



“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice figuratively splashed a basin of cold water on his mind that was about to lose all reason.

Time was wound back to the moment the Absolute Choice appeared.

The three lines of black text and the quiet world seemed to illustrate the same thing.

The second attempt at saving the rookies had failed.

...

# Chapter 317: Massacre Induced By A Smelly Fart

---

There were invisible bodies circling over Dragon Mountain Valley, invisible monsters which were impossible to detect through their auras or sounds. There was not only one or two of these monsters, but hundreds or even thousands. The seemingly clear sky was actually filled with dense monsters swimming through the air. One could not see them, hear them, or even sense their existence.

When you let your guard down, thinking you were safe, they could very suddenly bite off your head, tearing you limb from limb, causing your tragic death in an unsuspecting manner.

Such an invisible terror was chilling to the heart if one thought about it slightly.

However, the rookies in front of Shi Xiaobai did not know they were in the midst of such horrors. The rookies who had their heads bitten off or even torn apart did not know the tragic outcomes they had experienced in another timeline.

And in this timeline, without everything reset by the Absolute Choice, they could still talk and laugh, deriding how Dragon Mountain Valley did not have dragons, or discuss how gloomy and eerie the valley was, or chat about the impressive punch of Shi Xiaobai from before.

The tragedy had yet to befall, but it was imminent.

And the only person who knew of all this was Shi Xiaobai alone. He had to bear the heavy burden of saving them.

But how was he to save them?

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat at a loss this time. He could brainlessly use his sword techniques to attack the sky in an enveloping fashion. Even if they were invisible monsters, he was still able to kill them, but he would not be able to perfectly protect every rookie. As there were too many monsters, they could attack any person in an unpredictable manner.

Shi Xiaobai's heart was feeling somewhat heavy, as though he was completely helpless.

However, he could not abandon pondering over the matter because of this.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai thought of a questionable problem.

Why did a monster suddenly attack the beheaded rookie only when the rookies were beginning to leave in the dozens, despite there being so many monsters above the valley?

The second time, it was only when the rookies began attacking the sky did they start attacking the rookies after being injured.

Logically speaking, with so many invisible monsters present, it was impossible for the rookies to withstand them if they had taken the initiative to attack as a whole.

Yet, the monsters did not do so. From a certain point of view, their attacks were a result of provocation.

In that case, could these monsters be mild in nature and would not take the initiative to attack the rookies?

However, from the actions of them biting off the rookies' heads, they were likely brutal carnivores?

“What is going on?”

Shi Xiaobai was feeling perplexed, but his eyes gradually lit up. If he could not crack the puzzle, he might be able to do so in an opportunistic manner.

“Why did these carnivores that had the absolute advantage not take the initiative to attack in a group? Was it because they were gentle by nature despite being carnivorous? Or were they waiting for an opportunity? Or did they lack cohesion?”

Shi Xiaobai muttered to himself. Due to his heavy heart, he had accidentally verbalized the questions in his mind. However, it was extremely soft, nearly silent.

However, there was a person constantly standing beside Shi

Xiaobai. She had heard him utter those words to himself.

“Or...they are dreading something, resulting in them lacking the courage to act.”

Ka Xiaozi's gentle voice reached Shi Xiaobai's ears.

This sentence was like the sudden sparkling of a star in the darkness.

Shi Xiaobai ruminated over the words as his eyes slowly lit up.

“Dread.”

Shi Xiaobai softly said the word as a smile slowly suffused across his lips.

The word ‘dread’ immediately solved the biggest question on Shi Xiaobai's mind.

Why were hundreds of invisible monsters, which clearly had the absolute advantage, not attacking until they were injured, an attack that was a result of rage.

Why did the group of monsters pick the rookies in the periphery first when they counterattacked? Whereas Ka Xiaozi and he were not attacked by any monster despite them being separated from the crowd as stragglers.

The two questions could only be answered by the word ‘dread’!

Were the monsters dreading him, or dreading...

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to look at the girl beside him. She had long pink hair that were tied into two ponytails. She looked young and beautiful. Her eyes were large and bright, filled with vibrance. Her delicate facial features and petite body resembled that of a truly beautiful pixie.

The monsters did not dare to attack even when they were injured and infuriated. They had not attacked the separated duo, either because they were dreading him or dreading Ka Xiaozi.

A more reasonable explanation would be that the power of his one punch had frightened the monsters.

However, Shi Xiaobai had a baffling feeling. He felt that the monsters were dreading the girl beside him.

Shi Xiaobai gave Ka Xiaozi a meaningful glance before whispering, “Thank you.”

Ka Xiaozi blinked and said with a laugh, “I don’t remember doing anything that is worthy of being thanked for.”

Shi Xiaobai did not explain, but he knew how important were

those words Ka Xiaozi had said.

“Then, next there is only one question remaining.”

Shi Xiaobai continued lowering his head in thought.

If the monsters were dreading him or Ka Xiaozi, why would a monster suddenly attack that rookie out of the blue?

“It seems like that is the only resort.”

...

What was ‘that’?

Five words—reconstruction of the crime scene!

Shi Xiaobai repeated his actions from the past two timelines. The plot repeated just as the previous two timelines as the rookies began retreating out of the valley, with more than ten people quickly leaving.

The rookie who was about to be beheaded was still chatting with the girl beside him. In about three seconds, the tragedy was about to happen.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly rushed forward at a very fast speed. He

tried his best to suppress the sounds he produced as he held his breath.

He had arrived less than three meters behind the rookie in an instant.

He wanted to see what had happened at that very instant up close. He wanted to know what the rookie did or said that resulted in the monster's sudden attack on him.

Then, Shi Xiaobai heard a loud sound.

“Pu!”

That was the sound of a fart that could be clearly heard several meters away!

Following that, a foul stench assaulted his olfactory senses!

Shi Xiaobai was caught off guard as he was immediately left dumbfounded.

At the moment he was dumbfounded, the rookie's head had once again been bitten off by the monster. Blood spewed as the surrounding rookies began screaming. At the same time, many rookies were covering their noses and mouths.

During his first observation, Shi Xiaobai had the impression that



these people were covering their noses and mouths because they could not stand the smell of blood.

It turned out it was because they could not stand the stench of the fart!

Shi Xiaobai turned around in silence. He was somewhat disappointed that he had failed to save the rookie because of the fart that shocked him.

However, he was feeling somewhat helpless.

He had originally believed that the rookie had done something earth-shattering or said something astounding or blasphemous, which left the dreaded monster no choice but to attack him.

He never expected that it was because of the rookie farting. The monster probably thought that it had been attacked by toxic gases and could not endure any further.

It was a massacre induced by a smelly fart.

What else could Shi Xiaobai say?

...

“Make your choice, youth!”

When Shi Xiaobai heard the familiar voice, saw the familiar scene and familiar black text, he felt somewhat depressed.

This was the fourth time he was making this choice.

It was also the first time he encountered failure with the Absolute Choice for three consecutive times. In the past, he could complete the Absolute Choice within three tries.

And this time, it was an exception. What was most fucked up was that the reason why he failed three times was because of a smelly fart!

A smelly fart...

Can you imagine how gloomy Shi Xiaobai was feeling at that moment in time?

However, despite feeling gloomy, Shi Xiaobai was also greatly relieved. If his guess was right, everyone could safely leave the valley as long as nothing out of bounds was done.

Shi Xiaobai picked the choice [ Save all rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley ] for a fourth time.

Halted time flowed once again.

Shi Xiaobai immediately shouted to everyone, “Everyone, leave

the valley as fast as possible! There's no time. This King will explain it to all of you once we are out of the valley!"

Shi Xiaobai faked a worried look. Although the crowd found it dubious when they heard this, they immediately believed that Shi Xiaobai had discovered a danger that could not be explained in time. They chose to rush to the valley's exit due to Shi Xiaobai's esteemed reputation.

There was no time to explain. Run!

Thankfully, the exit to the valley was large enough, and it did not seem overly crowded when the crowd rushed out.

Shi Xiaobai loudly said, "Note, do not fart!"

The evacuating crowd was immediately dumbfounded.

However, Shi Xiaobai's voice immediately resounded once again.

"Do not fart!"

"Do not fart!"

He repeated the important things thrice!

The rookies were filled with doubts, but seeing Shi Xiaobai

appearing so serious, they could only put the extremely absurd demand at heart.

With so many people around, farting was something that required courage to begin with.

Shi Xiaobai urged the crowd to speed up. The rookies did not dare to delay as they quickly retreated out the valley. Very soon, more than half had been evacuated.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to Ka Xiaozi and said, “Let’s go as well.”

Ka Xiaozi nodded with a smile. Clearly, she could not help but laugh due to Shi Xiaobai’s “Do not fart”.

The two stayed behind the group and walked forward at an appropriate speed.

Shi Xiaobai turned slightly cautious. A guess was after all a guess. In practice, there might be unexpected accidents, so Shi Xiaobai did not dare to relax.

Only after all the rookies had left the valley safely did Shi Xiaobai feel slightly relieved when he and Ka Xiaozi arrived at the exit of the valley.

He turned his head and glanced at the empty valley, hesitant if he should leave.

Even though time had reset, the bloody scenes were still fresh on his mind. Shi Xiaobai's anger could not be appeased if he did not kill the monsters. And now, with all the rookies safely evacuated, he could kill with impunity.

“Forget it, This King will spare you for the time being. Once the choice is over, This King will come back for revenge.”

With this thought in mind, he walked out of the valley together with Ka Xiaozi.

Outside the valley, the rookies were waiting for Shi Xiaobai to come out. At this moment, they were pinching their noses, grumbling how smelly it was.

The moment Shi Xiaobai appeared, the rookie that was previously beheaded gave an embarrassed smile and said, “Sorry, I couldn't resist it.”

Even though Shi Xiaobai had emphasized three times for him not to fart, the rookie had still farted. It appeared as though he had held his fart in for a very long time.

But thankfully, this was done outside the valley.

Shi Xiaobai found it somewhat amusing. He had nearly suffered because of a stinky fart.

Shi Xiaobai gradually relaxed. With everyone evacuated from the terrifying valley, they should be in a safe situation.

At this moment, the fiery voice resounded in his mind.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Shi Xiaobai jumped in fright as his mind went into a trance.

The scene before his eyes had suddenly returned to the scene when everyone was inside the valley. Time was halted, and the three choices had materialized in front of Shi Xiaobai just as before.

Shi Xiaobai was truly confounded this time.

Time wound back, indicating that he had failed once again.

But this time, Shi Xiaobai did not know why he had failed. The rookies had clearly been evacuated from the valley, so why was there still someone dying?

Furthermore, the person had died without him even knowing how.

Who died?

Why did that person die?

How did that person die?

Shi Xiaobai was completely clueless this time.

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice constantly resounded in his mind, as though it was telling Shi Xiaobai that everything was yet to come to an end. No, it was just the beginning of everything.

...

# Chapter 318: An Impossible Possibility

---

Shi Xiaobai was certain that all the rookies had already left Dragon Mountain Valley because he had specially checked the valley before he left. He had confirmed that everyone had left.

Furthermore, the valley was open and expansive, even if a rookie had been playful by playing hide and seek, it was impossible to hide.

But at this very moment in time, the Absolute Choice had failed. It meant that a rookie had died without Shi Xiaobai's knowledge.

How did this rookie die?

Why did the rookie die so silently?

Shi Xiaobai was completely clueless. This was more mysterious than the rookie being killed by invisible monsters.

Shi Xiaobai could only use for speculation the remaining time before he had to choose.

Maybe there was really someone left behind in Dragon Mountain Valley? For example, the person was swallowed whole by a monster, dying only a period of time later?

Or a rookie did not wait outside after leaving the valley and had



instead ran off somewhere before encountering an accident?

Maybe a rookie had suddenly died silently because of a disease or virus which nobody noticed?

Everything was possible, even if the possibility was minimal.

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his heart. Blindly guessing was not an option. All he could do was repeat it again.

...

He returned to the same point in time for a fifth time.

Shi Xiaobai did the same things as the first four times. He hurriedly got everyone to leave the valley, and again, he repeated the important matter of “Do not fart” three times.

This time, Shi Xiaobai specifically reminded everyone to wait outside the valley and not run far off.

The rookies were very obedient and walked towards the valley's exit.

Shi Xiaobai took this time to confirm the number of people in the valley. He quickly repeated the count thrice and finally confirmed that there were forty-eight people in the valley, including him and Ka Xiaozi.

The rookies left the valley in droves and this time, Shi Xiaobai was faster than before. When the last rookie left the valley, he and Ka Xiaozi followed closely behind and left the valley.

Following that was a loud sound of a fart.

Man, having come out earlier this time, he was just in time to catch the rookie farting.

Everyone covered their noses and exclaimed “smelly” before they distanced themselves repulsively from the rookie. This smelly fart had induced a massacre before, so its powers were obviously redoubtable.

Shi Xiaobai reacted extremely fast. At the instant he heard the fart, he had used ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’ to block his sense of smell. This was the greatest advantage of a time loop, but it sure was depressing thinking about it.

The moment Shi Xiaobai came out of the valley, he began a head count. He finished the count quickly thrice and confirmed that there were forty-eight people.

Everyone had left the valley.

Furthermore, everyone was waiting outside the valley. No one had ran afar.

“Sorry, I couldn’t resist it.”

The rookie’s embarrassed apology was heard. It was the same sentence, but this moment in time had happened earlier because of Shi Xiaobai’s suggestion to come out earlier.

Shi Xiaobai had no time to care about him. He carefully looked at every rookie and their expressions.

Without a doubt, all of their expressions were terrible. Whoever got hit by these ‘toxic gases’ probably would not be having a good mood.

However, all of them looked in the pink of health. The light in their eyes did not lessen at all. No one looked sick or poisoned. There was definitely no signs of someone dying.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai saw someone’s back. It was a girl standing at the peripheral. The girl had her back bent, with one hand on a tree. Her back was facing the crowd, as though she was suffering some form of pain.

“It’s her!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up. He rushed towards the girl at an exceedingly fast speed.

This girl could have been inflicted with some form of disease and would suddenly die silently.

Shi Xiaobai was feeling anxious as he held the girl's shoulder and shouted, "Bear with it!"

The girl was startled as she looked up to realize it was Shi Xiaobai. She immediately heaved a sigh of relief, but at the moment she relaxed, the girl's expression changed drastically. Covering her mouth with her hands, her pale expression turned even paler as her shoulders trembled.

"I can't...hold it in!"

The girl screamed and hurriedly flung Shi Xiaobai's arms away and ran to the back of the tree. She leaned down and began...

"Eugh!"

The girl began vomiting. Shi Xiaobai watched nervously but he did not see the blood he had imagined. It was only the usual vomit.

After vomiting a few times, the girl quickly took out a handkerchief and wiped the corners of her dirty mouth. When she turned to see everyone looking at her after hearing her, her face immediately blushed.

Shi Xiaobai asked with concern, "Are you alright? Are you sick?"

The girl shook her head and shyly said, "No, I'm only...it was so

smelly that I could not help but throw up.”

Shi Xiaobai was appalled. It was the fault of that smelly fart again?

However, Shi Xiaobai gave the girl a few serious glances and noticed that although her expression looked terrible, she was not weak. She simply wanted to throw up.

“It’s not her!”

Shi Xiaobai realized this point.

“Time is almost up!”

For some reason, Shi Xiaobai was very sensitive when it came to time. It was as though there was a clock in his heart that allowed him to accurately keep track of time. In another ten seconds or so, the moment of the Absolute Choice’s failure would happen.

Shi Xiaobai quickly turned his head to look at the rookies. At this moment, the rookies were looking curiously at him.

“Shi Xiaobai, you seem...a bit strange?”

“Lord Shi Xiaobai, did something happen?”

“Why did you urge us to leave the valley so quickly? Did you discover something dangerous?”

“I’m more eager to know why we can’t fart. Please explain...”

“...”

The rookies clearly had a multitude of questions on their minds which they inundated him with the moment the first question was asked. The scene immediately turned noisy.

Shi Xiaobai had no time to explain. He could only treat it with silence as he swept his gaze across every rookie.

Shi Xiaobai confirmed three times once again that there were forty-eight rookies here including him.

Due to the flurry of discussion, it was conducive for Shi Xiaobai’s observations. All of them appeared energetic. Although a number of quiet rookies did not speak, they appeared very healthy.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head to look at the girl beside him. After vomiting, the girl felt much better. Her face was becoming ruddy again, but her cheeks had turned as red as an apple because of the embarrassment, but she did not have any signs of dying the next moment.

Shi Xiaobai scanned everyone.

There was no one among the forty-eight people that had any signs of dying. They were filled with vitality, more vibrant than a forest.

“Three.”

There were three seconds left before the moment the Absolute Choice failed. Shi Xiaobai turned slightly nervous as he carefully studied the expressions of everyone, afraid that he would miss the slightest of details.

“Two.”

A final confirmation, there was only forty-eight people including him at the present location. There was no one missing!

“One.”

Time was up.

Shi Xiaobai's heart raced slightly.

Could it be that by leaving earlier, he had inadvertently changed the outcome from before. A rookie that would somehow die had suddenly survived?

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice resounded in his brain

as though it was telling Shi Xiaobai—

No, there was no accident.

...

...

“Make your choice, youth!”

This was the sixth time he was facing the choice.

Although he had failed the first three times, he was able to obtain some information through each failure, allowing his actions to progress with each successive round.

However, after failing a fourth and fifth time, Shi Xiaobai was somewhat dumbfounded..

He had not only failed to obtain any information in the past two failures, the situation seemed to be at a dead end.

There were a total of forty-eight people in the valley.



There were still forty-eight people outside the valley after they left.

At the final second, the forty-eight people, including him, all appeared extremely healthy. There was not the slightest hint of an impending death.

If it were anyone else, they might have believed that they had missed something, but Shi Xiaobai was very confident of his observational skills. While he was observing every rookie's expression, he had simultaneously determined the count. He had even remembered every rookie's appearance.

Shi Xiaobai was a hundred percent certain that he did not miss a person.

Therefore, that person was still healthy at the final second. Even if the healthiness was just an illusion, it was impossible to suddenly die in a fraction of a second, right?

Yet, the situation which was currently—no one dying, no one being eliminated—resulted in the failure of the choice, [ Save all rookies ]!

What was going on with this contradictory situation that did not seem to have a solution?

“There is no such thing as a lack of a solution.”

With this in mind, Shi Xiaobai's slightly perplexed gaze turned resolute.

He must have missed something.

What did he miss?

Shi Xiaobai was lost in thought. Ideas churned through his mind extremely quickly, with all sorts of possibilities flashing in his mind. Even if it was an extremely unlikely possibility, he was considering it carefully.

But it appeared as though there was no 'possibility' that could perfectly explain the present situation. Each and every 'possibility' was rejected by Shi Xiaobai, as though he would never find the answer.

There was no 'possibility' that could result in the present situation.

Then, what else could it be?

Shi Xiaobai did not give up as he dismissed all his existing ideas.

Since no 'possibility' could crack the situation.

Why shouldn't he think about those 'impossibilities'?

“Could it be...”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a long while before his eyes suddenly lit up. He thought of a seemingly impossible possibility.

...

# Chapter 319: Murder Induced By A Pool Of Pee

---

“Everyone, leave the valley as fast as possible!”

Shi Xiaobai said to everyone in the mountain valley.

This was the sixth time he was facing the same scene. He fell somewhat in a trance momentarily, but he snapped out of it very quickly.

Shi Xiaobai repeated the words he had said before, while the rookies reacted in the same manner by heading towards the valley in droves.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head and whispered to Ka Xiaozi, who was beside him, “This King needs to go first. There’s someone outside the valley that needs saving. Can you wait for This King outside the valley?”

Shi Xiaobai had promised to protect Ka Xiaozi and to never be more than three meters away from her.

He had to leave the valley as fast as possible, and if he brought Ka Xiaozi along with him, the monsters might no longer feel any dread. Who knew what they could do.

Although there was no way to determine which of the two of

them was what made the monsters feel dread, it was the moment when he needed to make a bet.

“Alright.”

Ka Xiaozi was very understanding as she agreed without any hesitation.

The reason why she wanted to stay beside Shi Xiaobai was because ‘I’m very weak’. It sounded like she was requesting a safety umbrella, but in fact, it was just an excuse.

She did not need Shi Xiaobai’s protection. She just needed to be beside Shi Xiaobai when he was not in trouble.

Shi Xiaobai gave Ka Xiaozi a grateful look and did not speak any further. Turning around, he used Crab Steps to rush forward at an extremely fast speed.

While passing by the rookie who was about to release his ‘toxic gases’, Shi Xiaobai stretched out his hand and held his shoulder and pinched it a few times.

Shi Xiaobai did not repeat the important matter thrice this time because he realized that it was superfluous. Farting required ‘courage’. Other than this rookie who could not resist any further, the others had great discipline.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai chose to use the ‘Massage Technique of

God' to suppress this youth's biological embarrassment.

Following that, even if the youth wanted to fart, he would not be able to do so. He would have to bear with it for a period of time.

Of course, this feeling wasn't very pleasant. It was similar to constipation, but Shi Xiaobai believed that the youth would agree to dedicate himself for the greater good by accomplishing such a momentous feat of sacrificing his own 'happiness' to prevent the 'disaster' on everyone else.

Well, for his opinion, let's not ask about it. Let's pretend he agreed to it.

However, the fart was truly wretched. Shi Xiaobai could not imagine what sort of noxious gas it would turn into after it festered for a period of time.

He only wished that the youth would be able to find a toilet when the time came, so as to not pollute the environment.

Shi Xiaobai overtook everyone very quickly. He reminded them once again to leave the mountain valley as soon as possible and gather outside the valley to wait, before rushing out of the valley.

When the rookies saw Shi Xiaobai rushing out of the valley, they did not dare delay any further and immediately sped up.

When Shi Xiaobai ran out of the valley, he ran straight into the

forest.

None of the forty-eight rookies had died, yet the choice [ Save all rookies ] had failed.

What was the contradiction in this matter?

Shi Xiaobai had first thought of two possibilities.

Firstly, there were forty-nine rookies who entered the mountain valley at the beginning. Before the choice appeared, a rookie had been silently devoured by a monster without anyone noticing, eventually dying after a period of time.

Secondly, there was a rookie who had managed to enter the valley before he shattered the diamond monster before being devoured by a monster. Therefore, what seemed like forty-eight rookies in the valley was actually supposed to be forty-nine.

However, the two possibilities were very quickly put aside by Shi Xiaobai temporarily.

This was because from the attacks from before, the heads of the monsters were unlikely to be large. If not, they would not have simply bitten off heads or limbs in their attacks. There was a very low chance of devouring a rookie whole.

Furthermore, if that truly was the case, how was he to save that rookie?

Against these monsters he could not see, hear or sense, Shi Xiaobai could only use a wide area-of-effect sword attack mindlessly. There was no other way, much less find the monster among the sea of monsters that had devoured the rookie before carefully dissecting it to save the rookie.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai could only temporarily place these two possibilities aside.

He later realized that all the ‘possibilities’ he came up with would not result in such a contradictory situation.

Shi Xiaobai immediately looked at it from a different logical point of view.

If there were no ‘possibilities’, then would an ‘impossibility’ perfectly explain the situation at hand?

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai very quickly thought of an ‘impossibility’.

There was a rookie that had entered the valley with them, but due to a mental lapse, he had ran into the forest to run naked.

If that youth that was running naked had died, everything could be explained.

However, this possibility had been limited to an impossibility due



to the words 'in Dragon Mountain Valley' in the choice [ Save all rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley ].

However, everything impossible could very well be a 'possibility that seemed impossible'.

Shi Xiaobai pondered over it repeatedly before betting on this 'impossibility' on his sixth attempt.

...

Shi Xiaobai darted through the woods, unsure of where the exact location of the youth running naked was, so he could only run around blindly in the woods.

It was unknown where the youth had gone, so Shi Xiaobai failed to find him instantly.

Shi Xiaobai was keeping track of time in his heart. Seeing how the failure that had happened a few times was about to happen without him finding the rookie, Shi Xiaobai gradually became anxious.

However, there was no other way than to search blindly in the forest.

Finally, when there were only a few seconds remaining, Shi Xiaobai saw the youth in the distance after turning around a bend!

The youth was stark naked, unafraid that his dick would freeze!

However, this was not something that Shi Xiaobai had to worry about. He frowned because in the distance, he saw the youth leaning at a tree in fear, and in front of him stood the black-robed youth holding his crimson sickle!

The black-robed youth's eyes were cold as the crimson sickle was held to the youth's neck, as though he was hesitant about severing the youth's neck or not.

The youth was obviously horrified as he constantly mouthed something. From the shape of his mouth, it looked like 'Open Sesame', but not a sound was produced.

The black-robed youth had used an unknown method to prevent the youth from using the exit command.

Shi Xiaobai charged at the two silently. His accurate sense of time told him that the youth would die in two seconds. Therefore, there was no need for him to shout to stop the act from happening. The most pressing thing at the moment was to close the distance.

At this moment, something astounding happened.

Having not been able to use the exit command, the youth believed that death was at his doorstep. In his horror, he actually... peed himself from fright!

In the face of death, it was common for a timid person to pee themselves, but typically, peeing themselves meant wetting their pants.

However, at this moment, the youth was stark naked, there wasn't a pair of pants!

A stream of yellow liquid spewed out from the naked adolescent penis, straight onto the black-robed youth's black robe!

That scene was truly beautiful...

Shi Xiaobai nearly burst out laughing.

Being suddenly 'attacked' in such a manner, how could the black-robed youth tolerate such a humiliating act? The black-robed youth took a step back in alarm and dodged the attack of the urinary stream before blowing up into an indomitable rage!

"Die!"

The black-robed youth roared. Without any hesitation, he raised his sickle and slashed it at the youth's neck!

The time matched the time of the previous Absolute Choice failures perfectly.

Shi Xiaobai was immediately rendered extremely speechless. First, it was a smelly fart that induced massacre, now, a urinary stream had resulted in a murder. What the heck!?

The black-robed youth raised his sickle high. Just as it was about to decapitate the youth, Shi Xiaobai arrived in front of him. With a clang, the black sword blocked the sickle.

The black-robed youth was sent retreating. When he turned his head and saw Shi Xiaobai, the anger and killing intent in his eyes turned more intense. This black-haired youth that had previously reduced him to a pool of blood was the target he wanted to kill the most in the trials.

When the youth saw Shi Xiaobai, he felt as though he had seen his father. Tears and snot was lathered across his entire face as he tried to approach Shi Xiaobai.

“Don’t come over, put on your clothes first.”

Shi Xiaobai quickly kept a distance from the naked youth.

The youth also realized that his current state was somewhat odd, so with an embarrassed smile, he took a step back.

However, the black-robed youth did not have any patience, he had brandished his sickle and slashed it at Shi Xiaobai!

A sanguinary storm stirred towards Shi Xiaobai!

As Shi Xiaobai looked at the black-robed youth, his gaze turned slightly cold.

This black-robed youth had previously forced him to use One Second Shura and Excalibur. When he was unconscious, he had smashed all the rookies protecting him and had nearly killed him.

It could be said that the impression this black-robed youth gave Shi Xiaobai was even worse than Sen Senyuan in the trials, especially his bloodlust and aura of darkness, something Shi Xiaobai hated especially.

If he could kill this inhumane black-robed bloody figure, Shi Xiaobai would definitely not show mercy.

At this moment, the opportunity had arrived.

The black-robed youth was very strong, so strong that Pulp Farmer and company were helpless against him. He had even nearly killed the weakened him and Sunless.

But in fact, the black-robed youth was extremely weak to Shi Xiaobai, much weaker than any rookie!

This was because his right hand had been restored to normal at this moment in time!

Shi Xiaobai kept the black sword and rushed towards the black-robed youth despite the sanguinary storm heading towards him!

A psionic knife conjured in his right hand at that moment!

This knife was called Pig Slaughtering Knife!

The sanguinary storm met the Pig Slaughtering Knife and dissipated without any suspense.

The black-robed youth was given a fright as he hurriedly conjured his crimson barrier!

This crimson barrier that remained indestructible despite Pulp Farmer and company's attacks was no different from paper in front of the Pig Slaughtering Knife. It shattered in an instant!

The black-robed youth was dumbfounded as he retreated in panic.

The Pig Slaughtering Knife countered all darkness. The black-robed youth was unable to put up even the slightest of resistance against the Pig Slaughtering Knife!

At this moment, a dragon's roar suddenly reverberated through the forest from the distance. It was extremely loud as it filled the world.

Shi Xiaobai naturally heard it, but he had no time to deal with it. He only had one thought in mind—kill the black-robed youth!

The black-robed youth retreated quickly as he brandished his sickle madly, slashing out sanguinary storms, but the attacks that were filled with bloodlust and darkness were like glass mirrors in front of the thrusting Pig Slaughtering Knife. They shattered instantly.

“No!”

Fear arose in the black-robed youth’s eyes. His speed was inferior to Shi Xiaobai and soon, he was caught!

“Die!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes were cold. Towards an abhorrent person, he would never show mercy.

Finally, Shi Xiaobai’s knife reached the black-robed youth’s chest!

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice resounded in his brain.

“That can’t be!”

Shi Xiaobai was extremely stupefied. He realized his body could no longer move. The scene before his eyes had returned to the moment when everyone was in the mountain valley.

It was still the three choices.

It was still that darn voice.

“Make your choice, youth!”



# Chapter 320: Why Spit Everywhere!

---

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice resounded incessantly in Shi Xiaobai's mind, indicating that he had failed the Absolute Choice for the sixth time.

After failing so many times and having tried again and again, he had solved one problem to immediately have another problem rear its head. It was as though he had entered a never-ending cycle of death.

The complexity of this Absolute Choice of [ Save all rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley ] was revealed in a most vivid fashion.

Shi Xiaobai emptied his mind for ten seconds so as to allow his exhausted mind rest for a moment before he continued thinking.

This time, pure strength alone was not enough to save all the rookies. It was most like a test of wisdom.

Now, he had basically determined that the naked-running youth was the reason for the fourth and fifth failures. Then, the ‘impossibility’ was indeed an illusion of ‘possibility’.

But even though the naked youth was not in Dragon Mountain Valley, why would he cause the choice of “Save all rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley” to fail upon his death?

There were two possibilities. First, the system had made a judgmental error. It might have been unintentional or done intentionally. Secondly, assuming it was an error, the premise that Dragon Mountain Valley was different from what he imagined.

The odds of the former was incredibly unlikely. Although the Absolute Choice frequently pulled pranks on him, it had never played word games with him. It had never made things difficult for him using the rules.

Then, the only possibility was the latter. The false assumption of Dragon Mountain Valley was wrong from the outset.

This was because the vast valley was not Dragon Mountain Valley!

Or could be said that it was only a tiny area of Dragon Mountain Valley. At least, Dragon Mountain Valley included the entire forest. As such, the naked youth was also considered a rookie in Dragon Mountain Valley.

And from that, it further explained why there was no dragon in the empty valley.

It was because Dragon Mountain Valley was much bigger than expected!

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment and came to the conclusion

that Dragon Mountain Valley included the entire forest or an area even larger.

What supported his point of view was not only how the Absolute Choice failed because of the naked youth's death, but also because of the dragon roar he heard at the final moment.

If Shi Xiaobai had guessed correctly, the dragon roar came from the so-called dragon.

And the reason why the Absolute Choice failed once again just as Shi Xiaobai was about to kill the black-robed youth was very likely because a rookie had enraged the dragon, resulting in death or elimination.

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt depressed. Up to now, he had not determined if saving included 'elimination' or not as the past failures had all been a result of the rookies dying.

And he thought of a very depressing thing. The black-robed youth was also considered a rookie.

Now that he was within Dragon Mountain Valley, would killing him also result in the failure of the Absolute Choice?

Shi Xiaobai had a feeling of once bitten twice shy. He was afraid of repeating again because of missing a small detail. Experiencing six similar scenes in a row within a short period of time would undoubtedly confuse his memories. It did not feel good.

Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai had the nagging feeling that the Absolute Choice had yet to reach the crux of the matter. He had been struggling for so long as though he was lingering around the edge of the Absolute Choice, a feeling that he was not making any real progress.

Shi Xiaobai fell into deep thought for a long time this time. Only when the Absolute Choice countdown reached the last second did Shi Xiaobai confirm his selection.

...

...

The familiar scene, the conversations of the rookies, words which Shi Xiaobai himself could recite by heart.

Shi Xiaobai still urged the rookies to leave the valley and reminded everyone to wait outside the valley without running anywhere else. He still told Ka Xiaozi that he had to leave first, and had used Massage Technique of God on the youth that wanted to fart.

Many things that happened were done in an adept but numb fashion. Repeating certain things was no doubt quite a rotten feeling.

But the difference this time was Shi Xiaobai had borrowed Mu

Yuesheng's superpower.

As he had previously reconstructed Mu Yuesheng's superpower, what he pulled out from her chest was a superpower in the shape of skating shoes.

Shi Xiaobai wore the icy-blue skating shoes and under the gazes of the awestruck crowd, he shot out of the valley instantly with a rub.

Although Shi Xiaobai was searching blindly in the forest the first time, he had subconsciously taken note of his direction because he had a premonition that he could very likely repeat the Absolute Choice a seventh time. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai clearly knew where the naked youth was this time, so he charged straight in that direction.

Shi Xiaobai wanted to bring the naked youth back to the crowd before he encountered the black-robed youth.

With the electric skating shoes augmenting him, Shi Xiaobai's speed was something that left even the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign in the dust. In a while, he found the naked youth.

Seeing a naked dick was always rather unpleasant to the eyes, but there was no other way. Shi Xiaobai could only recognize the pain inflicted on him. After finding the naked youth, he quickly made him wear his clothes.

The naked youth was vehemently refusing at first, saying how he would never wear clothes unless he finished running around the forest.

As a result, Shi Xiaobai could only tell him that the black-robed bloody figure was soon arriving.

The naked youth clearly knew about the horror of the black-robed bloody figure. Without speaking another word, he began putting on his clothes at a speed much faster than a person about to be caught engaging in adultery.

Shi Xiaobai and the naked youth quickly returned outside the valley. At this moment, the forty-seven rookies had safely left the valley.

And coming this far, Shi Xiaobai did not know what would happen next. However, he knew that if nothing unexpected happened, the dragon would soon appear. As for why or how it would appear, Shi Xiaobai had no clue.

Shi Xiaobai could only gather all the rookies together.

...

“The dragon will be appearing very soon!”

Shi Xiaobai looked at everyone and cut straight to the point!

The rookies were astounded as they questioned him.

“How do you know? What did you base your judgment on?”

“Where would the dragon appear? In the valley?”

“Why did you get us to leave the valley? Did you discover some danger? Can you explain it to us now?”

“...”

Shi Xiaobai heard the questions from everyone and felt somewhat helpless. He couldn't tell everyone that he knew everything because he had repeated things several times, right?

Shi Xiaobai had no way to explain so much, nor did he have the time to explain.

He said seriously, “Danger was indeed the reason why all of you were evacuated from the valley. This matter is somewhat more complicated, so it will be explained later. Now, This King has to tell all of you of a possibility... The dragon might not be in the valley. The valley is just a small portion or it could be said, the entire forest or a wider area might be the dragon's territory!”

When the rookies heard this, they revealed contemplative looks. This possibility sounded somewhat reasonable!

Shi Xiaobai continued, “This King has a hunch that the dragon will appear very soon. Believe in This King. This King’s premonition has always been very accurate. From now on, This King wishes that all of you will brace yourselves and be prepared so that all of you can engage in battle at any time!”

Shi Xiaobai had no way to explain any further because he was unsure how the dragon would appear.

He was not even certain that the sixth failure was a result of the dragon. The dragon’s roar could have been produced by other creatures.

Everything was just a guess, so the only thing he could do was to let all the rookies remain vigilant.

In this regard, the rookies naturally did not disagree. Regardless if the dragon would appear or not, being vigilant would definitely not be wrong.

Shi Xiaobai sighed lightly as he began to observe his surroundings and the actions of every rookie. This had nearly become a habit, because every piece of information could be key to cracking the situation.

Who could have imagined the first few failures were a result of a smelly fart? And that the failures later on were because of a naked-running youth having peed himself from fright?



Failure always happened in such inexplicable ways, but one would find it absurd and laughable after realizing the reason.

Shi Xiaobai's gaze constantly swept across the crowd. At this moment, everyone was bracing themselves for the appearance of the dragon that Shi Xiaobai had mentioned. No one did anything strange.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's pupils contracted slightly. The farting youth that he had paid special attention to had done something that made Shi Xiaobai's heart leap.

The youth had found a spot in the corner, thinking that no one was paying any attention to him, he suddenly spat on the ground!

Shi Xiaobai's heart stopped for a second before he gave a wry smile.

"It's just spitting a mouthful of phlegm. It shouldn't be a big deal."

Shi Xiaobai sighed. He was feeling the jitters after the smelly fart and the urine.

At this moment, an exclamation was suddenly heard.

"Holy shit, what is that?"

And following that, several voices echoed.

“Is that...phlegm?”

“Heavens, a flying phlegm? Who the fuck spat that?”

“No, it’s not phlegm. It’s a monster, an invisible monster! Quickly kill it!”

“...”

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly took a look and saw a thick phlegm fluttering in the middle of the woods like a butterfly, flying above the rookies’ heads, and it was even going in circles!

Shi Xiaobai jumped up in fright.

Was this one of those invisible monsters in the valley? It had actually come out of the valley?

At this moment, the rookies had realized that the extremely sticky phlegm had stuck onto an invisible monster’s body. They were immediately given a fright.

For an invisible monster to be beside them without them even knowing, how dangerous was this?

The rookies closest to it had already begun attacking where the phlegm was!

Shi Xiaobai's heart leaped. He realized of a terrifying possibility as he quickly shouted, "Stop! Don't kill it!"

However, it was too late. Numerous attacks had been launched. Following that, a young cry was heard and with a splash, something fell to the ground.

Everyone looked over and saw a pool of blood, as well as the spit that had been diluted by the blood.

"It's dead?"

The rookies asked doubtfully.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent and thought to himself—What's coming will come after all.

"Roar!"

A dragon roar that reverberated through the entire woods resounded and mixed in it was infinite anger!

A mouthful of phlegm had hit the dragon's baby, and with everyone killing the dragon's baby, the dragon had appeared.

This kind of script was extremely clichéd!

“The dragon has appeared! Protect yourselves!”

Shi Xiaobai roared. At this point in time, the only choice left was to fight the dragon!

And with him here this time, there might be a chance for a different outcome from the sixth attempt!

# Chapter 321: The Dragon Is Here!

---

On the sixth round, everyone had incurred the wrath of the dragon after killing the dragon's baby, causing the rookies to be killed or eliminated.

Back then, Shi Xiaobai was not present, so he still had the hope for a last-ditch effort.

After the raging dragon's roar reverberated throughout the woods, there was silence as though it was developing an impending climate of terror.

When the rookies heard Shi Xiaobai that the dragon would be appearing, they were already prepared for battle. At this moment, they focused more and could even hear their own heartbeats.

Three seconds later, be it the sky or the forest, there was no signs of the dragon anywhere.

“Where's the dragon?”

Someone asked curiously. They had all heard the furious dragon's roar, but where was the dragon? Where was it?

Shi Xiaobai had already realized that the dragon could be invisible just like the monsters in the valley!

This made the issue rather thorny. At this moment, the dragon was probably rushing here. Without any way to know where the dragon would attack from, there was no way to save anyone in time.

However, Shi Xiaobai was one to never give up. Taking a deep breath, he observed his surroundings vigilantly.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai sensed a faint killing intent appearing about hundred meters away from the group!

Was this the dragon's killing intent?

“Be careful!”

Shi Xiaobai was quick to react as he charged towards the dragon that was heading straight for them!

The dragon was able to mask its presence, but in its wrath, it could not hide the monstrous killing intent it exuded!

Shi Xiaobai could sense the existence of the killing intent. Charging towards the killing intent, he activated the power of his Sword Truth and slashed out with Kun Peng Sword Technique!

As the sword winds blasted, the forest in its trajectory was left in shambles. Trees toppled from the raging blade storm while leaf and branch shreds flew into the sky.

“Roar!”

A dragon’s roar filled with pain sounded!

Blots of blood burst in mid-air, as though a red flower bud was blooming in the sky.

“The dragon is invisible, kill it with all you got!”

Shi Xiaobai shouted to the stupefied rookies before charging straight at the injured dragon once again.

The dragon was much larger than the monsters in the valley, but its defense did not appear to be much stronger than them. The heavens have given it the ability to hide itself, but had deprived it of its defenses.

“Two Peng Grills!”

Shi Xiaobai quickly slashed twice at the blot of blood, forming golden-crimson ‘X’-shaped flames that swept into the sky!

“Boom!”

The flames exploded as a pained dragon’s roar resounded once again. The inferno did not immediately dissipate as it continued burning in the sky, moving around like a wisp of specter fire!

This was obviously not a floating specter fire, but the flames burning on the dragon's body!

The blood and inferno revealed the dragon's location. Snapping out of their daze, the rookies attacked with all their might!

“Kill!”

“Kill the dragon!”

Electric bolts, whips, shields, charms, sonic blasts, stones, sword beams, saber beams... All sorts of attacks struck the dragon in the sky!

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

As though fireworks were exploding everywhere in the sky, smoke clouded the sky as flames roared while blots of blood bloomed. It was gorgeous, but it was also cold and cruel!

However, now was not the moment to show mercy. Knowing that the modus operandi of this kind of invisible monster was the biting off of heads and limbs, this was no longer a simple trial, but a life and death battle!

Shi Xiaobai slashed out once again, beating the dragon while it was down!



“Roar!”

An indignant dragon’s roar resounded. In mid-air, the blood and flames blooming in the air suddenly flew far into the distance!

The dragon had escaped!

And it escaped fucking fast!

Gradually, the blood and flames disappeared, and the aura filled with killing intent had completely dissipated.

A struggle flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes, but he eventually chose not to chase the dragon.

It was difficult to get such a blessing in disguise. By angering the dragon, it had inadvertently revealed its location, allowing them to seriously injure it. Although chasing up to it might allow him to kill it, if something extraordinary happened again here that resulted in the failure of the mission, it wouldn’t be worth it.

A few rookies had tried chasing due to their unwillingness to give up, but the dragon’s speed was astounding. Even Shi Xiaobai could barely keep up with it, so it was needless to say that the rest would not have caught up. They had to return resentfully after chasing for a distance.

Shi Xiaobai gathered the rookies again, and having confirmed the man count, there were forty-nine people including him. There was not one less.

Shi Xiaobai lightly heaved a sigh of relief, but he felt heavier too.

This was because the Absolute Choice was not completed yet. It was unknown how far the choice of saving went.

Making choices was honestly an exhausting affair. However, Shi Xiaobai could not force himself to sit back and watch the rookies die. Although most of them were strangers to him, they had protected him previously while he was unconscious. They had given him their applause and kudos when he had revealed his dominance. They were worth saving.

In fact, as long as these people were not evil, and even if they were ordinary citizens, if one had the ability to make the choice of saving them after foreseeing that they would encounter danger, by choosing to stand by the side coldly, there was no reason or excuse that could be used to support such an act.

People who believed that saving strangers were goody two shoes were in fact people without much thought. If one had the ability to save but chose to sit idle, then how different were they from murderers?

Humans had a normal body temperature of thirty-seven degree Celsius. Blood was not cold when it flowed because humans are not cold-blooded animals. They are warm-blooded, righteous and

kind... These things came by nature, but people would come up with all sorts of excuse to abandon them, but label the people who had preserved these things as goody two shoes. It was simply absurd.

If this was considered a goody two shoes, then Shi Xiaobai would find it a derogatory label of something honorable.

However, what Shi Xiaobai had to do next left him slightly confused. The rookies present were all cream of the crop, but for some reason, they appeared extremely frail during the Absolute Choice, giving him an illusion that a gentle breeze could kill them.

Hearing the rookies proposing to split up to find the dragon, Shi Xiaobai immediately felt a gloomy cloud cover his forehead. He said to everyone, “The reason why This King got everyone to evacuate the valley was because there were such invisible monsters throughout the valley. Now, these monsters might have come out into the forest. So it’s best that everyone gathers together and not run around!”

Now, it was somewhat more convincing telling the crowd that there were invisible monsters in the valley. There was no need to explain much because the dragon was a fact that had appeared in front of them.

After hearing what Shi Xiaobai had to say, the rookies immediately dismissed the idea of forming groups or going alone to find the dragon.

Shi Xiaobai heaved a sigh of relief. He had the nagging feeling that he was taking care of babies that could die at any time.

At this moment, Ka Xiaozi, who was quietly standing beside Shi Xiaobai, frowned slightly. She turned her head to look high into the sky. After a moment of pondering, a cold beam flashed in her eyes.

...

A gloomy cloud floated in the sky, and on it stood four monsters.

One of them wore a white mask and was dressed in aristocratic garb. It looked human, but it was a monster with a crimson tail.

One of them held dual blades and had dark green skin. It had a gigantic demonic head, a monster many times larger than a human.

One of them was completely black in color, a gigantic Nightmare Terror.

One of them was dark purple, a demonic beast with a lion's head and a snake's body.

The four monsters were watching the crowd in the forest from the cloud.

Suddenly, the dual-blade demon said in a deep voice, “Why are there only four? Didn’t I say to get at least seven?”

The white-masked aristocrat shrugged and said, “The fuckers on the seventh, eighth and ninth level are too aloof. I already lowered my status as an aristocrat by sending them a request, but they responded with a ‘get lost’, so what can I do?”

The dual-blade monster said coldly, “Back then, the allocation of the levels were done by the drawing of lots. Do they think that their status as Level Lords is higher because they are in the later levels? In terms of strength, they aren’t even match for the dog on the third level.”

The gigantic Nightmare Terror cursed, “To speak the truth, we aren’t any match for the dog on the third level either. Its strength is completely unscientific. As for that human that conquered it, it’s even more unscientific. What should be said? The reason why the both of you called us here is not to watch a show, right?”

The dual-blade demon said, “Chill, the show is just about to begin. However, we have encountered a problem now. We only have four of us, and we probably can’t beat that pixie.”

The lion-headed demonic beast said with a joke, “Are you kidding me? That pixie is only at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. Any one of us can kill her easily, yet you say the four of us combined can’t beat her?”

The dual-blade demon chuckled, “What ignorance. That pixie

may have sealed herself to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm, but her strength cannot be measured with realms. I've spent so much time in hell and have seen all kinds of mighty figures. I can grasp the difference in strength very well. The four of us combined can at best imprison her for less than twenty minutes, but we won't be able to injure her."

When the white-masked Aristocrat heard this, he asked, "Can she be imprisoned for more than ten minutes? Are you sure?"

The dual-blade demon said with a nod, "This level is the one I preside over after all. I have already set up a God Slaughtering Formation, and although it won't kill the pixie, with the four of us powering the formation together, imprisoning her for more than ten minutes wouldn't be a problem. However, none of us will be able to move during this period of time, so it's useless."

"No, it will be useful."

The white-masked aristocrat said with a chuckle, "If she's imprisoned for more than ten minutes, my Plan F can be implemented."

The dual blade demon asked, "Are you confident?"

The white-masked aristocrat said confidently, "Of course, aristocrats never do things without confidence. Believe me, I had plans, and have already done the preparations!"

The dual blade demon gave a satisfied nod, “Alright, then let’s implement it as soon as possible! Indeed, Aristocrat is the person to look up to in times of need.”

The white-masked aristocrat said with a laugh, “I love what you said. Then, shall we begin the show?”

The dual-blade demon nodded. The other two monsters looked each other in the eyes as they inexplicably had a sense of foreboding.

...

...

Shi Xiaobai obviously did not know of the four monsters hiding in the sky. He was fully absorbed with monitoring his surroundings.

The rookies were also braced for attack against invisible monsters.

Suddenly, there was a scream!

“Dragon! The dragon is there!”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his eyebrows pricked and he looked towards the scream but he saw the screaming rookie pointing

towards him.

Behind him?

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly looked back. There was nothing behind him.

Where was the dragon?

At this moment, the rookies also began exclaiming loudly.

“Dragon!”

“The dragon is in our midst!”

“Kill the dragon!”

“...”

The rookies clamored and nervously raised their weapons.

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly looked around but he did not see anything. Where was the dragon? Why was everyone shouting? Could he be the only one who couldn't see it?

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai felt something strange. He calmed down and noticed that the rookies surrounding him had raised their



weapons, but all their eyes were on him!

Their gazes were filled with hostility.

At this moment, Mozzie's nervous voice was heard, "Sis Xiaozi, quickly move away from the dragon!"

...

# Chapter 322: The Dragon Won't Run Away Anymore

---

“Sis Xiaozi, quickly move away from the dragon!”

Mozzie anxiously shouted as Shi Xiaobai's heart skipped a beat. Turning his head, Ka Xiaozi was just beside him.

Where was the dragon?

Ka Xiaozi frowned slightly, as though she was wondering where the dragon was. Her red lips quivered, as though she wanted to say something...

Suddenly, another golden line appeared from the ground, forming a gigantic golden array formation, while a beam of golden light shot down from the sky, striking straight at Shi Xiaobai!

“Array formation!?”

Ka Xiaozi's eyebrows pricked up as she flicked her fingers, causing a radiant light to shine upon Shi Xiaobai, enveloping him within!

At this moment, the golden beam suddenly made a turn and shot straight at Ka Xiaozi!

“Heading for me?”

Ka Xiaozi frowned as she shot out a colorful beam of light with a wave of her hand which clashed with the golden beam of light.

At this moment, the golden lines on the ground formed a complete array formation, as it shot up into sky while blanketing the land beneath it. A luster flooded the entire world, leaving no room for shadows to hide!

“I’ve underestimated the few of you.”

Ka Xiaozi suddenly disappeared into the golden light. With that, the golden luster that filled the world dissipated. Even the golden lines faded away.

The change came too abruptly and in a baffling manner. The golden light and luster was not seen by anyone else except the target of the formation array. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai and company did not see the golden light. They only saw Ka Xiaozi flick her fingers and wave her hand, causing a radiant light to scatter and a colorful beam of light to shoot out, as though she was resisting something before...she vanished!

She disappeared into thin air!

Shi Xiaobai was momentarily at a loss and was unsure what had happened.

However, there were people exclaiming loudly!

“Oh no, Ka Xiaozi has been eaten by the dragon!”

“Quick, quickly kill the dragon. Killing the dragon now might be able to save her!”

When Shi Xiaobai heard the panicked screams of everyone, he hurriedly shouted, “Where? Tell This King where the dragon is!”

He could not see the dragon, but everyone had suddenly been able to see it. Furthermore, the dragon had eaten Ka Xiaozi?

Shi Xiaobai found it impossible to calm down. He could not sense the dragon’s aura, and could not tell where it was. However, the Absolute Choice had yet to fail, which meant that Ka Xiaozi was currently still alive.

He had to kill the dragon as fast as possible to save Ka Xiaozi!

However, no one answered Shi Xiaobai’s questions, as though they did not hear him. They shouted in outrage about killing a dragon before they began attacking!

An icy-blue bolt was first to appear!

Shi Xiaobai’s heart jumped. The bolt of lightning was shooting straight at him!

A mistake?

Shi Xiaobai instinctively jumped away to dodge the bolt of lightning, but the crowd's attacks were already trailing right behind the bolt of lightning!

These attacks did not land anywhere else, but were headed straight for Shi Xiaobai!

It was not a mistake!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Successive explosions resounded as Shi Xiaobai constantly dodged, but he was worried over Ka Xiaozi's situation, so he was unable to calm himself at all. He failed to dodge a few attacks, causing him to suffer some minor injuries.

Shi Xiaobai immediately used ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’ and ‘This Turtle Is Hardest’ as he looked at the crowd. He asked furiously and puzzledly, “Why are you attacking This King!?”

As though they could not hear his voice, the next wave of attacks was launched. This time, they were no longer long-range attacks. Some of them were charging towards Shi Xiaobai bravely with swords raised!

The crowd angrily shouted.

“Quickly kill the dragon!”

“Shi Xiaobai told us to take care of Ka Xiaozi before he left. If he returns to see so many of us failing to protect her, how can we even face him?”

“Kill the dragon and save Ka Xiaozi!”

“Fight it out with it!”

“...”

There was rage and anxiety in everyone’s eyes. And the people taking the charge were Mozzie, Kevin, Mu Yuesheng, Feng Yuanlin and company. They had looks of consternation as they charged at Shi Xiaobai as though they were going for a desperate attack! They attacked angrily, with every strike a fatal move!

Shi Xiaobai finally realized that there was something wrong with the situation!

In the eyes of the crowd, “Shi Xiaobai” had left an unknown amount of time ago, and he had transformed into a dragon and had eaten Ka Xiaozi.

What was going on? Was this a mass hallucination?

Shi Xiaobai realized that they could not hear his voice at all. Instead, they were anxiously attacking him and every strike was a deathblow. For these rookies to be able to reach the sixth level, they were mostly authentically strong. Even though there was a huge gap between them and Sunless, Pulp Farmer and company, they were still the cream of the crop among rookies.

Shi Xiaobai found it considerably difficult to dodge the deathblows from more than forty people after doing so for a few seconds. Furthermore, when the rookies discovered that he did not attack back, they were emboldened. More and more people charged up after mustering their courage.

Soon, Shi Xiaobai found it impossible to endure it any further. He could only grit his teeth and fling a Bladestorm, forcefully breaking a gap where he broke through at an extremely fast speed.

Now, he could only temporarily escape.

“The dragon is getting away. Quickly chase it!”

The crowd hollered as an electric beam of light shot out and chased up to him at an extremely fast speed.

Shi Xiaobai looked at Mu Yuesheng, who had appeared in front of him in an instant, as a wry smile gradually suffused across his lips.

The brown pair of eyes was slightly red. Her expression was filled with anxiety and anger. The moment she caught up, she did not

say a word and immediately, electric bolts that jumped around irascibly shot towards Shi Xiaobai like snakes that came biting at him.

Shi Xiaobai jumped backwards to dodge the lightning bolt. He turned his body and ran in a different direction. His Crab Steps had already reached the Crest of Perfection realm, so his speed was astounding, leaving behind only a mirage.

Shi Xiaobai knew that Mu Yuesheng's Lightning Flashstep could only move in straight lines, so he chose to dash into the forest. By moving in circles in the woods, he very quickly lost Mu Yuesheng.

However, Mu Yuesheng was not the only person chasing after him. The other rookies also anxiously came pursuing him. Although Shi Xiaobai quickly opened up a gap from them, they did not give up.

The forest was filled with hullabaloo and killing intent. Angry shouts followed one after another.

Shi Xiaobai knew that the result of their acts was because they had been confused by a particular illusion which made them think that he was the dragon and had eaten Ka Xiaozi. Therefore, the crowd was clamoring for his blood in their wrath.

His fury was reserved for the mastermind behind this matter.

However, Shi Xiaobai was without any clue why the crowd was



experiencing hallucinations and why Ka Xiaozi had suddenly disappeared or whether she was presently safe.

The multitude of questions with no answer to them made Shi Xiaobai's mind fall into disorder. He could not calmly dodge the crowd's attacks, so he could only temporarily escape.

However, his worry for Ka Xiaozi prevented Shi Xiaobai from waiting for a moment. It was as though a fog had glazed over his eyes, making him at a loss as how to proceed forward with the countless holes and mud pools in front of him.

The only thing certain was that the Absolute Choice had yet to fail. Ka Xiaozi was likely...still alive.

“Damn it!”

Shi Xiaobai had the nagging feeling like he was a kite being blown around wantonly by the wind. He could only passively face the abrupt changes and adversity. Every quagmire that appeared caught him off guard. Every end was extremely hazy, as though he had only revealed the tip of the iceberg.

Shi Xiaobai gradually slowed his footsteps. At this moment, he had opened up a certain distance from the crowd.

At this moment, a figure appeared in front of him. Upon focusing, Shi Xiaobai noticed that it was the black-robed youth that held a crimson sickle.

When the black-robed youth saw Shi Xiaobai, it was as though he had seen a sworn-enemy. Raising his sickle, he charged at him!

“Die!”

The black-robed youth’s hoarse voice was filled with malice and hatred.

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. He did not mind slaughtering the black-robed youth with a single knife strike, but he was worried that the black-robed youth belonged to one of the targets needed to be ‘saved’. Without any progress, he would not be able to change a thing if he repeated.

Shi Xiaobai clenched his teeth as he turned to flee in another direction.

The black-robed youth chased closely behind, but his speed was inferior to Shi Xiaobai, so he was soon left in the dust.

However, it was unknown how the rookies were able to track his location in the woods. They were already running from another direction towards him.

Shi Xiaobai subconsciously wanted to run, but he soon stopped.

“What’s the point of running away like that?”

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath. He had already realized that even if he could escape the pursuit of the crowd, it was not useful at all. He would not be able to answer the questions on his mind.

Shi Xiaobai stood in his spot and took deep breaths to calm himself down.

He was pondering over what he could do at present.

Under such a situation, what was the meaningful thing that he could do?

With the limitation of the Absolute Choice, he could not kill the black-robed youth, nor could he let the rookies chasing him encounter danger because of an illusion. Under such a premise, he had to find the mastermind who created the illusion and made Ka Xiaozi disappear on the spot.

However, under circumstances where he had no idea or any clues, how difficult would it be to find the mastermind who was hidden somewhere?

He needed clues!

How was he to gather clues?

The only solution was to find them through the rookies!

Shi Xiaobai stretched out his right hand as a black sword gradually condensed. However, this black sword was different from the past. It did not have a sharp edge.

He could not harm their lives and had to make them quiet down to assist in his investigations, the only thing he could do was to beat them motionless!

Shi Xiaobai was usually a person who could turn cruel when faced with a difficult position or even a desperate situation.

To face more than forty powerful rookies, with each of them showing no mercy while using their killer moves, he had to be careful at holding back so as to not harm their lives, but had to beat them down. How difficult was it?

Shi Xiaobai calmed his mind as his expression gradually relaxed. What would follow was a tough battle he had never imagined to happen, but it was also the only option he had.

Just like a drowning man in the darkness, once he saw the only glimmer of light, he would desperately grasp this opportunity no matter how difficult it was.

Without waiting for too long, the anxious rookies reached him.

Simultaneously, the black-robed youth had also arrived here from another direction.

“The dragon is here!”

The frontmost rookie shouted to the people behind him.

“Quickly surround it. Don’t let it get away!” the rookies behind shouted.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and raised his sword and walked forward. He said feebly, “The dragon won’t run away anymore.”

...

# Chapter 323: I Have Ten Thousand Ways To Let Him Die

---

The rookies that had pursued him were on the left, while the diabolic black-robed youth was on his right. Shi Xiaobai actually had two directions in which he could flee in, but he chose to stop because fleeing did not help the situation.

However, Shi Xiaobai was definitely not one to sit still and wait for death. If more than forty powerful rookies came charging at him, in addition to the utterly strange black-robed youth, surrounded him, even with his Crab Steps at the Crest of Perfection realm, it would be very difficult for him to dodge perfectly, much less have the strength to launch a counteroffensive.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai immediately turned around and charged at the black-robed youth before the rookies surrounded him!

The black-robed youth's eyes were filled with hatred, and seeing Shi Xiaobai charging at him, he welcomed it instead of feeling alarmed. Brandishing his crimson sickle, a sanguinary storm stirred towards Shi Xiaobai like locusts flying in the sky.

Shi Xiaobai moved the black sword to his left hand, and instantly, he constructed a psionic knife in his right hand!

Shi Xiaobai thrust the knife out, causing the sanguinary storm to immediately dissipate!

The knife did not come to a stop as it thrust straight at the black-robed youth.

A look of surprise flashed in the black-robed youth's eyes as he immediately brandished his sickle to meet the knife!

“Die!”

The black-robed youth roared angrily as he slashed with the crimson sickle from top to bottom. A gigantic crimson skull came roaring as it snapped its jaws at Shi Xiaobai!

However, just touching Shi Xiaobai's knife tip caused the crimson skull's gaping mouth to disintegrate, and burst into a blood mist that filled the sky!

A look of incredulity flashed in the black-robed youth's eyes; however, Shi Xiaobai's knife was already in front of him. It did not allow him to have any doubts so the black-robed youth hurriedly conjured a crimson barrier!

The crimson barrier had perfectly withstood Pulp Farmer and company's attacks, so its defensive power was clearly impressive, but the moment the crimson barrier touched Shi Xiaobai's knife, it tore through like paper before shattering with a boom!

“Impossible! What sort of knife strike is this!?”

The black-robed youth's face finally revealed a look of horror as he hurriedly retreated in hopes of avoiding the knife.

But the speed at which he retreated was not as fast as Shi Xiaobai's thrust forward. He was caught up in an instant!

Shi Xiaobai sneered, "This knife is named Pig Slaughtering Knife, meant to kill a pig like you!"

In a split second, the Pig Slaughtering Knife had reached the black-robed youth's chest.

Intense fear arose in the black-robed youth's heart. His intuition told him that if he was killed by the knife, he might not be able to revive again.

"Then let's die together!"

The black-robed youth was a ruthless person. He instantly wiped the fear in his heart and allowed his hatred to preside over his will as he made the most vicious choice!

Shi Xiaobai's knife had broken through all obstacles, stabbing straight into the black-robed youth's chest!

Shi Xiaobai had a premonition of imminent disaster, so he hastened to release the psionic knife that seemed to sink into a pool of mud while retreating!



“Boom!”

An explosion resounded as the black-robed youth was reduced to a bloody figure. And like a bomb exploding, the bloody figure was reduced to millions of drops of blood, with each scarlet drop of blood scattering in every direction like a rain of arrows!

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly produced Bladestorm to let the sword beams resist the blood-colored rain of arrows.

“Sizzle...”

Drops of blood fell onto the trees, ground and rocks, producing sizzling noises. As though they were splashed by highly concentrated acid, the trees disintegrated and tiny black holes peppered the ground, as though they were honeycombs. Even most of the rocks had been eroded away.

As Shi Xiaobai was too close, he was still unable to perfectly defend against all the drops of blood even though he had retreated in time while producing Bladestorm.

A few drops of blood landed on his body. Shi Xiaobai’s expression changed as he hurriedly conjured psionic power to protect his skin, while Unleaking Turtle Aura and This Turtle Is Hardest simultaneously came into operation.

However, when these drops of blood landed on a human body, it

was not like acid. Instead, it transformed into countless minute blood-colored worms that began boring through the pores on the skin.

Shi Xiaobai's expression drastically changed as blood-colored worms entered his body. They immediately began to destroy his blood vessels, internal organs, and bone marrow. Even Unleaking Turtle Aura was insufficient to completely withstand such pain. Shi Xiaobai drew a gasp from the excruciating pain.

However, This Turtle Is Hardest began to produce a tremendous effect as well. At the moment it inhibited his sensory perception, it produced a force that began destroying the blood-colored worms that were wreaking havoc in his body.

In a few moments, all the blood-colored worms were cleansed, so even though a few drops of blood had landed on his body, a few seconds were enough to riddle Shi Xiaobai's innards with holes. He had suffered a severe injury.

The black-robed youth's self-destruction before death was truly terrifying. If not for his timely intuition for danger, Shi Xiaobai's body would probably have been eroded away by the blood-colored worms.

Shi Xiaobai felt a lingering sense of fear, but his expression was calm. He appeared as though the injuries were nothing.

He quickly heard exclamations coming from the rookies in the distance.

“Heavens, the dragon instantly killed the black-robed bloody figure?”

“Really...an instant kill.”

“The dragon is so strong? We...couldn't even beat the black-robed youth. How are we to kill the dragon?”

“...”

The rookies exclaimed in horror. From their vantage point, what happened was sudden and brief. The dragon had turned around and charged at the black-robed youth, instantly killing the black-robed youth.

Most rookies quietly took a few steps back.

Most of the rookies were of the opinion that Ka Xiaozi had been devoured by the dragon. After so long, she had probably fallen, and with the dragon being able to instantly kill the bloody figure, how could they beat it?

Even if they killed the dragon, it was only considered revenge, but the difficulty of doing so was exaggeratedly high. Most rookies only admired Shi Xiaobai's strength and enjoyed Ka Xiaozi's beauty. It did not mean that they had deep feelings for Ka Xiaozi, so how would they be willing to take such a huge risk in order to help Ka Xiaozi and do something that they lacked confidence in?

Seeing the dragon had instantly killed the black-robed youth, most rookies were planning on retreating.

However, there were rookies like Mu Yuesheng, Mozzie, Kevin, Feng Yuanlin, Liu Yu, Zhou Chuchu, and An Mo, rookies who had protected Shi Xiaobai on the fifth level till the end. “Shi Xiaobai” had exhorted them to protect Ka Xiaozi well before he left, and now, having failed him, they could not give up revenge because of their guilt.

No matter how powerful the enemy was, they had to fight!

When Shi Xiaobai saw about ten rookies advancing forward instead of retreating, coming to the forefront of the crowd, he was slightly moved.

Obviously, he had chosen to kill the black-robed youth first to ‘serve as a warning’ to the rookies that had surrounded him, to make them fear him.

Clearly, he had succeeded as a vast majority of the rookies retreated because of the illusion that there existed a huge gap in strength.

Furthermore, the Absolute Choice did not declare failure after his killing of the black-robed youth.

It was possible that the black-robed youth did not arrive in Dragon Mountain Valley when the Absolute Choice appeared, or it

was even possible that the black-robed youth was not even considered a 'rookie'.

However, these were not things that Shi Xiaobai cared about at that very moment. He had killed the black-robed youth with a single knife strike, stopping the momentum of the attack of the surrounding rookies, but Mu Yuesheng and company had not given up nor retreated.

Everything had developed according to his guesses and ideal situation, but what followed was key.

He had to investigate where Ka Xiaozi was!

Why did the rookies see him as a dragon!

Shi Xiaobai took a step forward and nearly stumbled to the ground.

Heh, the cartilage in his knees had been chewed through by the blood-colored worms. He could not even stand properly!

...

...

On the dark cloud concealed in the sky.

The white-masked aristocrat, the dual-blade demon, the lion-headed demonic beast, and the gigantic Nightmare Terror were each standing in four different directions. In the middle of them, there was an array formation consisting of golden lines.

The four monsters were situated at four corners of an array formation. They were like conduit columns that connected the golden lines together.

As pillars of the array formation, the four monsters were immobile, but they were looking at the forest below them.

Suddenly, the dual-blade demon spoke, "Killing the black-haired youth is your Plan F?"

The white-masked aristocrat said with a nod, "That's right."

The dual-blade demon fell silent for a moment before asking, "This human is rather unique, but what good does killing him have to do with killing this pixie? The God Slaughtering Formation can only trap her for about ten minutes. What are we to do after ten minutes?"

At this moment, the lion-headed demonic beast said with a heavy voice, "I think we will all get screwed by Aristocrat. By killing this human, the pixie will only be further enraged. Ten minutes later, we will die even more miserably."

The gigantic Nightmare Terror said with a heavy voice, "I asked

you of the plan previously, but you said there was no time to explain. Are you trying to kill us all? If I knew your plan were so dumb, I would have never agreed.”

When the white-masked aristocrat noticed how the other two monsters were condemning it, it immediately said angrily, “Fools! What short-sighted bastards! Think carefully. This pixie has to be on full alert every second while imprisoned in the God Slaughtering Formation due to the killer moves within. If we were to project the youth’s wretched state into the God Slaughtering Formation, with the feelings the pixie has for that youth, wouldn’t she be distracted? If the youth were killed, to the point of having his closest companions tear him apart, what do you think the pixie’s outcome would be? Pixies are emotional creatures. They have the purest of emotions. Therefore, they are also the easiest to collapse mentally! When the time comes, her mind will be in disarray, so she will definitely not be able to defend against the attacks of the God Slaughtering Formation.”

The white-masked aristocrat’s words made the other two monsters fall into silence. What it said did sound rather reasonable.

The gigantic Nightmare Terror could not help but mumble, “What if the pixie survives it?”

The white-masked aristocrat said with a sneer, “There is always a possibility in everything. Do you think there is an absolute method to kill the pixie? No, if you can provide a method that has a higher success rate than mine, I won’t say a second word. I’ll kneel down before you and call you daddy.”

Obviously, the gigantic Nightmare Terror couldn't think of anything, so he said embarrassedly, "Hmph, boorish Aristocrat."

"Enough."

The dual-blade demon shouted to stop the silly argument. It said, "Killing the pixie with only the four of us was extremely difficult to begin with. Taking some risks is only natural. What Aristocrat proposed has greatly increased our prospects for success, and having already gone so far, we can only wait silently for the outcome."

And at this moment, in the woods, Shi Xiaobai had killed the black-robed youth with a single knife strike. The rookies began to retreat in fear.

The monsters looked at each other blankly.

The gigantic Nightmare Terror sneered, "Your plan is very reasonable, but what use is it? From the looks of it, it would be pretty good if all these people aren't killed. How can that human be killed?"

The lion-headed demonic beast said in panic, "What do we do? How can this black-haired youth be so strong. None of us can move, so who can kill him?"

The white-masked aristocrat said with a heavy tone, "This



human has indeed taken me by surprise. I have to say that he has astounded me several times, but it's fine. Aristocrats always leave a trick up their sleeves. He won't live."

The dual-blade demon also said with a sneer, "You might not have noticed. The youth might look calm, but he is actually severely injured. There's no need for Aristocrat's trick. I can let him die now. Don't forget this is a world I preside over. In this world, I have ten thousand ways to let him die."

The white-masked aristocrat chuckled and said, "Remember to let the youth die miserably. Let the pixie watch with her own eyes the tragic death of her loved one. I refuse to believe that she will be able to calmly defend against the attacks of the God Slaughtering Formation. Heh heh, to think a peerless mighty figure sealed herself to the Psionic Mortal Realm. She would pay the terrible price for her foolishness."

...

# Chapter 324: The Light In A Hopeless Situation

---

Shi Xiaobai's instakill of the black-robed youth created an extremely strong deterrent. It made a vast majority of the rookies to vanquish the idea of surrounding the 'dragon'. However, the black-robed youth's self-destruction before death had caused him to pay a tragic price.

If not for 'Unleaking Turtle Aura' allowing him to persist on, he might not even be able to stand up straight. However, Shi Xiaobai presented an image that he was as stable as a bedrock, an illusion that he was uninjured when he instakilled the black-robed youth, making the rookies believe that this dragon was not something they could mess with.

It was within Shi Xiaobai's expectations that a vast majority would retreat a few steps.

Mu Yuesheng and company's advancement was also within his expectations.

Shi Xiaobai sighed softly as he felt embroiled in mixed emotions. He obviously would not blame the rookies who were trying to kill him. After all, he was a dragon in their eyes that had eaten Ka Xiaozi. However, for him to fight his partners in a life and death battle would be somewhat depressing regardless of the reason.

“Sorry, This King needs to calm all of you down.”

Shi Xiaobai shifted the black sword into his right hand and said to the few people standing in front of the crowd. He could only settle the situation of him being pursued before he could untangle the curiosities of the situation. For this, he had to make Mu Yuesheng and company lose their ability to fight without harming their lives.

However, in the rookies' ears, what Shi Xiaobai said was just a dragon's roar.

Shi Xiaobai gave a self-deprecating smile and did not speak further. He waited silently for the few people to attack him.

Without waiting for long, the attacks came as though they were scheduled.

The first to reach him was still Mu Yuesheng's electric bolt. Shi Xiaobai did not dodge, but clashed at it with a slash of his sword.

“Boom!”

The sword beam and electric bolt clashed in mid-air before exploding.

Amid the explosive rumbles, a sonic blast surged at him. It was An Mo's flute music!

“Indeed, the tune sucks.”

Shi Xiaobai cursed in a way no one could understand. He ignored the flute’s tune. The flute tune which was intolerable to others had no effect on him.

As the flute tunes permeated the air, a gigantic boulder came flying over.

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up and he slashed at the boulder. As the stone fragments crumbled after the boulder shattered, he sensed the surging power in it.

Shi Xiaobai raised his sword to block as he took a tiny step back.

“Haha, nice one.”

This was the first time Shi Xiaobai saw Kevin’s boulder throwing move. Immediately he found it very fresh and innovative. It had synergized with Kevin’s superpower, allowing him to pave a brand new road for himself. Shi Xiaobai could not help but be happy for him.

At this moment, an inferno trail swept at him!

“It has improved!”

Shi Xiaobai gave an exclamatory praise. He felt that Mozzie’s

Grilling Hammer had made considerable progress, having not wasted his teachings.

Shi Xiaobai grinned and slashed out again. Sword beams transformed into shimmering water waves that engulfed the inferno. With sizzling sounds, the flames turned into billowing steam.

This strike was the Kun Peng's Sword of Water he had stolen from Heartless!

Steam billowed and turned into white mist. In the lingering mist, dozens of golden charms fell from the sky, surrounding Shi Xiaobai. The charms glowed with a golden luminosity, as though they were gathering strength.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and endured the pain in his knees. Like a top, he spun around causing sword beams to swirl into a tornado that swept the Daoist charms.

Using Bladestorm, the dozens of charms were torn apart, dropping to the ground as paper shreds.

At this moment, an armored youth charged forward. He held one gigantic shield in each of his hands. He was crying out loudly and had quite an imposing stance, but it was rather humorous as well.

“Not bad.”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up. His judgment said that the two gigantic shields had to be extremely hard.

Shi Xiaobai raised his sword as golden points of light began emerging out of the ground, gathering towards the black sword, enveloping it with a faint golden luster.

Shi Xiaobai had activated the power of his Sword Truth, slashing out twice!

A golden 'X'-shaped flame surged at Feng Yuanlin's shields.

The flames collided with the shield as sword beams effervesced in the flames, cracking every inch of the shield's rough surface. Feng Yuanlin's expression changed drastically as he released the shields and retreated. He swore, "The flames the darn dragon spews are toxic."

The rookies standing back looked at each other. They could read the lingering fears they had in each other. They obviously could not hear Shi Xiaobai's laughter and praises. All they heard was the 'dragon' roaring disdainfully while demolishing the powerful rookies' attacks. The 'dragon' indeed had formidable strength.

The people standing in the forefront focused more. The dragon was truly too powerful, it was no wonder it could instantly kill the black-robed youth. However, they could not retreat because of this.

Icy-blue bolts of lightning flashed around Mu Yuesheng. With a step forward, electric bolts shot towards Shi Xiaobai like snakes that meandered across the ground.

“This shall be the end of defense.”

Shi Xiaobai gripped his sword tightly. He did not have the time to carry on defending.

Shi Xiaobai took a step forward and was ready to attack!

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai felt his heart jump. He sensed an extremely hidden danger as he turned sideways and slashed.

This strike clearly was struck in empty air, but a scream resounded immediately.

However, the tingling sense of danger did not disappear. Instead, it became even more intense. Shi Xiaobai hurriedly used Bladestorm, causing sword beams to twirl around in mid-air in a 360° style without any blind spots. Collision sounds constantly resounded as incessant tragic cries were heard. Blood constantly dripped from mid-air, as though it was raining blood.

Shi Xiaobai smiled wryly in his heart. This scene was very familiar. Shi Xiaobai immediately worked out that for some reason, the invisible monsters in the mountain valley had appeared here. Furthermore, it was not one or two, but in large swarms.

Were these invisible monsters here to kill him?

At this moment, dozens of electric bolts that came biting at him like snakes had arrived beneath Shi Xiaobai's feet.

Shi Xiaobai clenched his teeth and leaped to dodge the electric bolts. He thrust his sword towards the ground, blasting the electric bolts with an intense sword beam.

At this moment, the invisible monsters launched another attack.

Shi Xiaobai could only sense these invisible monsters only at the last instant when they were about to attack him. He had leaped into mid-air, and with his sword used to parry the electric bolts, he could not put up a perfect defense.

Shi Xiaobai could only use his right arm that had metamorphosed into a "Qilin arm" to block the monster's jaw that was about to bite his head off. With full strength, he charged forward.

The defense level of his left arm and two legs were not considered high. The moment he was bitten by a few invisible monsters, he bled.

Shi Xiaobai winced in pain. Even Unleaking Turtle Aura was unable to inhibit the pain of his flesh being eaten.



“Die!”

Shi Xiaobai attacked angrily and slashed madly at the invisible monster that was chasing him from behind.

Shi Xiaobai could not precisely judge the location of the invisible monster, so he could only activate the power of his Sword Truth and slash around wildly. Sharp and indomitable sword beams sliced through the air as screams reverberated through the world, while blood poured like a torrential storm.

Shi Xiaobai slashed at the swarm of invisible monsters in an incensed manner. The rookies watched flabbergasted because in their eyes, it appeared as though there were invisible monsters attacking the dragon in swarms. A few clumps of meat had been bitten off from the dragon. It was covered in blood as it killed the invisible monsters like it had gone mad. The state of madness it was in was chilling.

There were some rookies who began cheering for the invisible monsters. From their point of view, these invisible monsters were here to help them kill the dragon.

The dragon was absurdly powerful. They could only hear the incessant cries as blood continuously rained down. The invisible monsters were being massacred by the maniacal dragon.

Shi Xiaobai was immersed on a killing spree as his mind began to lose its clarity. Having been seriously injured by the black-robed youth's blood worms, he was now embroiled in an intense

slaughter with the invisible monsters. His body was on the brink of collapse.

Of course, he could not rest. He did not even have a second for a breather because the moment he stopped, he would die.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes turned red as an inexplicable foulness arose in his heart.

As the cries of the invisible monsters dwindled, Shi Xiaobai sensed an extremely horrifying danger about to befall him, one worse than ever before.

Shi Xiaobai could only raise his sword above his head based on his intuition!

“Clang!”

The sounds of heavy metal clashing resounded, as though the sword had been lodged by something suddenly. It was bending and nearly broke.

Drops of viscous fluids dripped down on Shi Xiaobai's head, drenching his body. There was a stench that exuded from the viscous fluid.

Shi Xiaobai frowned deeply. If he had not guessed wrongly, this was the dragon.

The invisible dragon that he had sent running had appeared above him during the chaos. It had tried to devour him. If not for him raising his sword to jam the dragon's jaws, he would probably have been swallowed by the dragon.

The dragon's bite was impressively powerful. Furthermore, it did not seem like it would give up unless it devoured Shi Xiaobai. Shi Xiaobai began to feel the pressure. He could only raise his sword to forcibly resist, but his body could no longer move.

At this moment, the rookies were sharp to notice that the 'dragon' had been restrained. They immediately wanted to add insult to injury by launching a flurry of attacks.

“Kill the dragon!”

“Save Ka Xiaozi!”

“Avenge Ka Xiaozi!”

“...”

The rookies clamored. With the opportunity in front of them, they could not miss it!

A long-distance attacks were immediately aimed at Shi Xiaobai, who was unable to move due to the deadlock with the dragon!

“Is this the end?”

A wry smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips. He was not one who easily gave up. But at this moment in time, there was no other way.

This was a truly hopeless situation, with real death befalling him.

Being killed by people he had gone to great effort to save seemed rather ironic.

Shi Xiaobai sighed. He did not close his eyes, but only waited calmly for his impending death.

As the attacks that filled the sky descended upon him, the invisible dragon seemed oblivious about the attacks the rookies had launched at it. It was as though it was of the mind to die together with Shi Xiaobai in an internecine struggle. It was gripping Shi Xiaobai with the jaws tightly as it tried its best to snap its jaws shut.

Shi Xiaobai no longer had any means of escaping.

At this moment in time, a beam of light descended. In mid-air, a figure walked out of the light.

Instantly, all the attacks vanished.

Invisible monsters that filled the sky wailed tragically and in the next moment ugly gray drakes fell from the sky.

The dragon that was biting on Shi Xiaobai let out a tragic cry before collapsing backwards, revealing its original form. Its body was burnt to a crisp and looked extremely miserable. There was no way to recognize it.

Instantly, the situation reversed.

Everyone looked up at the figure that walked out of the light which had saved the ‘dragon’.

The person was a beautiful young girl wearing a purple dress.

“Ka Xiaozi?”

Someone exclaimed in wonder.

Shi Xiaobai looked up as well as his pupils violently contracted as his heart skipped a beat.

“You...”

...

# Chapter 325: You Raged For This King, This King Will Commit Suicide For You

---

On the dark cloud, the four monsters were staring intently at the situation in the forest. Shi Xiaobai's stubborn resistance made them turn slightly nervous. If they went to such great efforts without being able to kill a human at the Psionic Mortal Realm, they might as well take a piece of tofu to smash their heads to death.

When the invisible dragon that had been lurking for a long time suddenly sneaked up on Shi Xiaobai, it had caused him to raise his sword to block. The rookies added insult to injury and immediately attacked with a myriad of deathblows. Only then did the four monsters finally heave a sigh of relief.

The white-masked aristocrat shouted, "Nice!"

The way he cheered looked as though the sports team he was supporting had made a touchdown at the final second.

However, before the other three monsters had the time to engage in 'festivities', the golden light on their bodies began to tremble violently.

"What's the matter?"

The dual-blade demon's expression immediately turned unsettled.

“Boom!”

The golden array formation in the middle of the four monsters suddenly exploded, as the four golden pillars collapsed. The four monsters were immediately sent flying and they had their expressions changed drastically.

The dual-blade demon said in disbelief, “The God Slaughtering Formation has been destroyed!?”

The white-masked aristocrat said in horror, “How can it be possible? It’s only been a few minutes. How can the God Slaughtering Formation be destroyed in such a manner?”

But the next scene that followed revealed a cruel reality. A beam of light suddenly appeared in the forest, causing all the smoke to disperse. All the invisible drakes cried out before dying, while the dragon was burnt to a crisp.

As for the purple-dressed girl standing in the middle of the light, who else could it be but the pixie who had been imprisoned in the God Slaughtering Formation?

“Shit, she broke through the formation.”

“How did she do it?”

“Sigh, we overlooked something. She’s a pixie, a holy pixie.”

“Are you saying... How can it be possible? She is willing to go that far for this human?”

The four monsters immediately turned flustered, like a cat on hot bricks.

The gigantic Nightmare Terror said in horror, “For her to go so far for a human, it shows how deep her feelings for the human are. She definitely knows we are the masterminds behind this matter. We’re doomed. She will definitely kill us.”

The lion-headed demonic beast said in panic, “Fuck, all of this is because of the darn Aristocrat’s idea. Now, what do we do? We were never her match to begin with. Now, we can’t do anything to her. Are we going to sit still and wait for death?”

The dual-blade demon said with a serious tone, “Calm down, all of you!”

The dual-blade demon looked at the aristocrat and said with a deep breath, “The wise Aristocrat must have left a way out for all of us. Aristocrat, I believe you have already contemplated what to do if the plan were to fail. Tell us about the follow-up plan.”

The white-masked aristocrat fell silent for a second before saying, “That’s right, I do have a trick up my sleeve.”



The eyes of the three monsters immediately lit up, as though they had seen a glimmer of light in the darkness.

The white-masked aristocrat took a step back and said calmly, “The final trick up my sleeve is...when disaster befalls, everyone runs. Goodbye, fellow idiots!”

Just as the white-masked aristocrat’s voice faded away, a black hole suddenly appeared behind him. Instantly, the white-masked aristocrat entered the black hole and disappeared.

“Dimensional Teleportation!”

The dual-blade demon’s face turned pale as he said coldly, “That bastard. He actually used a precious Dimensional Teleportation to escape.”

“What a treacherous Aristocrat.”

The gigantic Nightmare Terror sneered, “Foolish demon.”

Once it said that, a black hole appeared behind the gigantic Nightmare Terror. Instantly, it entered it. The lion-headed demonic beast did not say another word. It used its Dimensional Teleportation to return to the second level it presided over.

Dimensional Teleportation was a means the assessment program gave every Level Lord a way to be quickly sent back to the world they presided. Every Level Lord was given three chances. It was

used to prevent any emergency situations from happening when a Level Lord left their worlds.

As for the white-masked aristocrat, the gigantic Nightmare Terror, the lion-headed demonic beast, they were not the Level Lords of the sixth level. They were using Dimensional Teleportation to make an emergency teleport back to the level they presided over.

“Fuck, then what do I do?”

The dual-blade demon realized the most cruel of facts. His Dimensional Teleportation could only send him to the sixth level. There was no difference at all. The three of them could escape using Dimensional Teleportation, but it could not do a thing.

“Fucking Aristocrat, I’ll fuck your entire family!”

The dual-blade demon began cursing with all sorts of invectives. He was aware of his destiny. When the pixie was assured that the injured human was fine, she would seek revenge, and its demise would descend upon it. At this moment, it could only pray that he could die a quick death.

The dual-blade demon said hysterically, “Bunch of wretches, do you think you can get away? You can run for a moment, but not forever. You will not be able to escape the pixie’s grasp. I’ll wait for you in hell!”

...

...

Above the woods was a beautiful girl wearing a purple dress. She had walked out of the light, and with a wave of her hand, neutralized all attacks and killed all the drakes and the invisible dragon. Who else could that beautiful face and body belong to but Ka Xiaozi?

Ka Xiaozi descended from the sky and very quickly flew beside Shi Xiaobai. Her eyes were as though her heartstrings had been tugged. With a gentle wave of her hand, light scattered downwards and enveloped Shi Xiaobai. The profusely bleeding wounds immediately began recovering at an astounding rate.

“Kali?”

Shi Xiaobai softly asked.

Ka Xiaozi’s petite body trembled before giving a warm smile. With a terse acknowledgment, she whispered, “Will you blame me for deceiving you?”

Ka Xiaozi was naturally Kali. Although be it her aura, strength or personality being different, or even from the very beginning when she used a golden beam of light to descend into this world portraying herself as a rookie, the sincere and deep feelings she had could not be hidden. Shi Xiaobai had been suspicious for a long

time now.

Seeing Kali walking out of the light and how invincible she was with a wave of her hand, it was impossible to not guess her identity.

Shi Xiaobai found it slightly funny. He never expected that the third fan that claimed to idolize him was just like Chen Lingcun and Ye Jiaquan. It was fake as well. However, he definitely would not be infuriated by this. Instead, he was moved.

Shi Xiaobai gently shook his head, indicating that he did not blame Kali. However, his expression looked particularly ugly. His eyes were filled with worry. Shi Xiaobai whispered, “Your hair?”

At this moment, Kali was still having the appearance of Ka Xiaozi. However, the pink hair was now silverish-white in color.

Be it Ka Xiaozi’s originally purple long hair or the purple dress she was currently wearing, and even the name she had given herself, “Ka Xiaozi” (Little Purple), Kali was clearly fond of the color purple. But at this moment, her hair had somehow changed into silverish-white.

Besides...

Shi Xiaobai felt an ominous foreboding.

Kali said softly, “I like the color white. Why? Is silver ugly? Or do

you prefer purple or pink hair?”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, “They are all nice, but...”

At this moment, the astounded rookies finally managed to speak. In their eyes, Ka Xiaozi had suddenly descended, saving the dragon. She had even began chatting with the dragon. However, they could not understand the roars the dragon was making.

The rookies began asking:

“Ka Xiaozi, why did you save the dragon?”

“Didn’t the dragon just...”

“...”

When Kali heard this, her gentle and warm expression immediately turned extremely cold. With eyes filled with rage, she waved her hand as a light swept across everyone.

“Open up your eyes well and see who is the person you were trying to kill!”

Kali’s voice exuded a coldness colder than the ice and snow during winter. Although she knew that the rookies had been placed under an illusion, she was still feeling anger from the lingering fear that Shi Xiaobai had nearly been killed.

With the illusion removed, everyone could finally see the true nature of the dragon they were attacking. Immediately, they felt like struck by lightning. The faces of Mu Yuesheng and company turned pale. Their eyes were filled with disbelief and lingering fear.

Shi Xiaobai looked at everyone and gently said, “Don’t blame yourselves. It wasn’t your fault. Someone created an illusion, making all of you mistake This King for a dragon. All of you did the right thing. The ones at fault are the masterminds behind this plot.”

“Sorry.”

The people in the forefront turned pale. They kept apologizing as their eyes were filled with remorse.

At this moment, Kali looked up at the sky and coldly said, “Trying to escape?”

Kali turned to give Shi Xiaobai a glance. Seeing how his injuries were stabilizing, she whispered, “Rest for a moment. Those few fools are trying to escape. I’ll capture them and leave them at your disposal.”

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly asked, “Who are those fools? Where did you go just now?”

Kali shook her head gently and did not respond. Clearly, she did not want to reveal too many details regarding the God Slaughtering Formation. She did not wish for Shi Xiaobai to worry, so she whispered, “Just a few silly clowns.”

Kali did not explain, nor did she give Shi Xiaobai a chance to inquire. Turning around, she walked into the light, clearly to pursue the masterminds behind this plot.

Shi Xiaobai gave a slight wry smile before heaving a deep sigh.

He knew that things could not be so simple.

Shi Xiaobai thought for a moment before he turned around and left the rookies that were filled with guilt.

...

Shi Xiaobai naturally didn't ‘storm away’, but to find a place where there wasn't anyone.

After finding a secluded spot, Shi Xiaobai stretched out his left hand's finger and began prodding the back of his right hand.

The golden pattern on the back of his right hand flickered vigorously a few times before a grumbling voice of a loli resounded from the back of his hand, “Big Brother, stop poking!”

A golden light bloomed as a snow-white loli wearing a white dress appeared. Her arms were held akimbo, while she pouted. She looked very cute and adorable.

Shi Xiaobai choked back the desire to squeeze the cute face and gently asked, “This King knows you are well-read. Can you tell This King...why Kali’s hair turned silverish-white? Also, why does her body have...”

“An aura of darkness.”

The loli continued Shi Xiaobai’s sentence which he had stopped midway. She said in a childish voice, “What you felt wasn’t wrong. That is indeed an aura of darkness. You happen to ask the right person. This Sword Spirit knows exactly what happened to her.”

The corners of Shi Xiaobai’s mouth suffused a wry smile. For some reason, he was very sensitive to auras of darkness and light. The first time he met Kali, he had a strong desire to stay close to her because of the purity and richness of the aura of light her body exuded.

But just now, he was surprised to sense a faint aura of darkness from Kali’s body. The pureness of light had been tainted by darkness.

In addition to the silverish-white hair, Shi Xiaobai had an ominous foreboding. In order to not make him worry, Kali had chosen not to speak the truth. Therefore, the person he could inquire was the sword spirit.



But thankfully, the sword spirit knew what had happened.

“Can you tell This King?”

Shi Xiaobai’s words had a pleading tone to them. He was very worried for Kali.

“Hmph, even if you had forbidden me to say, I would definitely have said it. That Big Sister made a huge sacrifice for you, but you didn’t know a thing. It’s so unfair.”

The loli said loudly, “Big Brother, firstly, you have to know something. Big Sister is not a human, but a pixie. And since time immemorial, pixies have two camps—holy pixies and fallen pixies. These two pixies are arch-enemies, hating each other’s existence. As for Big Sister, she was a pure holy pixie.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai’s heart skipped a beat as he said in disbelief, “Do you mean...”

The loli nodded with a deadpan expression and said, “That’s right. Big Sister is no longer a pure holy pixie. She will soon turn into a fallen pixie. That aura of darkness exists for real. That is the power of ‘corruption’ which is currently eroding the power of light that fills her body.”

Shi Xiaobai’s face turned pale as he hurriedly asked, “Why did she become like this?”

The loli snorted and said, “It was all in order to save you! The reason why holy pixies would undergo ‘corruption’ to become fallen pixies is because of obtaining a forbidden power. This power might come from wrath, greed, lust, envy, etc. That Big Sister needed power to save you, so she accepted the power of ‘corruption’ from wrath. That silverish-white hair of hers is proof of her ‘corruption’. There have been several cases in history of pixies being corrupted due to wrath. People call it—Pixie Raging.”

Shi Xiaobai’s face turned paler upon hearing this, especially when he heard the last two words the loli had said. It felt like he was struck by lightning.

Pixie Raging!

Shi Xiaobai suddenly thought of the second choice in the Absolute Choice, [ Prevent Ka Xiaozi from raging ].

So...raging meant this!

At this moment, the loli loudly said, “Holy pixies value their power of light higher than their lives. Typically, they would rather choose death than choose to rage. This is because corrupted pixies would become mutated monsters like humans. Even they can’t stand themselves. However, in order to save you, Big Sister was willing to give herself up. She was really too good to you. And with the matter done, there is no way to reverse the situation. You must treat her well in the future and live up to her devotion towards you. If you ever let her down, I’ll definitely not forgive you!”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, a relieved smile suffused across his pale face. He softly said, “Is there really no way to reverse the situation?”

Shi Xiaobai’s voice turned gentler than the spring’s wind.

At this moment, he finally understood why the Absolute Choice had given him such choices. It was because it was one of the choices.

If he did not guess wrongly, when Ka Xiaozi successfully hunted the masterminds, the choice of saving all the rookies would be declared successful. When the time came, he would have succeeded at Choice 1, but that was under the premise that Choice 2, [ Prevent Ka Xiaozi from raging ] would fail.

Saving all the rookies and preventing Ka Xiaozi from raging. It was the one or the other choice. At this moment, he had finally come to the fork in the road.

When the Absolute Choice declared his success, it would be too late to redeem the situation. When that happened, all the rookies would be saved, while Kali would rage because of saving him, turning into a fallen pixie.

But at this moment in time, the Absolute Choice had not been completed. This meant that there was redemption in all of this!

As long as there was a failure during Choice 1.

As long as the choice of saving all the rookies failed at this moment, everything could still be redeemed!

A resolute look flashed in Shi Xiaobai's eyes!

“Ah!”

The loli screamed as she saw a psionic knife suddenly appear in Shi Xiaobai's hand. Suddenly, at a speed that left no time for one to cover one's ears, he had stabbed it into his own heart.

This strike was determined, decisive and without any hesitation. It did not slow down, it was direct, resolute and clean.

Instantly, it stabbed into Shi Xiaobai's heart.

A smile suffused across Shi Xiaobai's lips as he met death with a smile.

Since the Absolute Choice said to save all the rookies in Dragon Mountain Valley, and he was a rookie, he was one of the targets to be saved.

If he died, the Absolute Choice would fail. Everything would repeat, wouldn't it?

Kali!

Ka Xiaozi!

You raged for This King, This King will commit suicide for you!

...

# Chapter 326: You Must Return Safely As Well

---

“Make your choice, youth!”

The fiery voice resounded in his mind as Shi Xiaobai looked at the three choices in front of him while being lost in thought.

Ka Xiaozi was Kali and raging meant Pixie Raging, the acceptance of the power of corruption.

Shi Xiaobai chose to commit suicide to repeat everything. The goal was clear, he wanted to prevent Kali from raging.

But in the previous time loop, there were still many questions that remained unanswered.

Why did Kali suddenly vanish?

Why did the rookies fall into a hallucination where he was a dragon?

Who was the mastermind behind this?

With Kali's strength, why did she need the power of corruption to save him?

Shi Xiaobai was not omniscient like God. Everything he could see from his position was a haze, one which was dense and impenetrable.

Shi Xiaobai considered for a long while, failing to come up with anything. Only when the countdown began did Shi Xiaobai choose Choice 2, prevent Ka Xiaozi from raging.

Shi Xiaobai was a selfless person. He could silently save everyone without asking for anything in return, even if they were strangers.

However, Shi Xiaobai was also a selfish person. When Kali and saving everyone was placed on the same scales, Shi Xiaobai would lean towards the former.

He would still do his best to protect all the rookies, but if there were any rookie who succumbed due to their own silly acts, he would force himself to be cold-blooded unless the rookie was Mu Yuesheng, Mozzie and company in order to prevent Kali from raging.

...

Time repeated again. The pink-haired Ka Xiaozi was still like a timid and lovable girl standing beside Shi Xiaobai. The rookies were currently in the mountain valley, discussing the oddness of it and debating over where the dragon had gone to.

Shi Xiaobai looked to his side at Ka Xiaozi. After determining that

she was Kali, the look in Shi Xiaobai's eyes changed slightly.

Ka Xiaozi was apparently very sensitive, allowing her to obviously sense the change in his eyes. Immediately, she asked out of curiosity, "Why?"

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment as he whispered, "You might not believe it, but in fact This King..."

Since Ka Xiaozi was Kali, with Kali's powers, she could definitely weed out the masterminds ahead of time. She could use her absolute strength to nip the plot in the bud.

Then, the easiest way to solve this matter was to tell Kali what had happened in the previous timeline. She could definitely solve all the problems.

Pixie Raging might not necessarily be physically painful, but it was definitely a psychological torment. Even if he had to use the most cheesy means, Shi Xiaobai absolutely choose not to let Kali experience such psychological pain. Therefore, he decided to tell her about the Absolute Choice.

However, the moment Shi Xiaobai opened his mouth, time came to a halt. Everything in front of him turned still once again.

A cold voice resounded in his mind:

"It is forbidden to reveal any details of other timelines or the



actions of the Absolute Choice. If breached, everything would repeat.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised, but not overly alarmed. In fact, he was mentally prepared. This was the first time he had decided on using the strength of others to complete the Absolute Choice, but he had the opinion from the beginning that this was equivalent to cheating, and doubted if it would be allowed.

Clearly, the Absolute Choice wished for Shi Xiaobai to be able to independently solve the difficulty he was facing.

Time paused for a minute before it continued.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent. Since he could not leverage the power of Kali, he had to rely on himself to resolve the predicament he was in.

“Oh?”

Ka Xiaozi puzzledly gave a ‘yea’, when she noticed how Shi Xiaobai stopped mid sentence.

Only then did Shi Xiaobai react as he whispered, “In fact, This King...has the nagging feeling that something is hidden somewhere, spying on us.”

Ka Xiaozi blinked her eyes and softly said, “Is that so? I don’t feel it.”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent. She actually played the fool with him. Alright, you win.

Clearly, Kali did not think highly of the masterminds.

“Even a wise man sometimes makes a mistake. Although This King is powerful, there are always conspiracies that are beyond This King’s expectations. Therefore, this spying feeling makes This King especially uncomfortable. Even if they are just silly clowns, This King will choose to strike first if he discovers them, to prevent the worst.”

Shi Xiaobai seemed to be talking to himself, and appeared to be posturing, but in fact, he was insinuating Kali, warning her that even the conspiracies of silly clowns should be nipped in the bud.

When Ka Xiaozi heard this, she ruminated for a moment, but it was unknown if she took it to heart.

Shi Xiaobai did not speak further. Since the Absolute Choice had limited him to resolve the situation himself, Shi Xiaobai was not idiotic enough to try to look for loopholes.

The reason why Kali raged was clearly a result of him being caught in a sure-death situation. Kali could only save him by raging.

In other words, to prevent Kali from raging, the simplest and

most direct method was to ensure his own safety.

...

Shi Xiaobai had a rough plan in his mind. Just like before, he hollered for the rookies to leave the mountain valley.

First of all, he had to save the farting youth and the youth that was running naked. Even though they were pig-like teammates, Shi Xiaobai wouldn't go as far as abandoning them.

But this time, not only did Shi Xiaobai use the Massage Technique of God to inhibit the urge of the farting youth's farting, he had also made him unconscious.

The farting youth was caught off guard. He felt Shi Xiaobai press his shoulder a few times before suddenly feeling very tired. Very naturally, he closed his eyes.

This farting youth had previously released a repugnant fart in the valley, causing the invisible monsters to attack him. Later on, he spat outside the valley, causing the wrath of the dragon. He was a pig-like teammate out of pig-like teammates. Having had a moment of thought, Shi Xiaobai decided to let the wretched youth take a nap, saving him from trouble later.

This time, Shi Xiaobai was in no hurry to leave. Instead, he waited till everyone left the valley before giving a few words of exhortation. Only then, did he rush into the woods.

Shi Xiaobai very quickly found the naked youth, which happened to be the moment the black-robed youth arrived.

The black-robed youth was feeling angered by the disgusting scene in front of him, and having also seen Shi Xiaobai, it was extremely incensed.

Shi Xiaobai did not say a word either and rushed towards the black-robed youth!

A psionic knife appeared in Shi Xiaobai's hand!

The black-robed youth waved his crimson sickle, but even if it was a different timeline, there was no difference to the outcome of the battle.

The black-robed youth's power of darkness and power of bloodlust were too weak to withstand the Pig Slaughtering Knife.

Just like before, Shi Xiaobai's knife pierced through the sanguinary storm, shattering the crimson barrier, and continued thrusting straight at the black-robed youth's chest!

“Then let's die together!”

The black-robed youth's eyes turned ferocious as it chose to self-destruct. Even in death, it wanted to grab Shi Xiaobai to enter hell

together.

“Die by yourself.”

Shi Xiaobai sneered. At the moment the knife stabbed the black-robed youth's chest, Shi Xiaobai had already darted away like a hare before the knife stabbed the heart.

Previously, Shi Xiaobai could only rely on his inkling for danger to barely dodge in time. This time, he already knew of the black-robed youth's ruthless means, so how would he be dumb enough to wait for his self-destruction?

“No!”

The black-robed youth's eyes were filled with disbelief. His face was one of rage, resentment, and indignation. The knife had yet to pierce his heart. He was still alive.

But...because he believed he was sure to die, his self-destruct mechanism had already been activated.

“Boom!”

The black-robed youth blew himself up as drops of blood scattered everywhere in the forest. It caused the trees, ground, and rocks to turn charred black, a ruined mess everywhere.

However, Shi Xiaobai had already escaped more than a few hundred meters away, and was left completely unharmed.

The naked youth was awestruck.

An instakill of the black-robed youth. How was Shi Xiaobai so awesome?

“Big Brother Shi Xiaobai, please accept my kneel!”

The naked youth nearly knelt before Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai was silent. Bro, This King will be very satisfied if you just put on your clothes.

...

The blood worms that formed after the black-robed youth's self-destruct had previously caused great distress to Shi Xiaobai. The blood worms had chewed through the ligaments in his knee, limiting his mobility. It resulted in him being unable to use Crab Steps to dodge the attacks of the invisible monsters and the dragon.

Now, by eliminating the black-robed youth first, it could be considered as him removing an uncertain factor.

Shi Xiaobai very quickly brought the naked youth back to the

valley exterior. At this moment, the farting youth was still unconscious. No one spat, so it naturally did not trigger the wrath of the dragon. As such, the crowd was in a rather safe situation.

The moment Shi Xiaobai returned to the valley exterior, he borrowed a sword from a girl.

The girl was clearly already an admirer of Shi Xiaobai. She was excited and delighted to lend her sword to Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai thanked her before turning to walk into the valley with extremely cold-looking eyes.

The rookies were mostly paying attention to Shi Xiaobai's actions, so they immediately followed when Shi Xiaobai entered the valley.

What followed left them astounded as they stood at the entrance to the valley.

They saw Shi Xiaobai holding a black sword in his right hand, and the borrowed sword in his left, he attacked with the swords in unison!

Shi Xiaobai had previously used a sword unison attack with Sunless. The power of that attack disrupted Sen Senyuan's deathblow and reduced him to a wretched state.

And at this moment in time, Shi Xiaobai had completed a sword

unison attack alone!

Shi Xiaobai's training of his left hand in the battles with Heartless at the fourth level now played its biggest role!

Right hand, Kun Peng's Sword of Fire!

Left hand, Kun Peng's Sword of Wind!

This was not only using swords in unison, it was also the integration of the Kun Peng Sword Technique. The power of the attack was beyond imagination!

Shi Xiaobai roared as he slashed out with both swords!

Wind and fire burst through the sky!

The inferno in the swirling winds formed a flaming hurricane that swept the sky in the valley!

Shrill screams resounded above the valley, giving everyone a scare.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes were cold as he mercilessly slashed out thousands of sword beams into the valley.

One charred and ugly monster after another died in the sea of



flames as they plummeted from the sky.

Damn monsters!

The flesh you have eaten, the bones you have gnawed, the blood you have drunk, vomit all of them out for This King!

You have previously bitten off heads and limbs. Every wound you left on This King's body is still remembered by This King!

Now, behold This King's wrath!

In a little more than three minutes, Shi Xiaobai alone with just two swords had wiped out all the invisible drakes in the valley!

Outside the valley, the dragon let out an indignant roar, but it did not dare to approach.

Everyone was left dumbfounded. Shi Xiaobai, who was like a demon king that engaged in a massacre, left them in awe.

Suddenly, someone exclaimed.

“The dragon...the dragon has appeared!”

“Ah! The dragon has devoured Shi Xiaobai!”

“No, quickly save Shi Xiaobai. Kill the dragon!”

“...”

Shi Xiaobai turned around silently.

There were charred corpses everywhere in the valley. Other than him, where was the dragon?

The expected illusion had appeared, but the script had changed.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed the crowd around him and sighed softly.

When everyone fell into a hallucination, Ka Xiaozi had indeed disappeared.

She had silently vanished.

Just like before, he did not know where she had gone to, but the way the masterminds had left Kali with no choice but to leave was ever so subtle.

“This time, I will also safely survive. You must return safely as well.”

Shi Xiaobai said to the air in a gentle whisper.

# Chapter 327: Don't Fucking Add Scenes For Yourself!

---

“The dragon has eaten Shi Xiaobai!”

The rookies exclaimed. Just a moment ago, they saw Shi Xiaobai engaging in a massacre, and the next moment, an ugly dragon suddenly appeared out of thin air, devouring Shi Xiaobai into its belly.

The crowd stared with widened eyes as their breathing stopped. They found the scene that had happened unbelievable. What was more unbelievable was that Shi Xiaobai did not struggle after being devoured, as though he was a rock that had sunk into the bottom of the ocean without even the slightest action.

Shi Xiaobai was devoured by a dragon. Was he dead just like that?

“No!”

In the next moment, many people had their eyes red.

“Kill the dragon, save Shi Xiaobai!”

Everyone was filled with panic and anger as they rushed into the valley, prepared to slaughter the dragon, rip out its stomach and save the devoured Shi Xiaobai.

Even if he were dead, they wanted to see his corpse!

Shi Xiaobai looked at the flustered and furious expressions the crowd had and immediately felt somewhat moved. Even though the 'dragon' they wanted to kill was him, he was still more happy than sad.

This time, there was no black-robed youth for Shi Xiaobai to kill to instill fear in their hearts. Furthermore, in the hallucination, the person devoured by the dragon was 'Shi Xiaobai', so how could the rookies hold back. Their anger could not be restrained as their anxiety was consuming them.

Shi Xiaobai remained calm. With swords in both hands, he welcomed the crowd charging at him. Lifting his sword, he slashed out at the same time.

Right hand, Kun Peng's Sword of Wind!

Left hand, Kun Peng's Sword of Water!

A sword unison attack, with the Sword of Wind and Sword of Water perfectly harmonizing, the sky was immediately filled with snow and the ground was covered in frost!

The sword beams were domineering and the cold was chilling. The biting cold sword beams froze the rookies leading the charge. They could not help but shiver in cold.

The rookies charge was slowed down by Shi Xiaobai's Kun Peng Wind-Snow Sword.

At the same time, Shi Xiaobai took the initiative to rush towards the crowd.

With Crab Steps at the Crest of Perfection, this speed caught the rookies off guard. The constantly changing figures were dazzling.

“The dragon is coming!”

“It's so fast! How is the dragon so fast?”

“No, it's too cold. I can't move or withstand it!”

The rookies exclaimed. At this moment, the valley was filled with snow-wind sword beams. Their bodies had yet to acclimatize to the sudden biting chill in the air. Immediately, their actions turned sluggish, so there was no way for them to follow Shi Xiaobai.

They could only watch as the dragon in their eyes flew past their heads at an extremely fast speed.

But what shocked the rookies was that the dragon did not attack them. It only chose to escape.

That's not right, the dragon had taken a person away during the

chaos!

“Liuji (Naked Dick) has been abducted by the dragon!”

Someone knew the rookie that had been unfortunate enough to be abducted by the dragon as he immediately exclaimed aloud.

Most of the rookies did not know this person’s name, but they knew this person. He was the one who had derided Shi Xiaobai previously, and had been smacked in the face by Shi Xiaobai’s awesome one punch. He had then gone into the woods to run naked.

At this moment, the dragon had not forgotten to take Naked Dick with him.

Was the dragon that hungry?

So hungry that he was not picky with food!?

“Quickly, chase!”

The rookies obviously would not allow him to escape easily. Very soon, they overcame the stiffness of the chill, and rushed to pursue the dragon.

With Naked Dick in hand, Shi Xiaobai ran and lowered his head at the wailing Naked Dick. He said coldly, “This King knows that

you aren't hallucinating. If you continue acting, This King will really be a dragon and slaughter you!"

Naked Dick's face immediately turned pale and stopped crying for help. His lips trembled as he said, "Don't...Big Brother Shi Xiaobai. I thought I was the one who was hallucinating... They kept calling you a dragon, so I didn't dare to disagree..."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he immediately heaved a sigh of relief. It was obviously only a guess when he said that he knew that Naked Dick was not hallucinating.

In the previous timeline, Shi Xiaobai had been pincered by the rookies and the black-robed youth. Back then, Shi Xiaobai could clearly sense a hatred from the black-robed youth. The vicious hatred was more intense than the rest.

The black-robed youth clearly did not have such intense hatred for the dragon, so it was more likely that the black-robed youth was not under the effects of the hallucination. The black-robed youth was able to see him, which resulted in the intense hatred.

By grasping this minor detail, Shi Xiaobai pondered deeply over it.

Why was the black-robed youth not hallucinating?

It could very likely have to do with location, that the initiation of the hallucination was location-specific, and at that moment in

time, the black-robed youth was not within that area.

This was the most likely possibility, but it did not help Shi Xiaobai in any way. Therefore, he could only continue pondering over other possibilities.

If the hallucination was not location-specific, what could result in the rookies having hallucinations while the black-robed youth wouldn't?

It had to be something the rookies had in common which the black-robed youth did not have. If he ruled out the possibility of location, Shi Xiaobai could only think of one item...diamonds!

The strange diamond monster had been reduced to diamonds after it shattered. It was something all the rookies had which the black-robed youth did not!

Kali was powerful so she was not affected by the hallucinations, so she could be ignored. Therefore, the possibility of the diamond being the reason was very likely!

And among the rookies, there was one person who did not have a diamond. It was the youth that went running naked, Naked Dick!

If the diamonds were the cause of the hallucinations, Naked Dick should not be hallucinating!

With this guess in mind, Shi Xiaobai decided to run in this



timeline. And while running, he abducted Naked Dick.

The Heavens did not disappoint Shi Xiaobai's wit. Naked Dick was really not under the effects of the hallucination.

However, Naked Dick was a timid person. Be it the previous timeline or the present timeline, he was not affected by the hallucination. However, he did not dare to come out alone to clear Shi Xiaobai's name while the crowd was clamoring to kill the dragon. He was afraid to be treated as an alien and had instead echoed the crowd.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat infuriated, but he was quickly put at ease.

How could you count on a coward who could pee himself out of fear to risk the denouncement of a mob while pointing at the dragon in front of everybody and shout, "This is no dragon. This is Shi Xiaobai"?

"Damn it, This King will give you one more chance. In a while, you have to do as This King says, or This King will really throw you in front of the real dragon." Shi Xiaobai said in an ominous fashion. Giving a sermon to a coward was useless. Forcefully coercing him was the only way.

Obviously, Naked Dick did not dare to refuse. He hurriedly patted his chest and assured Shi Xiaobai that he would do as he said, with a look of unflinching righteousness.

...

The rookies pursued anxiously. Although Mu Yuesheng was fast, her Lightning Flashstep could only let her move in a straight line. And for some reason, the dragon had seen through her weakness. It was constantly curving while proceeding ahead at an extremely fast speed. Mu Yuesheng was anxious for there was no way for her to catch up to it.

It was needless to speak about the other rookies. In terms of movement techniques, none of them could match Shi Xiaobai. They could only watch as the dragon in their eyes opened up a gap from them.

Just as the rookies were beginning to feel a hint of despair, the dragon suddenly stopped. Standing in front, it seemed to be waiting for them!

The rookies came in droves and quickly surrounded the motionless dragon. This time, they could not let the dragon escape!

“Darn dragon, die!”

Someone did not wish to wait a moment longer and attacked in anger.

“Stop! You fools!”

A voice that no one expected resounded. They saw Naked Dick

that had been abducted by the dragon walk out and pointed to the dragon. He cried in outrage, “Do you know what all of you are doing? This is no dragon, it’s Shi Xiaobai!”

The crowd was startled as they revealed looks of shock, but soon they were relieved.

“It seems like Naked Dick has been brainwashed by the dragon.”

“What do we do? We can’t kill Naked Dick, right?”

“Quickly kill the dragon. As for Naked Dick, let’s knock him out first!”

The crowd obviously wouldn’t believe in Naked Dick’s ‘drivel’. They only believed the reality before their eyes. This was clearly an ugly dragon!

However, there were people who had their doubts. This was because they could not believe that the dragon could so easily devour Shi Xiaobai. Unlike the previous timeline with Ka Xiaozi, the crowd found the likelihood of Shi Xiaobai being devoured by the dragon without any acts by him very slim. A powerful person like Shi Xiaobai could be in the midst of a grand plan.

Seeing how the crowd did not believe him, Naked Dick’s expression turned ugly. He knew that this matter was risky. If he was treated as an accomplice of the dragon, he would be doomed.

However, Shi Xiaobai's sword was against his back, so Naked Dick did not dare to back down.

Naked Dick pretended to look extremely depressed as he looked at the crowd. He said in a solemn voice, "I'm very, very, very disappointed! All of you claim to be Shi Xiaobai's partners, friends, admirers, lackeys, confidants, intimate mistresses. Some even call themselves Shi Xiaobai's son. Yet, now all of you are trying to kill Shi Xiaobai because of a low-grade hallucination technique. Seriously..."

Naked Dick said aggrieved, as if there was no end. Shi Xiaobai finally found it unbearable and interrupted him, "Quickly get to the point. Don't fucking add scenes for yourself!"

Naked Dick immediately gave a bitter smile. Seeing how the crowd was looking intolerant, as though they wanted to attack, Naked Dick lamented in his heart. Once, I had a chance of posturing, but I was only able to posture for a few seconds. The world's greatest tragedy is nothing compared to this.

"If all of you do not believe me, throw away the diamonds on your bodies. Open your eyes and see if this dragon is Shi Xiaobai or not!"

Naked Dick shouted with a hoarse throat. This was the key sentence, and probably his last line for his appearance. He had to do a good job.

When everyone heard this, they looked at him as though he was a

fool.

Did this fool mean that the diamonds had caused them to hallucinate, viewing Shi Xiaobai as the dragon?

Heavens, this joke wasn't funny at all.

“Putong!”

Mu Yuesheng and company who were in the forefront of the crowd decisively took out the diamonds they had and threw it on the ground.

They would rather believe it to be the truth than not.

When Mu Yuesheng and company threw out the diamonds, they immediately exclaimed while covering their mouths.

“It's true. It's really Lord Shi Xiaobai!”

“So it was really an illusion. We nearly...”

“Didn't I say? How could Shi Xiaobai be so easily devoured by a dragon? With his strength, ten dragons wouldn't even be a match for him!”

The rookies that threw away the diamonds were immediately no

longer under the influence of the hallucinations. Realizing how they had nearly killed Shi Xiaobai in anger, they felt a lingering sense of fear.

The other rookies naturally did not dare to doubt. They hesitatingly threw away the diamonds they had.

Very soon, nearly all the rookies had thrown away their diamonds. Seeing the dragon immediately transform into Shi Xiaobai, one rookie after another exclaimed at the realism of the hallucination.

The ground was filled with diamonds. They had been something the rookies coveted previously, but now, they were like land mines. Everyone shunned them in fear.

What a joke. If these diamonds could create hallucinations, what if a hallucination appeared one day, changing a fat sow into a naked beauty, what would happen?

Noticing how the crowd had been freed of their hallucinations, Shi Xiaobai immediately grinned.

The black-robed youth was dead!

The invisible monsters were all wiped out!

The hallucinations had been lifted!

There was only a timid dragon cowardly shivering somewhere!

How are you to kill This King?

What other moves do you have?

If any, use them as soon as possible!

This King will take it all on!

# Chapter 328: God Slaughtering Command

---

Above the forest, four monsters were standing in each of the four corners of the God Slaughtering Formation on a dark cloud.

The atmosphere was slightly heavy.

The white-masked aristocrat's Plan F sounded perfect. By killing Shi Xiaobai, Kali would not be able to focus on resisting the God Slaughtering Formation, so it greatly increased the success rate of killing Kali.

However, the plan failed before it was implemented. The invisible monsters were annihilated mercilessly by Shi Xiaobai and the illusion stones that had been planted were seen through by Shi Xiaobai. What seemed like a flawless scheme had been easily nipped in the bud.

How could the four monsters be in a good mood?

The gigantic Nightmare Terror always had a grudge with the white-masked aristocrat, so it could not help but mock, "I wasn't optimistic about this plan from the very beginning. The number of strange means that human has is endless. Even that dog suffered under his hands. Just that punch not a long while ago was completely unbelievable. Hoping to succeed using such a scheme that can be so easily seen through against that human is truly one that can only happen in one's wildest dreams."

The white-masked aristocrat said with a heavy face and cold



tone, “What nice hindsight. This human was just lucky. No plan can avoid uncertainties such as luck. What else could I do?”

The gigantic Nightmare Terror said with a chuckle, “Just lucky? It was obvious that your plan wasn’t perfect enough, allowing that human to see through it easily!”

“Enough!”

The dual-blade demon coldly interrupted the two monster’s argument. It said, “What we should do now is think of the follow-up plans, not pushing the blame on one another! The ‘trial central computer’ instructed us to eliminate the external ‘virus’. Our final goal is only to kill the two intruders—the pixie and the tiny black-lit person that the pixie sealed in the deep depths of the sea. This human is not on the elimination list. We should only consider how to kill that pixie!”

The lion-headed demonic beast said with a whisper, “But now, we have used the God Slaughtering Formation to imprison the pixie, but we aren’t able to kill her. When the pixie frees herself, she will definitely punish us. When the time comes, what are the chances of the four of us defeating her? I feel that Aristocrat’s plan was still somewhat reasonable. Killing the human that the pixie deeply loves might shake her will, causing her to die inside the God Slaughtering Formation.”

The gigantic Nightmare Terror said coldly, “Having gone back and forth, the conclusion is still to kill that human. However, there’s not much time. As pillars of the formation, the four of us can’t move. The bullshit plan Aristocrat came up with has been

completely seen through, so who else can kill that human?”

The lion-headed demonic beast said, “Since this is the world the dual-blade demon presides over, he should have the means to do so. Didn’t he previously say that he had ten thousand ways to let the human die?”

The dual-blade demon said with a heavy voice, “I do have ten thousand ways, but... I can’t be certain that they can kill the human in such a short period of time. The human’s strength might not be as simple as it seems.”

The white-masked aristocrat said coldly, “Use that move.”

The three monsters were slightly taken aback before their expressions changed drastically. They exclaimed, “Are you talking about that move!?”

The white-masked aristocrat nodded calmly and said, “That is the fastest way to kill that human, and also the most reliable way.”

The dual-blade demon said with a heavy voice, “If we use that move, it will cause a large number of trial-takers to die. It is one of the regulations the assessment program has against it. We would be punished by the trial central computer. We would be released in another thousand years, but if we do it now, we might be given another few thousand years of punishment. I can’t accept it!”

The white-masked aristocrat said with a sneer, “Violating the

regulations only entails an addition few thousand years of imprisonment, but if the pixie safely escapes the God Slaughtering Formation, our lives would be over. The trial central computer only knows punishment, nothing else. It will definitely not protect us. Even if we work so hard, to the point of risking our lives to complete the mission it gave us.”

The dual blade demon fell silent upon hearing this.

At this moment, the gigantic Nightmare Terror said coldly, “I don’t agree. The fool that previously ruled the fourth level had once had an aneurysm, resulting in it using that move. It caused many trial-takers on that level to die. It infuriated that trial-taker, named ‘Hero King’ by the humans, which caused its death. Most terrifying of all, after that fool died, its soul was imprisoned by the trial central computer. As it had violated the regulation, it is still imprisoned in a prison of darkness up to today. If we use that move, what happens if we can’t kill the human?”

The white-masked aristocrat said with a scorn, “Do you think that human can compare with the Hero King from back then? Don’t worry. This human may be good, but he’s still a distance away from that Hero King. This human will definitely not be able to survive that move.”

The lion-headed demonic beast said, “There’s not much time left. Every second we argue is a waste of our lives. Quickly make the decision. As for whether to use that move, how are we to kill the human without using it?”

The white-masked aristocrat said in a deep voice, “I think that if

we were to use that move and kill the human before shaking the pixie's resolve, causing her death in the God Slaughtering Formation, the trial central computer will pardon us considering the mitigating circumstances. The risk of punishment isn't very high. But if we do not use that move and if we fail to kill the human, it is almost certain the pixie will safely escape. What else can we do other than run? And if we fail to complete the mission, do you think the trial central computer will show us mercy? We would still be punished when the time comes! Therefore, I think it's best we use that move!"

The gigantic Nightmare Terror said coldly, "I definitely disagree with using that move. Aristocrat is always able to give all sorts of grand justifications, but he disappoints us greatly every time. I will definitely not believe you, even if what you say sounds very convincing."

The lion-headed demonic beast shrugged his shoulders and said, "I will refrain from commenting. I only wish for us to come up with a decision as soon as possible. If we do not use that move, please think of something else quickly. You can count on me to act, but don't count on my brain."

At this moment in time, the white-masked aristocrat was in agreement, but the gigantic Nightmare Terror was in disagreement.

The lion-headed demonic beast was on the fence, so the only one to make the decision was the dual-blade demon.

The gigantic Nightmare Terror looked at the dual-blade demon

and said with a sneer, “This is the world you preside over. You will bear the greatest responsibility using that move. Think carefully about it!”

The white-masked aristocrat chuckled and said, “If you killed the pixie, what the trial central computer considers a high-level virus, in your world, you will gain the greatest merit as well. On the contrary, if you fail to kill her, you will similarly bear a huge responsibility!”

The dual-blade demon’s expression immediately turned ugly as his eyes were filled with a dilemma.

The lion-headed demonic beast urged, “Hurry up and make a decision. There’s not much time left!”

The dual-blade demon took a few deep breaths as an intense struggle wavered in his eyes before finally coming to peace.

“In hell, I learned of something important. When the evil spirits extort you for bread, you would not be able to even keep your clothes if you are afraid. If you encounter a hungry evil spirit, then you would not even... Anyways, to survive, courage is something that cannot be lacking.”

The dual-blade demon said in a heavy voice, “Therefore at this very moment in time, I choose to be brave. I don’t believe that the trial central computer will be so ruthless as to punish us if we are able to kill the pixie. Furthermore, since that move exists, it must have a reason for its existence. I believe it’s the best opportunity

for us to use it!”

“Therefore, I’ve decided to use it. We shall use the ‘God Slaughtering Command’!” This is a move that can even easily kill Celestial trial-takers. It’s the highest honor for a human’s death!”

...

...

There were charred corpses everywhere in the mountain valley. The invisible drakes had been burnt to death by Shi Xiaobai’s Kun Peng Wind-Fire sword or slashed to death by thousands of sword beams. They had revealed their true forms. They were extremely ugly and now in their charred state, they were even more revolting.

Shi Xiaobai led the rookies away from the valley and came into the forest.

Shi Xiaobai knew that the masterminds definitely had tricks up their sleeves, so he was constantly vigilant. At the same time, he was worried for Kali. His nerves constantly tensed.

Three minutes later, a group of people were walking through the woods, ready to find the invisible dragon. After all, the mission of this level was to slay a dragon.

The danger Shi Xiaobai expected did not happen. He obviously

did not know of the three minutes of argument the four monsters had, but Shi Xiaobai had a nagging feeling that it was the calm before the storm.

The invisible dragon was apparently difficult to find. The rookies were eager about it, but turned impatient three minutes later.

Someone suggested for them to split up in their search.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment and no longer objected. The masterminds were targeting him, so if they separated from him, the rookies might end up safer.

Soon, the rookies dispersed as they wandered in the forest as they attempted to find the invisible dragon.

Mozzie, Mu Yuesheng, and Kevin naturally wanted to stay by Shi Xiaobai's side. However, Shi Xiaobai had their safety on his mind, so he made the three proceed together. After warning them to be careful, he left alone.

Shi Xiaobai decided to stay away from the rest as he ran towards the exterior of the woods.

Regardless of what means you have, come for This King!

As the trees dwindled in number, the number of rookies Shi Xiaobai encountered decreased along the way.

“Ah!”

Suddenly, there was a sharp scream from the woods!

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows pricked as he suddenly felt as though the sun above him had been obscured. The sky had suddenly darkened!

Shi Xiaobai could not help but look up, but he was immediately taken aback.

He saw flying monsters everywhere in the sky. All types of monsters were gathered in the air like tigers with wings, gigantic vultures, wyrms, and ugly gigantic bats. Like dark cloud, they covered the sky.

The flying monsters looked down at the forest with cold eyes and murderous intent.

At the same time, the ground began to violently quake!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Sounds of deafening trampling came from outside the woods, as though there were thousands of rhinoceros approaching in a stampede.

How many monsters were in this stampede to cause the ground



to quake in such a manner?

# Chapter 329: Sorry Kali

---

Monsters blackened the sky above as they circled the firmaments, eclipsing the sun.

The ground quaked incessantly as deafening rumbles of a stampede were heard, as though ten thousand horses were galloping towards the woods.

Shi Xiaobai was located at the periphery of the forest, so he could clearly hear all those roars. There were countless monsters surging towards the forest.

Shi Xiaobai's expression changed slightly. For these monsters to suddenly gather towards the forest, it was apparent that they were coming for him.

At this moment, the gigantic vultures circling in the sky were the first to swoop down, as they attacked Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai was naturally unafraid. Raising his sword, he slashed at an incoming vulture. A golden sword beam instantly beheaded the vulture.

“Roar!”

The monsters circling in the sky roared in anger, and soon, they began diving down in their attacks against Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai sneered. Although these monsters were numerous and of considerable strength, he was at present most proficient fighting one against many.

Shi Xiaobai used Crab Steps to ingeniously dodge the attacks, while he constantly slashed out Kun Peng Sword Technique. Either flames roared towards the sky, wanton storms surged, or snowflakes flurried. All sorts of large area-of-effect sword techniques were used, as monsters were slain by the sword beams that filled the sky.

Screams of pain and agony echoed in the air as the circling monsters in the sky constantly attacked Shi Xiaobai, but like a tip of the iceberg, the monster horde that eclipsed the sky did not seem to reduce in any way.

At this moment, the monsters that had flocked towards the forest had finally arrived.

The monsters were in groups, and like bulldozers, they toppled one tree after another.

All these monsters were of different species—wolves, tigers, apes, buffaloes, alligators, pythons... Other than these ferocious beasts, there were also many strange-looking monsters.

The monsters ran amok into the forest, blotting out the entire horizon. There was no end in sight, as though they formed a wave that was moving towards the shore.

When these monsters surged into the forest, they began engaging in wanton destruction. Nothing was spared—trees, rocks, ground, as well as harmless creatures in the forest.

They saw Shi Xiaobai, who was battling the monsters that dived down at him, and as though they were beasts that had been starving for a long time, their eyes turned green as they charged wildly at Shi Xiaobai.

The hovering monsters in the sky appeared as though their food was being robbed, resulting in them anxiously diving into the forest.

The entire forest was filled with roars, howling, growing... Killing intent raged, as though it was hell on earth.

Shi Xiaobai was like an incarnation of Death. He circled the monsters at very fast speed as he constantly brandished his black sword. Countless golden sword beams slaughtered the monsters that attacked him like moths to a flame.

However, there was just so many monsters that it was outrageous. After killing a hundred with great difficulty, a few hundred would appear in the sky or crowd the forest.

Shi Xiaobai obviously wasn't dumb enough to think of vanquishing the monsters that were constantly increasing in number. He only wanted to accomplish one thing.

Survive. By surviving safely, Kali would be at ease, eliminating the need for her to rage.

“If you are planning on using numbers in a plan of attrition against This King, your plans have failed!”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but sneer in his heart.

The monsters that blotted out the sky and filled the lands were clearly the trick up the masterminds' sleeves. It was apparent that the masterminds had very high 'authority' for them to summon such a terrifying beast horde.

However, they did not understand Shi Xiaobai at all.

If it were anybody else, they would not have been able to last long against so many monsters.

However, Shi Xiaobai was different. Looking back at his past experiences, he had faced the skeleton legion and the bone dragons that filled the sky in the virtual world. In the Underworld, he had been pursued by tens of thousands of bat riders. In the Demon City, he had traversed through lands filled with demonic beasts... He had seen such situations several times!

Shi Xiaobai always had nerves of steel, a calm mind, and a fearless heart. He was able to maintain his calm when being attacked in a group. The Crab Steps he was proficient in gave him a huge advantage. The terrifying endurance Unleaking Turtle Aura

gave him allowed him to persist on for prolonged periods of time.

It was undoubtedly the most foolish method to kill Shi Xiaobai using a beast horde!

The mastermind had made the worst of decisions.

Shi Xiaobai constantly circled the monsters. What he had to do now was to wait for Kali to safely return. Before that, he only needed to ensure his own safety.

However, as Shi Xiaobai constantly fell back into the inner depths of the forest, he suddenly heard a tragic cry amid the monsters' roars.

Shi Xiaobai's expression changed suddenly.

The tragic cry was not a monster's, but a human's.

These monsters were not only attacking him, but the rest of the rookies as well!?

When Shi Xiaobai realized this point, his heart was filled with rage.

He untangled himself from the monsters and dashed towards the source of the scream.

Very soon, he traversed collapsed ground and criss-crossing trees. Shi Xiaobai's pupils contracted slightly.

He saw a rookie being surrounded by dozens of monsters. The rookie's face was pale. He was furious and afraid, while doing his best to resist, but his body was covered in injuries.

Not far away, there was a mutilated corpse. The corpse was being devoured by several monsters. Its head had been bitten off, and there was no clue as to who the person was. The person's innards had been pulled apart. There was no piece of meat on the corpse that remained intact, as white bone was exposed!

Upon seeing this tragic scene, Shi Xiaobai was incensed. With a roar, he slashed angrily at the dozens of monsters surrounding the rookie!

Shi Xiaobai obviously wouldn't show mercy to these man-eating monsters. Soon, he wiped out the monsters that surrounded the rookie and saved him.

The rookie collapsed on the ground after being saved. Turning his head to see his companion's tragic state, he could not help but cry.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and asked, "Why didn't you use the exit command?"

The rookie sobbed and said, "It was useless... We shouted dozens

of times, but the exit command had no effect... Compared to life, how important can a spot of a collective training be? Boohooohoo... I want to go home.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his mood turned heavy. He never expected that the masterminds’ ‘authority’ had reached such a high level of clearance. They were even able to disable the use of the exit command. They were willing to go so far in order to kill him!

From a certain point of view, this rookie had died because of him!

The monsters poured into the forest without end. The monsters that eclipsed the sky were swooping down constantly. The number of monsters in the forest continued increasing.

It was a cacophony of deafening roars, hisses and growls.

Occasionally, there would be the sounds of humans screaming mixed in it.

Shi Xiaobai immediately awoke from his reverie. It was now not the time to feel guilty and upset. With the monsters entering the forest, they were attacking wantonly. The other rookies were also being attacked by the monsters!

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly carried the rookie that had slumped to the ground as he charged deeper into the woods.



“Get it together, we need to save the others!”

Shi Xiaobai shouted to the rookie that had lost his wits.

The rookie revealed a wry smile, “Save the others? We can’t even save ourselves.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his heart and did not speak further. Carrying the rookie in his left hand, he constantly slashed with the sword in his right hand at the attacking monsters.

As he advanced, his heart became heavier. The anger in his eyes was overwhelming.

Along the way, he saw ghastly scenes. Rookies that were able to reach the sixth level were of pretty good strength and pedigree, but most of them were fresh out of school. They lacked actual combat experience. They quickly fell into panic when they were swarmed by starving monsters. One by one, they died tragically after they failed in their resistance.

The corpses suffered the tragic fate of being torn apart. They could no longer be identified, reduced to white skeletons.

Shi Xiaobai saved a few rookies, but all of them were wallowing in despair. Against the overwhelming number of monsters and in the face of how the exit command was defunct, as well as the cruel reality of their companions dying, their hearts were filled with fear of death.

Shi Xiaobai naturally did not leave them in the lurch. He constantly killed the monsters like an inexhaustible machine, while darting into the depths of the forest.

However, Shi Xiaobai was not god. With the large number of monsters attacking, there were still rookies that died tragically in front of his eyes.

Along the way, all he saw were hellish scenes. His progress also became more difficult. The rookies Shi Xiaobai could save were few in number. Most of them died tragically or had died somewhere unknown.

Finally, Shi Xiaobai saw two familiar figures in front of him.

They were Mozzie, who was struggling to hold up Magical Silver Shield, and Mu Yuesheng, who was constantly shooting electric bolts while doing battle with the monsters.

The two girls were in quite a sorry state. They were panting, and from the looks of it, their stamina was nearly depleted.

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly rushed up to save the duo.

“Where’s Kevin?”

As Shi Xiaobai slaughtered the monsters, he hurriedly asked. He

felt a strong sense of foreboding.

Mozzie immediately cried, "...Kevin was eaten by an invisible monster!"

Shi Xiaobai's face immediately paled.

What other thing but the dragon could the invisible monster be?

Shi Xiaobai was immediately enraged and also extremely depressed.

More than half of the rookies had died, including Kevin.

Although they had died under the claws of the monsters, they had died because of him!

This was a mad move in order to kill him. He was still alive, but he had implicated the other rookies, causing them to die tragic deaths.

Shi Xiaobai angrily bellowed and charged into the middle of a group of monsters. As though he had gone mad, he was Death incarnate.

"Clang!"

Suddenly, with a clang, Shi Xiaobai's sword was knocked to the ground.

Monster after monster began surrounding him. Opening their jaws, they attacked his limbs.

“Sorry Kali.”

Shi Xiaobai gently closed his eyes.

Light suddenly bloomed above the forest as the monsters circling the skies plummeted. The monsters on the ground shattered like glass as they wailed to their tragic deaths.

Shi Xiaobai sighed.

The fiery voice resounded in his mind.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Kali had raged.

The choice had failed once again.

...

Shi Xiaobai slowly opened his eyes.

It was that familiar scene from before. Forty-eight rookies were in the middle of the mountain valley. Time was still, as the three lines of black text materialized before him.

A confused look flashed in Shi Xiaobai's eyes.

Choice 1 would save all the rookies, but result in Kali raging.

Choice 2, to prevent Kali from raging, the masterminds would become unscrupulous in order to kill him. Many rookies would die because of him.

This choice was like the opposite sides of a coin. Choosing any one side would result in the other side's harsh reality to show.

Shi Xiaobai was still immersed in his grief and anger. His brain was in a mess.

He did not know how to choose.

Let Kali rage? He definitely would not allow that!

Let the rookies die because of him? He could not tolerate that!

Could it be that there was no choice that allowed the best of both worlds?

Was there no choice that would not sacrifice anyone, even if he was the one to be sacrificed?

Shi Xiaobai's confused gaze landed on the third choice he had ignored from the very beginning.

[ Choice 3: Push down the raging Ka Xiaozi ]

# Chapter 330: Pushing Down Kali!

---

[ Choice 3: Push down the raging Ka Xiaozi ]

This choice had been neglected by Shi Xiaobai from the very beginning because he did not know what ‘raging’ meant. After learning of what it meant, he was obsessed with preventing Kali from raging; therefore, he never thought seriously about this option with the highest reward.

But at this moment in time, Shi Xiaobai felt like he was at the end of his rope.

When he placed all efforts to save everyone, Kali would rage.

When he fought to prevent Kali from raging, the rookies would die because of him.

This choice was like the opposite sides of a coin. Choosing any one side would result in showing the other side’s harsh reality.

Shi Xiaobai was unable to choose between the two cruel realities. Therefore, his eyes finally landed on the third choice.

Choices offered by the Absolute Choice had to possess their own significance.

Shi Xiaobai gradually calmed down.

Pushing down the raging Ka Xiaozi was given provided Ka Xiaozi had raged. But what did pushing her down mean?

What was the point of pushing her?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes stared intently at the words 'push down' as he racked his brains while seriously pondering over it.

Push down...

Push down?

Push down!?

Push down!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up!

No matter how dark it was right now, know that the dawn will come.

The simplest answer was always right in front of him!

If pushing down Ka Xiaozi could resolve this impasse, creating a situation which would sacrifice no one, then...it was time to push



her down!

...

...

Encountering the same scenario an eighth time, anyone would feel some numbness and fatigue towards it. Shi Xiaobai was somewhat depressed, but with the rookies having died horrible deaths in the previous timeline reviving and appearing in front of him, he could not help but feel thankful.

Time had wound back. Everything could be repeated, as such, the tragedy could be rewritten.

Shi Xiaobai finally thought of a solution. He wanted to create an ending without anyone being sacrificed.

However, he first had to make Ka Xiaozi rage.

To Shi Xiaobai, this was definitely an absolutely painful process.

However, Shi Xiaobai was always such a person. Be it when he was saving Little Fatso, when he had to pretend to flatter the calamity fiend, Sahadun, speaking nastily to Little Fatso to the point of beating him up, or how he pretended to appear cold towards the lives of his companions in front of the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, Shi Xiaobai had suffered mental anguish. However, he knew that suffering was the route to eventual

happiness. As such, he had to gladly endure the hardships.

If he could create an ending with no one sacrificed, Shi Xiaobai was willing to bear the pain no one knew about.

This time, Shi Xiaobai did not knock the farting rookie unconscious. He only restricted his urge of farting.

This time, Shi Xiaobai did not kill the black-robed youth ahead of time, but brought the naked youth back.

Therefore, the scenes of Kali raging repeated exactly as a previous timeline.

The farting youth spat at the dragon's baby, with everyone killing it which infuriated the dragon. And with Shi Xiaobai's help, they managed to chase the dragon away.

Immediately following that, Ka Xiaozi suddenly disappeared as everyone fell into the hallucination of Shi Xiaobai being the dragon.

Shi Xiaobai escaped and he did his best to repeat the path and speed of his escape.

When he was pincerd by the black-robed youth and the rookies, Shi Xiaobai killed the black-robed youth first to strike fear into the rookies' hearts.

When he encountered the attacks of the invisible drakes, he could have dodged them all, but he chose to let the drakes bite at him.

When the dragon sneaked up on him, he could have easily dodged, but he blocked in a manner that caused him to remain immobile.

The rookies attacked as light bloomed. Ka Xiaozi, whose hair had turned silverish-white, walked out of the light. She had neutralized all attacks, killed all the drakes and burned the invisible dragon to death.

During all of this, Shi Xiaobai had to endure the pain while forcefully repeating the sequence of events. Everything was like the sixth round without any changes.

All the rookies were saved.

Ka Xiaozi had raged because of him, becoming a fallen pixie.

...

...

Just like before, Shi Xiaobai exposed the truth that Kali was Ka Xiaozi. Kali admitted openly and gave a mischievous smile. In

order for Shi Xiaobai not to worry over her hair, she pretended to be relaxed.

However, Shi Xiaobai knew that her transformation into a fallen pixie was a mental torment for Kali.

Shi Xiaobai sighed in his heart. A girl who was willing to make the silent sacrifice for him, regardless of how powerful she was, how long her lifespan was, how heavy her responsibilities were, how much he did not deserve her, he had to work hard to stand beside her, or even in front of her.

At this moment in time, Kali's expression changed slightly as she coldly said, "Trying to escape?"

Kali sensed that the masterminds were about to run, so she was prepared to pursue them.

Up to this point in time, everything was the same as before.

But this time, Shi Xiaobai prevented Kali from leaving. He stretched out his hand to grab Kali's hand and said softly, "Don't go first. Follow me."

Shi Xiaobai pulled Kali towards the inner depths of the woods. Kali was slightly surprised and acknowledged it. She was not worried that the monsters could escape her. She was only eager to take revenge.

But compared to revenge, it was obviously not as important as Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai pulled Kali into the woods and soon found an extremely secluded spot.

There were trees all around, with a flat stone being surrounded by trees. It was like a smooth stone bed.

Shi Xiaobai was very pleased with this layout. The place was very hidden, and that large stone bed was as though it was carefully prepared for him.

It was very suitable...to push her down here!

...

...

Shi Xiaobai let Kali sit down on the flat rock, and sat down beside her with his shoulder to hers. They were very close and it seemed somewhat intimate.

Kali blushed, but she did not dislike such intimacy.

Shi Xiaobai turned slightly nervous.

Pushing down sounded easy.

However, Shi Xiaobai was unsure if he would really succeed.

Kali said with a light laugh, “You seem...rather nervous? Is there something urgent for you to bring me here?”

Kali clearly never expected Shi Xiaobai to be plotting something with ulterior motives.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and said seriously, “This King knows that there were masterminds behind your sudden disappearance, the hallucination of the rookies, and the reason why the dragon and those monsters attacked This King. And next, you want to seek revenge on those masterminds. With your present strength, it’s probably not difficult, but This King does not wish for that to happen. This King wishes that This King can seek revenge himself!”

Kali was slightly astonished. Looking into Shi Xiaobai’s eyes, she could see the rage and killing intent in them. Shi Xiaobai’s hate for the masterminds had reached an irredeemable state.

Kali sighed gently and said, “Xiaobai, with your present strength, you have no way to fight them for the moment.”

“This King knows.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes flickered as he said, “Therefore, This King is

planning on borrowing your power.”

Kali was slightly surprised before immediately remembering Shi Xiaobai’s superpower. After a moment of pondering, she whispered, “Didn’t we try previously? It’s unlikely you are able to borrow my power for now.”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head gently and said, “It can be borrowed. It’s just that the...posture wasn’t right the previous time!”

Kali was astounded.

The posture wasn’t right?

Kali immediately recalled how Shi Xiaobai had to use his right hand to place in front of a person’s chest to borrow powers.

Was this the posture needed for borrowing powers?

But what did it mean to have an incorrect posture?

Kali’s face blushed slightly as she whispered, “Then...what posture is needed?”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent and gently grabbed Kali’s shoulders with both hands.

Kali's heart began to race as she noticed Shi Xiaobai's eyes as bright as the stars. Her cheeks began to heat up.

Hey...why does this seem to be leading to something odd?

Could it be...

“Ah!?”

Kali exclaimed.

After Shi Xiaobai held her shoulders, he pushed her forcefully onto the giant stone. And with an ambiguous posture, he lay over her body.

Heavens, what posture was this!?

Kali's body stiffened as she held her breath. With a quivering voice, she said, “We can't do that... You are still young... Furthermore, didn't I say before that we can't do...it?”

Kali's body trembled. Shi Xiaobai had placed one of his hands on her mosquito bite, while his other hand was placed on her smooth and soft belly that was without any fat.

This...



Was this the legendary ‘foreplay’?

Kali nearly fainted, but reason told her that she had to shout “no” or “stop”.

“Relax, This King is only borrowing your powers.”

Shi Xiaobai’s voice suddenly entered her ears. Kali snapped out of her reverie as she looked up to look into Shi Xiaobai’s eyes. She noticed that his eyes were bright, and his breathing was calm. He looked very composed as well.

Kali fell into a daze and nearly fainted from rage.

Heavens, how can you be so calm while lying above such a beautiful girl?

Hey, my breasts might be small, but they still exist, right?

If your left hand were to move slightly lower, wouldn’t there be the tiniest bit of temptation?

Kali grunted slightly as she grabbed Shi Xiaobai’s back. Their bodies were pulled even more tightly together. She piqued, “Borrow it then, borrow as much as you want! Don’t stand on ceremony with me!”

...

Kali's body was very soft. It exuded a fresh fragrance of a virgin, but Shi Xiaobai was obsessed with completing the Absolute Choice, and did not have any unnecessary thoughts.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was lying, but it was not a complete lie. The reason for this position was not because he wanted to take advantage of her, but neither was it purely to borrow her power.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai had three functions to his superpower.

The first one was borrowing strength. It was as the words meant. As it was borrowing, he needed the consent of the target, and had to return it later.

The second one was forcefully appropriating the powers of others. For example, when Shi Xiaobai extracted Kevin's powers, it was forceful without need for Kevin's consent. As long as Shi Xiaobai's power of the soul could suppress Kevin's resistance, it was enough. However, such forceful appropriation required him to return the power.

And the third function was the most special. He could directly completely deprive of the other person's power and use it for himself. There was no need to return it. It was called 'Power Siphoning'!

If Shi Xiaobai had used Power Siphoning on Mu Yuesheng, Shi Xiaobai would permanently have lightning superpowers, and Mu Yuesheng would lose her lightning superpowers forever.

Different superpowers needed different postures in order to be used. Power Appropriation was the simplest. It just needed one's strength to suppress the other. As for Power Borrowing, it needed mental dialog. He had to use his right hand to obtain the recognition of the person's heart, therefore he had to place his right hand on the target's chest.

Power Siphoning was in general more complicated. In order to siphon the powers of the other person, he needed to conquer that person!

Power Siphoning was clearly a very overbearing and somewhat malevolent power. Furthermore, its usage was very vague. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai had always ignored this ability.

Only when Shi Xiaobai encountered this Absolute Choice did he remember of this superpower.

Push down...

Was the posture of pushing down a girl a form of conquest?

After making such a guess, Shi Xiaobai had pushed down Kali. Of course, it was different from what other gentlemen would be thinking of.

The hands Shi Xiaobai placed on Kali's chest and tummy suddenly emitted light spontaneously. With a yelp, Kali's eyes

glazed over.

Shi Xiaobai's consciousness was immediately enveloped by endless light. The light was warm and holy.

Shi Xiaobai was delighted. He had succeeded.

This endless light was Kali's power and it was free for him to siphon.

As long as he absorbed all this power of light, Shi Xiaobai's strength would reach a terrifying realm.

However, Shi Xiaobai paid no attention to the power of light. His consciousness roamed the endless light.

Finally, he saw a patch of darkness in front of him.

The darkness was like a small black cloud in the endless expanse in the sky.

In the endless light, this tiny patch of darkness appeared trivial, as inconspicuous as dust. However, Shi Xiaobai could clearly tell that this darkness was spreading, and the speed of its proliferation was accelerating.

Without any hesitation, Shi Xiaobai stretched his consciousness into the darkness!

He wanted to siphon this darkness!

...

“No!”

The embarrassed and lost Kali finally realized something was wrong as she suddenly opened her eyes.

Tears immediately welled in her eyes.

At this moment, Kali’s hair transformed into a beautiful purple color.

As for Shi Xiaobai’s hair, it had turned a cold silvery-white!

Shi Xiaobai smiled.

He had created a situation where no one was sacrificed except for himself.

It was as simple as that!

...

# Chapter 331: True Demon

---

After Kali raged, the corruptive power that sourced from ‘rage’ allowed her to suddenly have the power to break through the God Slaughtering Formation. However, it had turned her from a holy pixie into a fallen pixie.

And at this moment in time, Shi Xiaobai had used his superpower, ‘Power Siphoning’, to forcefully snatch the corruptive power from Kali. As a result, this power was also sucked into his body.

As such, Kali’s hair returned to the purple color she loved. With the corruptive power disappearing completely, she had transformed back into a holy pixie.

As for Shi Xiaobai, his hair had become the silverish-white color that was an emblem of fallen pixies.

The silver color was shiny, as though beautiful flowing clouds or water.

The silver hair suddenly added a sinister handsomeness to the delicate-looking Shi Xiaobai.

If this were purely a result of dyeing his hair, it would undoubtedly make him look suave.

However, this was not the dyeing of hair, but corruption.

The corruption was not something simple. It was different from the corruption of one's character, personality or even moral integrity.

This was a the corruption of a species, a corruption of the soul. It could even be a corruption in reincarnation.

Kali was acutely aware of the terror of corruption. The corruption was irreversible and unerasable. It would accompany him for life and even in the afterlife. It was a brand of sin that would be with him for all eternity.

After Kali saw Shi Xiaobai's hair turning silver, she immediately figured out what had happened. She understood why Shi Xiaobai had suddenly asked to 'borrow' her powers and why there was such an ambiguous posture, as for the reason why Shi Xiaobai had looked differently at her from before.

It was because he knew. He knew of her sacrifice for him. He knew about matters regarding corruption. Therefore, he had forsaken his future filled with light and had taken the initiative to embrace the darkness that should not belong to him.

This was an ending which had no one sacrificed other than Shi Xiaobai himself.

“No, don't do it. Quickly return it!”

Tears streamed down her cheeks. Kali began crying like a child. She got up and pressed Shi Xiaobai beneath her. She wailed for Shi Xiaobai to return the corruptive power.

Shi Xiaobai smiled in silence. He gently hugged Kali's waist. He was very satisfied with the ending. Of course, power that was siphoned could not be returned. Even if he could return it, he would not have returned even one ounce of it.

“Return it, return it!”

Kali began pounding on Shi Xiaobai's chest. She felt her heart aching, and her eyes were sore. It was as if there was a hard rock stuck in her throat.

Shi Xiaobai's consciousness gradually went into a blur as he opened his mouth. A husky voice that sounded like it came from the abyss squeezed out of his vocal cords.

“Why...is This King...so angry... Is this anger? This anger...how can you endure it... Why can't This King...control it any further?”

Shi Xiaobai struggled to speak in a staccato manner. Kali was jolted from his words and looked down at him. Shi Xiaobai's eyes were already red.

It was a scarlet like blood, and also the crimson color of burning flames.



“Ah...”

Shi Xiaobai opened his mouth slightly, as tearing voice ripped out his throat like a violent wind. His body began to convulse.

“No, you can’t fall. Try your best to remain awake. Do not let your anger deprive you of your will. Shi Xiaobai! Please!”

Kali’s pale face was covered in tears. She hugged Shi Xiaobai tightly like a helpless child.

At this moment in time, a golden beam of light bloomed from the back of Shi Xiaobai’s right hand. A loli wearing a snow-white dress appeared beside the two.

The loli hurriedly said, “Do you want to let Shi Xiaobai die from pent up anger? Let him vent it!”

Kali was anxious. Her grief and remorse had made her lose her sense of propriety, but she knew that the loli was the sword spirit of the holy sword in Shi Xiaobai’s right hand. When she heard the loli say those words, she immediately faltered.

Vent?

The loli appeared very anxious as well. Therefore, without waiting for the panicking Kali to figure out the details, she said in a hurry, “With Shi Xiaobai’s present strength, there is no way he can withstand the corruptive power. Therefore, before he becomes a

member of the fallen race, his body would collapse from the corruptive power. He is now in dire need to vent the excess corruptive power, do you understand? The corruptive power he has taken is ‘anger’, therefore, Shi Xiaobai is about to ‘explode in anger’. You must think of a way for him to vent all the anger in his heart!”

When Kali heard this, she immediately realized what was happening. She was feeling pain for Shi Xiaobai’s transformation into a member of the fallen race, but she had missed the point that Shi Xiaobai’s body could not withstand the corruptive power!

The present Shi Xiaobai was filled with surging energies in his body. Anger was dominating over his reason, and he was in need to vent it out!

“If you will become a demon king, I’ll become a demonic girl to accompany you by your side.”

Kali hugged Shi Xiaobai tightly and said softly, “Vent it out. Vent out all your anger as much as you want.”

...

...

In the northernmost area of Monster Fairyland in the sixth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, there was a gigantic palace located in the midst of a vast plain.

At this moment, there were all sorts of monsters gathered densely on the plains. Countless monsters were quiet and dormant, as though they were waiting for something. It was a stern and austere environment.

And in the palace surrounded by the monsters, a dual-bladed demon was sitting on a magnificent throne. It looked panicked while it spoke to an unknown existence.

“Your Magnificence, are you planning on giving up on me?”

“Or are you saying that you have turned a blind eye to the existence of the virus?”

“Are you planning on abandoning the land of the trials, or are you giving up your valuable dignity.”

“No, why aren’t you sending more forces to eliminate the pixie? There’s still time. Lend your power to me. Just a bit will do, and I’ll be able to kill the pixie that sealed herself.”

The dual-blade demon had a hideous expression. It was hissing as it spoke to itself in the palace.

Suddenly, the dual-blade demon had a drastic change in expression as it stood up from his throne.

“She’s here?!”

The blades in the dual-blade demon’s hands began to tremble slightly.

What was coming had finally come.

The dual-blade demon slowly walked out of the palace. The rampant monsters roared as they simultaneously look up towards the sky.

There in the middle of the sky was a beautiful purple-haired girl and a sinister-looking silver-haired youth standing side by side. No monster dared to approach them as they gave out warning cries like frightened beasts.

The dual-blade demon was surprised.

Why did the two switch hair colors? Was dyeing their hair before revenge a form of cheering themselves on?

The dual-blade demon knew there was no way for him to escape Kali’s grasp. The other three monsters could only hide away temporarily. If the powerful existence decided on giving up on them, no one could save them.

It was useless to kneel down and beg. The dual-blade demon knew that the only chance it had was to do battle.

And the rampant monsters were making the final preparations for the struggle.

“You should not have brought that human here. I might not be your match, but the monsters here can definitely kill your loved one.”

The dual-blade demon’s expression was cold. Although it could not defeat Kali, Kali could not easily instakill him after having sealed herself to the Psionic Mortal Realm. As long as it managed to stall Kali, the monsters that filled the lands would definitely be able to kill the youth beside her.

Even in death, he had to leave the most painful scar on his enemy!

“Kill him!”

The dual-blade demon roared and laughed frenetically, as though it was hysterical.

However, before the dual-blade demon’s words faded away, a figure dived down from the sky towards the ground, slamming heavily into the ground like a meteorite.

“Boom!”

When the figure landed, the monsters around him were immediately sent flying by the terrifying power. The ground immediately cratered.

The dual-blade demon was slightly taken aback. This figure that suddenly landed had tremendous power. It was that black-haired youth that for some reason had his hair turned silver.

“Courting death?”

The dual-blade demon immediately commanded the monsters to kill Shi Xiaobai with all their strength!

However, the scene that followed left the dual-blade demon awestruck!

After landing on the ground, Shi Xiaobai was like a wolf entering a herd of sheep. He immediately charged into the rampant horde of monsters.

He did not use a sword or a knife, but reached out his bare hands at the monsters!

In the next moment!

A large python was ripped apart with his bare hands!

A gigantic black ape was punched into meat sauce with a single

punch!

A gigantic alligator with spikes down its back was reduced to mush with a stomp!

A flying tiger had its head dislocated!

A wyrm with silver hide had its heart pulled out!

...

The silver-haired youth was like a devil. He darted through the horde at a speed that could not be discerned. With just his bare hands and feet, he brutally massacred the monsters.

Screams, shrieks, alarmed cries, and angry roars reverberated throughout the lands in a deafening manner. In a while, the entire plain was stained red with blood. Countless monsters had their corpses mangled, as though the plain had become true hell.

The silver-haired youth was like a murderous devil that was venting its infinite anger. He killed monsters without any mercy. He ignored the blood that splattered onto him, and frequently ripped the monsters apart. His body was covered in blood, as though he had bathed in a lake of blood.

Redder than the blood were the silver-haired youth's eyes. The cold red eyes were filled with killing intent. It was like frozen anger, a killing intent that would never melt.

“You are the true demon!”

The dual-blade demon uttered out in horror. The human’s power had suddenly been enhanced to this point. His strength and speed were a far cry from before. And what made the dual-blade demon appalled was how Shi Xiaobai was in a killing spree like a devil.

Even the most cruel demons that were immersed in a massacre, using acts of killing to vent the anger in their hearts while bare-handedly ripping apart thousands of monsters would not necessarily reach such an insane stage!

However, the silver-haired youth did not stop. Only when all the monsters on the plain were wiped out did he turn his gaze towards the dual-blade demon in the palace above him.

Without any words or expressions, the blood-stained Shi Xiaobai rushed towards the dual-blade demon like a fierce wolf.

He only had one thought in this mind.

Kill!

Kill!

Kill!





# Chapter 332: Nobody Should Have Thoughts On Grabbing Tomorrow's Headlines!

---

Kali quietly looked at Shi Xiaobai's wanton killing on the plains as she felt her heart aching for him. She was filled with worry for him.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai had nearly lost all reason, as well as his humanity. He was immersed in anger. The only thought he had was to engage in a killing spree to vent his anger.

And this was the terrible price of accepting the corruptive power.

Kali was too powerful and her power of light was nearly endless. Therefore, the small patch of darkness would require a long period of time in order to completely overwhelm her reason.

However, with Shi Xiaobai's power, the darkness was like a starless night that nearly engulfed his consciousness.

Shi Xiaobai was unable to resist the corruptive power. He was unable to suppress the anger from the deepest depths of his soul that constantly inundated him. His body could no longer bear the swelling of his anger.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai was in urgent need to vent. Killing was the best way at venting his anger.

However, even though he had slaughtered the large number of monsters in such a brutal manner, the flames of his fury were still burning incessantly. There was no way for him to stop.

Kali sighed heavily.

Before Shi Xiaobai's anger was completely dissipated, how many legions of creatures would perish? How grave was the sin of killing?

“Regardless of what you become, I'll always stay by your side.”

Kali looked gently at Shi Xiaobai as her eyes flashed with a look of resolve.

...

The silver-haired youth rushed straight to the palace. His thirst for killing made him instinctively search for life.

As long as it was something alive, regardless of what it was, he wanted to kill it because he was very angry.

He did not know why he was so angry.

He did not know, but neither was there a need to know.

The only thought in his mind was to kill!

Even though his hands were stained with sin, even if he was bathed in blood, he still wanted to kill, kill, kill!

The dual-blade demon's eyes were filled with icy-cold killing intent. It did not flee but raised his dual blades as it faced the silver-haired youth charging at it.

There was no way it could defeat the pixie, it did not even have the courage to do so. However, it did not mean that it would give up because of this. Furthermore, the one attacking him was not the powerful pixie, but a weak human that was injured by useless drakes!

Based on what?

Based on what could such a scum think on killing it!?

“You have indeed become stronger, but how much stronger can you be? Foolish human. I'll instantly kill you and let the pixie regret her naivety forever!”

The dual-blade demon sneered in his heart. Why did a demon from hell need to fear death? Even if it were to die, it would rip out the enemy's heart and flesh!

On the plains, the blood spilled formed rivers. The silver-haired youth and the gigantic demon that was five meters tall rushed at

each other in anger as they splattered the blood beneath their feet. The distance between them quickly decreased, and in a few seconds, they were in front of each other!

This was not a fortuitous encounter, nor was it a beautiful unexpected meeting, but a conflict between life and death!

“Die!”

The dual-blade demon roared angrily as its two gigantic black curved blades slashed at the silver-haired youth!

Space was ripped apart at that moment by the curved blade as two black ravines as deep as an abyss ruptured as they advanced towards the youth!

Even the sound of wind was ruptured. The slashing of the two blades made the plains fall silent. The dual-blade demon's expression was hideous as his eyes had a glimmer of anticipation.

It was anticipating that a scream from the human in front of it would break the silence!

Suddenly, the two void tearing blade beams that the dual-blade demon brandished seemed to crash into a wall. They stopped suddenly!

“Oh?”

The dual-blade demon was taken by surprise as it looked down. It saw the silver-haired youth within reach of it having caught the dual blades with his bare hands!

The dual-blade demon hurriedly moved forward, in an attempt to sever the two slender palms before beheading that loathsome head.

But at the next moment, with two booms, the two precious blades the dual-blade demon brought from hell had been shattered into countless pieces.

“How is it possible!?”

The dual-blade demon stared at Shi Xiaobai with widened eyes. It found it unbelievable that its blades had been shattered into pieces instantly by the pair of small hands.

However, a blood-stained hand had reached its shoulders at the next moment.

“No!”

The dual-blade demon had a drastic change in expression as it finally realized the cruel reality of the situation. The human in front of it had not only suddenly become powerful, he had become outrageously strong!

However, what could the dual-blade demon do in front of a power that it could not resist?

The only thing he could do was cry tragically!

“Ah!”

The dual-blade demon cried out tragically as its right arm was ripped off!

The overwhelming pain nearly knocked the dual-blade demon unconscious. Its instinct for survival caused it to turn around to flee.

Run. This was no human, it was the devil!

“Ah!”

The dual-blade demon obviously could not escape. Its legs were quickly crushed from the knees as half of its two legs were severed. It fell to the ground, no longer able to stand.

Pain and terror inundated the dual-blade demon's mind as it cried out tragically as tears began streaming out of its eyes.

“No, don't kill me! Spare me please!”

The dual-blade demon pleaded for mercy, like a miserable worm trying hard to crawl forward. When it turned its head and saw the silver-haired youth walking towards it, its eyes were filled with a crazy desire to survive.

But soon, it fell into complete despair.

This was because it could see only ice-cold killing intent and cruel anger in the silver-haired youth's eyes.

“Save me...”

The dual-blade demon cried in pain as it issued a final call for help at the existence that no longer responded.

However, there was no response. Only a silent bloody hand had reached its neck.

“Kacha...”

The dual-blade demon's head was twisted off as its headless body convulsed. Helplessly, it waited for death.

A few seconds later, a voice that resounded through the entire level was heard.

“The sixth level's Level Lord [Chthonian Emperor Estark] has been killed. The sixth level has no more Level Lord! The killer is...



Shi Xiaobai!”

The dual-blade demon was the sixth level’s Level Lord. And at this moment, the creature Shi Xiaobai killed like he was trampling an ant was the Level Lord.

This was the terrifying aspect of the corruptive power. However, this power was only temporary. It would dissipate very quickly. Furthermore, it only gained a temporary increase in strength at the expense of corruption.

In order to instantly break through the God Slaughtering Formation, Kali had activated this power, but it was ‘siphoned’ by Shi Xiaobai. As such, this power now belonged to Shi Xiaobai.

However, Shi Xiaobai, who was at present immersed in his rage, had long lost his sense and reason. The terrifying power and the honor of killing a Level Lord meant nothing to him!

The only thing he wanted to do now was kill, kill, kill!

On the plains, there were no longer any lives for him to slaughter. Mangled corpses covered the ground and the blood spilled had formed rivers that dyed the lands crimson.

The silver-haired youth turned to look at the purple-haired girl in the sky.

That was the only remaining life.

The silver-haired's red eyes flashed a desire to kill, but his expression suddenly struggled violently.

Kali descended from the sky and landed beside the silver-haired youth. She held him gently, ignoring the gross smell of blood staining her own clothes.

The silver-haired youth's body trembled violently as his hands turned stiff. There was a desire to twist the delicate neck within his reach, but a baffling will was resisting his killing instincts.

Kali's eyes lit up slightly as she suddenly saw a strand of black hair from his mane of silver hair!

This was something that wasn't there before!

“Shi Xiaobai, resist it. Resist the corruptive power. You can definitely wake up. You have to wake up!”

Kali whispered by Shi Xiaobai's ear and said resolutely, “Even if you need to slaughter every living creature in this entire trial, I'll ensure that you wake up!”

...

...

## Shanghai City, Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, Main Auditorium

This was the third day the organizations' rookies entered the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower for the mass selection. More than eight hundred rookies had been eliminated out of the thousand rookies.

There were only four people that were currently on the seventh level. Ever since the construction of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, only four legendary figures had ever managed to reach the eighth level.

There were about fifty rookies that reached the sixth level, and it was considered an excellent result considering past trials.

As such the people from the organizations were in a festive mood.

The biggest winner was the organization, Gaia. As a bottom second-tier organization, four of its rookies had managed to reach the sixth level. Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai had managed to conquer the third level's Level Lord, accomplishing the miracle only the Hero King had managed to accomplish.

On the second day of the selection, this matter had appeared on the most authoritative newspaper in China. Although it was only a tiny article, it had caused quite a stir in the country.

Conquering a Level Lord did not sound impressive, something

which many people were unaware of the difficulty. However, when it was punctuated with the words, ‘an accomplishment only the Hero King has ever managed’, it caused every citizen of China to gasp in admiration.

However, in this era of heroes, before the fourth epoch of the apocalypse, no matter how sensational it was, it was difficult for a rookie’s accomplishment to hit the headlines. It did not cause an intense stir, and was somewhat defused by the third day of the selection.

Everyone was waiting in the auditorium for the final result. The attention of most people and their discussions had shifted to Speechless, Mu Lengxi, Sunless, and Pulp Farmer who were in the midst of challenging the seventh level.

However, just as everyone was about to ignore Shi Xiaobai, a news that refreshed the stone monument astounded everyone!

Shi Xiaobai had killed the sixth level’s Level Lord!

This was Shi Xiaobai conquering two Level Lords consecutively in the same trial. This was something even the Hero King failed to accomplish years ago!

Shi Xiaobai had created a new record, rewriting history!

At this moment, no one was stingy with their praises. Exclamations and applause filled the entire auditorium.

However, this was just the beginning of everything!

This was a day which was destined to go down in history, one that would shock the entire nation!

At nine in the morning, Shi Xiaobai killed the sixth level's Level Lord, Chthonian Emperor Estark!

At half past nine in the morning, Shi Xiaobai killed the fifth level's Level Lord, Death Aristocrat!

At ten in the morning, Shi Xiaobai killed the second level's Level Lord, Demonic Beast Level Lord!

At half past ten in the morning, Shi Xiaobai killed the first level's Level Lord, Nightmare Terror Level Lord!

He slaughtered from the sixth level to the first level, killing one Level Lord every half an hour.

Double-kill, triple-kill, quadruple kill...

Adding the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign that was conquered, Shi Xiaobai had conquered five Level Lords alone!

Everyone went from shock to horror, from horror to admiration, and from admiration to numbness.

They only had one thing left on their minds.

Fuck, nobody should have thoughts on grabbing tomorrow's headlines!

...

# Chapter 333: Prevent Wang Feng From Making The Headlines

---

Ever since the construction of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, only the Hero King had managed to conquer a Level Lord. Although conquering a Level Lord had nothing much to do with one's final results, the difficulty of this matter was destined to make it a great honor.

Of course, this was only a tiny matter throughout the Hero King's life. Few people took notice of it, and many people did not even know of this matter.

However, this matter was destined to be repeatedly mentioned by many from today onwards.

Shi Xiaobai had conquered five Level Lords in a single trial! The glory he had obtained in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower exceeded the Hero King by five times, or even more!

Five times the Hero King sounded like an exaggeration or wordplay, but the general public would not care about this. They would only care about matters if they could be used as gossip over meals.

China Daily's editors quickly received news from their reporters. A story regarding a rookie typically was ineligible to appear on China Daily, which received a myriad of shocking news every day.

But yesterday, after resisting great opposition, the editor-in-chief left a small article for Shi Xiaobai's conquering of the third level's Level Lord. This slightly fat editor-in-chief always advocated the promotion of youths in the country. He believed that they were the hope of the country's next generation.

As such, when the news reached China Daily's editors, editor-in-chief, Tai Shan immediately began grinning from ear to ear. He praised the youth, Shi Xiaobai, for living up to his expectations. He had been given a pleasant surprise and had plans for this young man.

A junior editor named Li Hong, who was great at sucking up, did not miss this opportunity. He complimented, "Editor-in-chief Tai Shan's sure has foresight. Yesterday, he said how Shi Xiaobai would be a person of tremendous promise. He had gone against all those opposed to give him an article. Who knew he would do something that is completely unprecedented and never to be repeated! Everyone has to be amazed by Editor-in-chief Tai Shan's foresight!"

His flattery had made Tai Shan chuckle. He could not help but say with a laugh, "The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower only had nine Level Lords. Shi Xiaobai has conquered five alone. This matter is truly one to never be repeated. Leave tomorrow's headline to the child. I believe no one will have any objections?"

The headlines of China Daily were always something China gave the most attention to daily. All of them were basically extremely important matters, or news of an extremely famous heroes. Once they appeared in the headlines of China Daily, they would quickly



be known all over the country.

Typically, regardless of how outstanding rookies were, they would not receive such treatment. Even Speechless had never been eligible to appear in the headlines. However, what Shi Xiaobai had done was truly bizarre. Furthermore, he had encountered an editor-in-chief that advocated the supporting of the younger generation.

Even if other editors had differing thoughts on the matter, they were unsure about raising any objections.

However, deputy editor-in-chief, Lin Liang, had always been at loggerheads with the editor-in-chief. Without any surprise, Lin Liang put forward his objections. He said, "I think there is need for careful consideration over this matter. Shi Xiaobai is a rookie after all. We have seen many peerless rookies being placed on a pedestal before but they only ended up average. If he makes the headlines, it might get to Shi Xiaobai's head. Furthermore...Wang Feng released a new war song, 'Survive', yesterday. It's said to have broken through the limits of resonating with thousands of people, reaching brand new heights in war songs. It seems this matter is more eligible to hit the headlines?"

There were singers in this world as well. However, the songs these singers sang were not only for music appreciation. Some of these songs could treat injuries. Some could restore strength, and there were even songs that could raise one's combat power.

In this world, there was an occupation of 'singers'. Therefore, the ability to sing, the ability to compose and write lyrics was also

a reflection of power.

As for Wang Feng, he was an outstanding singer. He was considered an A-list singer, with many of his songs being extremely popular.

As for the song, ‘Survive’ Wang Feng recently released, not only was it an extremely difficult rock war song, it had broken through the limits of resonating with ten thousand people. It could be considered a grand matter in the world of singers.

Therefore, many editors wavered because of Lin Liang’s suggestion.

“Shall we give Shi Xiaobai the second page?”

“The appearance of a rookie in the headlines has never happened in the history of China Daily. I believe we shouldn’t make it an exception. It’s also time for Wang Feng to make the headlines for once.”

“I also think we shouldn’t extol rookies too much. That Speechless Li reached the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm at the age of six, and back then, we gave him the second page. And this year, he’s already fourteen, but he’s still at the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm. It might really have gotten to his head.”

“ ... ”

More than half the editors began to object. In their minds, it was preposterous for rookies to appear in the headlines. Being able to be on the second page or even given a small article was a great honor. This was a regulation China Daily had always maintained.

Editor-in-chief Tai Shan immediately blackened his face as he said angrily, “Are you all objecting? Fine, tell me. Which rank did China reach in the previous World Youth Tournament and World Junior Tournament?”

The editors immediately fell silent. China, which claimed to be one of the top five major countries in the world had never clinched gold in the World Youth Tournament and the Junior Tournament that happened once every four years. It had managed to clinch silver once, but in the present situation, the best contestant the last tournament had only stopped at the round for best sixteen. The contestant did not even enter the round for the best eight.

Lin Liang said with a heavy tone, “China’s results in the World Youth and Junior tournaments are indeed unsatisfactory, but what has that got to do with us? If a headline can make the younger generation of China clinch gold, so what if China Daily’s headlines are given to them every day? The point is that it doesn’t work. We are unable to effect any change.”

Tai Shan said with a sneer, “A headline might be unable to change the status quo, but it can let the disappointed citizens see a glimmer of hope. What we lack isn’t talent, but environment! China’s flammers are world-famous. Regardless of how well your overall performance is, a tiny mistake will result in you being flamed till you have a pig’s head. How can our young do their best

under such public pressure? With them being afraid of this and that, it's obvious they can't produce any results! Furthermore, as one of the leaders of domestic news and public opinion, China Daily should take the lead to effect change! I believe not only should we put Shi Xiaobai on a pedestal, we should do our best doing so. We should extol him sky high, making every citizen in China know that we still have talents in our younger generation! Young people need a goal, an object to pursue. We should mold Shi Xiaobai into a benchmark for the younger generation!"

Tai Shan's words astounded the other editors. They never expected the editor-in-chief to have such profound thoughts. Furthermore, what he said was rational and based on evidence. It stirred their hearts.

How could such stirring words come out from an old man who had one leg in the coffin? He had indeed impressed them with his views.

The editors were instantly moved.

Lin Liang's expression changed drastically. He had received a large money packet from Wang Feng's manager yesterday. He had pledged that the headline was definitely his. Now, he was likely in trouble with the appearance of an unexpected Shi Xiaobai as well as a stubborn Tai Shan!

Lin Liang said in a heavy voice, "Second page would be empowering enough. The headlines is overdoing it! Furthermore, Wang Feng had nearly reached the headlines for seven times. If it's not given to him this time, people might think that China Daily is

targeting him.”

Wang Feng was extremely unlucky. This person had done seven deeds that could get him in the headlines, but every time, he would encounter something more impressive than what he did. As such, his headlines were stolen from him seven times.

Some citizens even jokingly called Wang Feng a spy sent undercover by aliens. The moment he hit the headlines, it was a signal to the aliens to launch their attacks. The seven heroic figures that had prevented Wang Feng from reaching the headlines were said to have saved the world seven times.

Wang Feng’s management team had even deliberately chosen an uneventful day to release ‘Survive’, but they never expected Shi Xiaobai to suddenly appear. The headlines were in danger once again!

When Lin Liang said this, the editors that were easily swayed immediately felt what Lin Liang said was reasonable. Wang Feng was a important figure in the music world. It seemed inappropriate to offend him.

Tai Shan said in a heavy tone, “Go explain to Wang Feng’s side! This matter is settled. Don’t even think of touching Shi Xiaobai’s headlines. Also, send reporters to pay close attention to this matter. In the meantime, investigate Shi Xiaobai. We want to extol him to the heavens! If anything happens, I’ll take full responsibility. As an old man about to retire, let me do something for the country in my final days.”

After Tai Shan said this, he gave a long sigh. He ignored Lin Liang's objections and walked out of the meeting room.

Everyone looked at each other. Since this matter did not truly concern them, they did not make things difficult. Lin Liang cursed 'that stubborn old fool' before leaving sulkily. He had to return that money packet!

...

...

## Sixth level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower

It was already almost chaos in the outside world, but the rookies undergoing the trials were scared silly. How was the sixth level's Level Lord killed by Shi Xiaobai before it descended?

How did the first, second and fifth level's Level Lord succumb as well?

No one could understand how Shi Xiaobai had managed to do it. They could only imagine that it had to do with that mysterious Ka Xiaozi.

And they encountered a huge problem.

They couldn't find the dragon!

The ugly monster that Kali had instantly killed apparently wasn't the dragon. The system did not tell everyone of anyone becoming the fifth Braveheart. There was also no announcement of the sixth dragon's location. This meant that the dragon was apparently still alive.

Then, where was the dragon?

Everyone began scouring the world looking for the dragon.

Some of the rookies had already left the forest as they began to search for the dragon in Monster Fairyland.

A few rookies unknowingly walked to the coast and were immediately dumbfounded.

When they came across this spot, they had marveled at the vastness and beauty of the sea.

But at this moment in time and at this location, the sea had vanished.

There was only pit that gradually deepened endlessly. It looked like..the entire sea had been drained!

“Quick, look there! What's that?”

A rookie exclaimed.

In the distant horizon above the dried ground, a dark mass of light was floating in mid-air!

---

Translator's Note: This chapter might appear to be a filler chapter, but it's actually related to a meme in China. [Wang Feng](#) is a celebrity whose news is often overshadowed by news from other celebrities that happened at the same time. It was also mentioned in [IRAS Chapter 42](#) and [IRAS Chapter 178](#). An article about it from [Global Times](#):

Wang Feng, a popular singer, has coined a joking rule that whenever he has big news, another event is bound to occlude it. This Monday, the launch of the Chang'e-3, China's new space probe, is bound to leave the release of his new album in the shade.

Instances of Wang's curse are numerous. When Wang announced his divorce, on the same day, Wang Fei and Li Yapeng, a famous star couple announced their divorce. When Wang talked of his new love, on the same day, Chinese soccer club Hengda won the AFC Champions League.

After his love affairs failed to win him headlines, Wang published a post Friday hoping to promote the release of his new album on Monday. However, China announced the Chang'e-3 moon probe would be launched early Monday.



# Chapter 334: You Have Clearly Awakened, Why Are You Playing Dumb

---

In a particular quaint village, there lived a blind man.

The blind man was a very unlucky person. He was born blind. Other than color black, there was no other color existing in his world.

However, the old blind man was also a very happy man. Even though he was blind, he had managed to meet a partner in his youth. They loved each other and finally married, eventually giving birth to seven children.

However, this was just the beginning of everything unfortunate.

The old blind man's wife died due to childbirth issues during the birth of seventh child. It left the old blind man to raise seven children while he was in his middle age.

Although he was blind, he was great at calligraphy, knew how to play the Erhu, and was eloquent with the gift of the gab.

Therefore, the old man would perform on the streets daily, play the Erhu or tell stories to passers-by in exchange for tips.

At night, he would write a bunch of couplets of extremely high quality, but were extremely cheap because of his lack of fame. He

sold these in order to make ends meet.

The old man toiled day and night, barely able to feed the seven children. Some people persuaded him to sell a few children, or give them to other families, but the old blind man refused. Every child was loved by him, so he could not bear to part with them.

There were others who advised him to look for a wife before he grew old, even if they were ugly or somewhat slow in the head, because it would at least be an additional helper. However, the old blind man refused as well. He was still deeply in love with his deceased wife, and would always leave the position of wife for her.

The old blind man toiled day and night for ten years before the seven children finally grew up one after another. The eldest son had finally reached the age of eighteen. Ten years of starvation had made the old blind man extremely weak, but maybe it was the grace of Heaven because during the ten years, the old blind man never fell seriously ill. He did not even catch the cold or have a fever.

However, the tragedy began when the eldest son reached eighteen years of age.

The eldest son was a construction worker and could not bear the bullying of the foreman. In his wrath, he smacked the foreman to death with a brick!

It was a bloody and brutal scene, one that the old blind man could not see. However, from the mouths of the prison guards, he

heard of the carnage of the foreman dying as well as the savage madness his eldest son had become.

The old blind man refused to believe it because his son was clearly an honest and amiable person. He was kind and timid. He did not even dare step an ant to death, an honest man who never said angry words. How could he have killed someone else in his rage?

But there was concrete evidence. Many workers had witnessed the brutal scene, so there was no room for dispute.

The eldest son was sentenced to death and he was executed.

The family was immersed in grief, but this was just the beginning of the tragedy.

The following year, the second son committed suicide by jumping into the sea. He left behind a suicide note.

The very handsome second son was the pride of the family. He was extremely intelligent and the entire family pinned their hopes on him by investing in his education. He did not disappoint them. His results were always very good. He had recently finished his civil examinations and did a match against the answers. There was a high chance of him being the top scholar.

The second child also had a beautiful lover, and they were deeply in love with each other.

But the more outstanding a person was, the more it would incur envy. An ugly scion who did badly in his studies was envious of what the second son had. He used his money to deprive the second son of everything.

The scion had used the second son's background to break the lovers apart, and then switched their examination transcripts. He even set up the second son, causing him to lose his reputation. His closest friends began to drift away from him.

The second son was unable to bear the reality of such a stark contrast and decided to commit suicide. He left behind a suicide note to explain everything.

The old blind man was overcome with grief, but he was unable to avenge his son.

However, the tragedy was nowhere close to coming to an end.

In the fourth year, the third son turned eighteen. The old blind man used his tiny amount of savings to hold a banquet for his son. He never expected that his third son who had never had a full meal was so delighted that he gorged on the food in gluttony so much that it ended up killing him.

In the fifth year, his fourth child, a daughter, who was extremely beautiful, married a good family at the age of seventeen. Terrible news came in a few days, with the daughter's husband dying in bed. The daughter claimed that it was her own fault and also ended

up committing suicide. The old blind man was beyond tears. He knew his daughter as an extremely shy and conservative girl, how could it be the daughter's fault for her husband's death in bed?

In the sixth year, the humble fifth child, a son, offended a martial artist who was filled with pride and was beaten to death. The reason being the humility the son presented was thought of as posturing by the martial artist. The prideful martial artist detested others posturing in front of him and was trying to force the son to use his full strength, but he never expected the son to really be extremely weak. He ended up accidentally killing the fifth child.

In the eighth year, the sixth child, his illustrious daughter worked in the textile industry, but because of the sloth a few senior women had, they piled all the work on the daughter. The daughter worked hard and respected her seniors. Without a word of complaint, she ended up dying from exhaustion.

In the tenth year, the upright seventh child, a son worked for the civil service. However, the magistrate he was working for was extremely greedy. He had committed many sins in secret, and when it was about to be discovered, he made the son the scapegoat. The magistrate was very powerful, so the old blind man was unable to seek redress for his son. He could only suffer his last son being executed.

As such, the old blind man who had struggled alone to raise seven children for ten years had lost them all within a decade.

The way they died made the old blind man disappointed with humanity. He even grew to hate it.

How could his honest eldest son kill someone after having his wrath incurred? It had to be too much bullying that he could not bear any further.

How could his shy and conservative fourth child cause her husband to die in bed? It must be the husband's lack of control of his lust, causing his own death.

How did his third son gorge himself to death because of gluttony? It was all because the world was too cruel to poor people. Even a full meal was a dream.

There was no need to even mention the second son who had been forced to his death by the scion in his envy, the fifth child who had been killed by a martial artist because of his pride, and how his sixth child was worked to her death because of the sloth of those women, as well as the magistrate that caused his seventh child's death because of his greed.

The deaths of his seven children were not their fault, but the world's fault. It was the fault of all those ugly humans.

The old blind man lived the rest of his life in grief and indignation, but he was only a weak old blind man. He did not have the ability to seek revenge. All he could do was curse in the night at this world alone, cursing all of humanity.

If he possessed power...

Suddenly one day, the old blind man opened his eyes and saw the color of the world.

It was an ice-cold world that was only black and white.

“I heard that the color of blood is red?”

Having suddenly recovered his sight, the colorblindness that seemed to screw the old blind man made him think of adding a new color to the black and white world.

And at this moment in time, he finally possessed the power to do all of that.

...

...

After the old blind man opened his eyes, Shi Xiaobai opened his eyes as well, ending the long sorrowful but extremely realistic dream.

After opening his eyes, he noticed that he was lying on a soft bed. Golden willow branches cascaded down like a waterfall, blocking the clear sky. There was a faint fragrance in the fresh air around him.

His right hand was leaning on something soft.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised as he looked to his side. There, he saw a purple-haired girl holding his right hand, adhering tightly to his right side. She was fast asleep with her eyes closed.

The purple-haired girl was none other than Kali. At this moment, Kali had returned to her original appearance. She was dressed in a black gothic dress, and wore a white patch on her right eye. Her delicate appearance was one of a pixie.

Kali's original appearance was in fact more beautiful than Ka Xiaozhi, especially if she took off her eye patch, but for some reason, she wore it.

Shi Xiaobai gently moved his right hand, trying to retract his right hand from the soft embrace. Kali stirred and opened her eyes.

“You are awake!”

Kali smiled in delight. This was because Shi Xiaobai's eyes had returned to a clearness and his hair had been restored to black.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and asked, “Where is this place? What happened?”

Shi Xiaobai only remembered himself using his superpower of Power Siphoning to extract the corruptive powers from Kali's body. After that, he gradually lost his consciousness and had a long



dream. In a dream, he was just a bystander, witnessing the tragic life of the old blind man. His mood was still heavy, but he did not know what happened after that.

“This is the world of the seventh level...Nothing happened after you had fallen unconscious.”

Kali whispered. It was best if Shi Xiaobai had forgotten what he had done in his rage, therefore she did not mention it.

Kali suddenly thought of something and tsked, pretending to be angry, “Shi Xiaobai, how can you do this? Don’t you know how worried I was? That power is something you are unable to control for now. What am I to do if something happened?”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai said with a laugh, “What’s there to worry? It’s just a corruptive power and it’s nothing that can do a thing to This King. Look, isn’t This King just fine? That so-called corruptive power has surrendered beneath This King’s feet!”

Kali rolled her eyes. That was entirely not the case! However, she could not tell Shi Xiaobai that he had nearly been devoured by the corruptive power!

If not for experiencing the endless brutal massacre to vent his anger, Shi Xiaobai could have completely lost all reason.

But thankfully, after killing the four masterminds, which were the Level Lords of the sixth, fifth, second, and first level, Shi

Xiaobai's rage came to an end. He had temporarily been restored to his original appearance.

Kali whispered, "In the future, you have to pay attention to controlling your emotions. When you encounter something angry, remember to take deep breaths to calm yourself. Do not be angry."

The corruptive power of anger still existed in Shi Xiaobai. If he was ever infuriated, it was very likely for him to transform into the state with silverish-white hair again.

Shi Xiaobai was taken aback and said with a laugh, "Don't worry, the fury of a King isn't so easily triggered by anybody."

Upon hearing this, Kali had mixed emotions.

Shi Xiaobai had mentioned the fury of a King several times, but this time it was genuine. Infuriating Shi Xiaobai would only result in death.

Shi Xiaobai ruminated for a moment before he prepared to get up. It was as though he had been lying down for an extended period of time. His body felt somewhat stiff.

However, Kali prevented Shi Xiaobai from retracting his right hand. She gently said, "Lie down a little longer. I still have questions to ask you!"

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment before nodding. He had

questions for Kali as well.

He turned his head slightly, and since they were very close to begin with, their foreheads nearly touched.

An ambiguous mood emerged as Kali held her breath.

Her azure eyes and his black eyes looked at each other, reflecting each other's reflection.

Their lips began to approach each other like magnets.

Ever since he received the corruptive power, Shi Xiaobai had accepted Kali from the bottom of his heart. He felt that maybe it wasn't a bad thing after all. There was no need to mention about Kali obviously. Having been alone for ten thousand years made her to yearn more than anyone for a partner.

Just as the kiss was about to be completed, a loud bang gave the both of them a scare.

The two looked up spontaneously and saw a hole in the sky, as a tiny black-lit person emerged out of it!

Kali was immediately jolted as her expression changed drastically!

The deadly sin, Gluttony, had broken through her seal and had

managed to chase to the seventh level?

Just as Kali was about to get up to suppress the tiny black-lit person again. This time, it would not be in the deep depths of the sea, but the abyss!

But at this moment, a hoarse voice came from the sky.

“You have clearly awakened, why are you playing dumb?”

This was the voice produced by the tiny black-lit person. Furthermore, it was said with the language of modern humans. Furthermore, its words were complete and the accent was standard and very clear!

These clear words landed in Kali and Shi Xiaobai's ears. There was nothing around them, so clearly, the words were directed at the two of them.

Kali felt like she was struck by lightning as her face immediately turned pale. The meaning behind the words the deadly sin, Gluttony, said was something she knew very well. It was also the thing she was most afraid of. A cruel fact that she was trying to avoid!

When Kali suppressed Gluttony, she had told it to ‘Stay deep in the sea and practice how to speak’, but she had never believed that Gluttony would really listen to her and hone its ability to speak.

What the heck!?

Kali immediately felt so depressed that she wanted to cry. Gluttony's words had torn through the final line of defense she used to avoid reality.

There was no way for her to escape it any further.

Kali turned her head to look at Shi Xiaobai, who was just inches away from her, as she felt tortured by a certain pain.

Shi Xiaobai, are you really the Original Sin of Calamity?

Furthermore, you have already awakened?

...

# Chapter 335: Take A Good Look At Who He Is!

---

Although Gluttony had been accidentally freed by Shi Xiaobai in the Underworld, this was the first time he was seeing the tiny black-lit person.

Hearing the tiny black-lit person say to the two of them “You have clearly awakened, why are you playing dumb”, the first thing Shi Xiaobai thought of was that it was speaking to Kali.

After all, he did not know the tiny black-lit person. Furthermore, he had not awakened anything while deliberately play dumb.

Turning his head, he saw Kali’s expression change drastically as her face turned pale.

Shi Xiaobai asked out of curiosity, “What’s the matter?”

Kali was at a loss as to what to say. There was a struggle in her eyes.

What Gluttony said had nearly confirmed her guess. Now, how was she to avoid it?

At this moment, the tiny black-lit person spoke again, “I came all this way looking for you, but you are just going to play dumb? You are refusing to even come out to look at me?”

With that said, Kali's heart that had sank like it had dropped to the bottom of a valley sprang back up like a roller-coaster.

Gluttony wasn't here for Shi Xiaobai? If not, it would not have said words that meant 'you aren't even willing to meet me'.

However, from the series of actions Gluttony had undertaken, its target was no doubt Shi Xiaobai!

What was going on?

The tiny black-lit person waited for a moment before it angrily said, "Are you not coming out!?"

Still there was no response.

The tiny black-lit person said coldly, "If you don't come out, I'll kill this human!"

The tiny black-lit person pointed at Shi Xiaobai with its tiny fingers.

Kali was immediately greatly relieved.

From the looks of it, Shi Xiaobai was definitely not the Original Sin of Calamity, if not, Gluttony would not dare to use Shi Xiaobai as a threat.

However, was Gluttony dumb to threaten Shi Xiaobai's life in front of her?

Kali immediately said with a sneer, "You can give it a try."

The tiny black-lit person looked at Kali and fell silent for a few moments. It said in a deep voice, "Pixie, why do you keep obstructing me in everything I do? Sire had once saved your pixie race. I can forget about how you didn't repay the favor, but you even return kindness with ingratitude!?"

Kali was taken aback when she heard this. She said coldly, "Is the Sire you refer to the Original Sin of Calamity?"

The tiny black-lit person said with a nod, "That is the name humans call Sire."

Kali immediately found it absurd.

The pixie race had been destroyed by the Original Sin of Calamity, yet Gluttony dared to say that the Original Sin of Calamity had saved the pixie race?

There should be some logic in fabricating stories!

Kali could not be bothered to engage in a war of words with Gluttony. Since it was determined that Shi Xiaobai was not the



Original Sin of Calamity, Kali was somewhat interested in the entity Gluttony was seeking.

It might have been the Original Sin of Calamity or another one of the Deadly Sins.

Kali had spared Gluttony and not killed it because she wanted to use it to fish for bigger fish. She never expected that Gluttony was somewhat dumb to serve itself right to her doorstep.

Kali said coldly, “If my memory serves me correct, the Original Sin of Calamity was the one responsible for the annihilation of the pixie race. Your mentioning of saving is overturning the facts. There is no need for you to argue. It was a matter I witnessed myself. When the time comes, I will settle the score with your king. Now, I’ll give you a chance. Tell me who you are looking for? Why did you chase Shi Xiaobai all the way here?”

The tiny black-lit person fell silent for a moment and said, “What you see might not be true. Fine, Sire would not mind having another enemy that returns kindness with ingratitude. As for the entity I’m looking for, so what if I tell you? It...is on the body of the human beside you!”

Kali was slightly taken aback.

On Shi Xiaobai’s body?

Kali turned to look at Shi Xiaobai. If there was anything special

on Shi Xiaobai's body, it was undoubtedly the sword spirit in that holy sword, as well as...

“That dog!?” Kali exclaimed.

“It is no dog.”

The tiny black-lit person said in a heavy tone, “It is a sacred beast, as well as a pet of Sire. In human parlance, it's called ‘Greed’!”

Kali's pupils slightly contracted. The poodle named the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign was indeed somewhat greedy, but Kali never expected for the dog to be one of the Deadly Sins—Greed!

It was no wonder the tiny black-lit person kept pursuing Shi Xiaobai. It was because it had found the dog on Shi Xiaobai's body.

But why would the dog succumb to Shi Xiaobai?

According to Gluttony's words, the dog had already awakened, but it was just playing dumb?

Why was it playing dumb?

Kali had a sense of foreboding. She looked at Shi Xiaobai and whispered, “Xiaobai, can you let the Thousand Eye Demon

Sovereign come out?”

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat confused. He did not understand most of what Kali and the tiny black-lit person were talking about. He did not even have a clear understanding of the Original Sin of Calamity. He remembered Riko mentioning it before and how Kali once said that the Original Sin of Calamity was her enemy. As for the rest, he did not know at all.

Judging from what the two of them were talking about, the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign that he conquered using the Master Conquest Ball was apparently not as simple as a Level Lord?

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment and shook his head. “Forget it, since it doesn’t want to come out, it must have its reasons. Regardless of what it once was, it is now This King’s pet. This King does not like to force it to do what it doesn’t like.”

Upon hearing this, Kali said gently, “Alright!”

She fully supported Shi Xiaobai’s wishes. Regardless of what the consequences would be, she would address it when the time came.

The tiny black-lit person was incensed when it heard this. “Foolish human, do you think a scum like you is worthy to be the owner of Sire’s pet? Sacred dog, if you don’t get the fuck out, I’ll exhaust all means to kill this human!”

Kali said with a sneer, “It looks like you really disparage me.

Fine, this time, I'll send you into the abyss for you to learn what it means to feel respectful fear!"

Seeing the tiny black-lit person repeatedly using Shi Xiaobai's life as a threat, Kali was immediately infuriated!

"Pixie, don't you go too far!"

The tiny black-lit person said coldly, "You are indeed very strong, but you are like an ant when placed in front of Sire. I'm only one fragment of the will of Sire. Regardless of how you seal me or kill me multiple times, a thought from Sire will create thousands more of me! I advise you to mind your business. If not, the day of Sire's awakening will be the day of your downfall!"

Kali did not speak any further. What Gluttony said was likely true. If not Gluttony would not have recklessly exposed its partner, Greed. She had underestimated the Original Sin of Calamity's strength after all!

However, regardless of how strong the Original Sin of Calamity was, she had to fight it to the death!

Kali slowly stretched her index finger out. A blob of light began bursting out from her fingertip!

This arrogant Gluttony deserves death!

At this moment, the golden ball in Shi Xiaobai's clothes began to

shake violently

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised as he took out the golden ball and pressed its switch.

A golden light bloomed as a mini poodle that was as white as snow appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai.

Kali slowly withdrew her finger. From the looks of it, this white dog had chosen to come at this moment in order to save the tiny black-lit person?

The tiny black-lit person said coldly, “You have finally decided on coming out?”

“Woof!”

The white dog barked softly.

This was purely a dog’s bark. No one understood what the dog’s bark meant.

The tiny black-lit person said angrily, “Stop playing dumb. You have clearly been awakened!”

The white dog shook its tail and took a few steps back.

“I...I...don’t...know...what...you...are saying.”

A voice that was like a one or two-year-old toddler came out of the white dog’s mouth in a staccato manner. “I...seem...to...have...amnesia...I...had...a dream, but...the dream...had...you...but...I don’t know...what happened... Does...this mean...awakening?”

When the tiny black-lit person heard this, it fell silent and looked at Shi Xiaobai. It coldly said, “Human, what did you do to it? Why did it become so weak, to the point of it losing its memory?”

Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders and said, “This King conquered it.”

To be precise, he had used a B-level reward from the Absolute Choice, the Master Conquest Ball, to conquer the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign. However, Shi Xiaobai naturally could not disclose matters regarding the Absolute Choice, so he had streamlined his explanation.

The tiny black-lit person immediately said angrily, “What a joke! How can a weak human like you even think of conquering Sire’s sacred beast? Sacred dog, what did this scum do to you!?”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes turned cold slightly. The tiny black-lit person had repeatedly insulted him. Did it treat him as some good-natured nice guy?

If not for agreeing Kali to not be easily angered, Shi Xiaobai did

not mind letting the tiny black-lit person have a taste of the anger of a King.

However, before Shi Xiaobai or Kali were angered, a dog was first to be unwilling to accept it.

“Shut...Shut up!”

The white dog puffed its chest and said loudly, “Do... Do you know...who...you are insulting? Take...take a good look... Look... carefully...at who he is!”

When the white dog said this, Kali and the tiny black-lit person immediately had a drastic change in expression.

The tiny black-lit person looked carefully at Shi Xiaobai and said in horror moments later, “Impossible! How could that happen!?”

Kali was too deep for tears.

Things had gone full circle back to the original point.

# Chapter 336: Are You Courting Death Or Committing Suicide

---

“Impossible! How could that happen!?”

When the tiny black-lit person heard the white dog tell it to look carefully at who Shi Xiaobai was, it began to observe Shi Xiaobai carefully. Apparently, it had discovered something new. It was a discovery that was enough to make it shocked!

Kali's heart immediately leaped to her throat. She was originally suspecting the reason why Greed would become Shi Xiaobai's pet, and at this moment, with Gluttony's surprised attitude, it immediately made her guess ominously.

Everything had seemed to return to the original point.

Shi Xiaobai was indeed not an ordinary human. Then, who was he?

Could it be...

“Human, how did that sword recognize you as its master!?”

Gluttony said the discovery that had shocked it!

The holy sword that had sealed it for eons had recognized this human as its master, shocking Gluttony greatly.



Kali was dumbfounded upon hearing this. As she sighed, she found it quite amusing.

It seemed like she was a bit oversensitive?

Shi Xiaobai could not be bothered to answer. The tiny black-lit person's attitude made him rather unhappy.

Seeing the Shi Xiaobai not answering him, the tiny black-lit person looked startled. To be able to make Greed and that holy sword recognize him as master, he could not be an ordinary human in any possible way!

The tiny black-lit person turned to look at the white dog and asked, "Who the hell is he!?"

The dog seemed to know who this human was?

The dog shook its tail and shouted loudly, "Shi! Xiao! Bai!"

The tiny black-lit person said in wonderment, "Shi Xiaobai?"

The white dog nodded and said with a grin, "Shi Xiaobai...is my... master... You are not...allowed to insult him...or...or I will...bite you!"

The white dog had clearly lost its memories and its intelligence

was that of a three-year-old. Hoping it would say anything of value was asking too much from a dog.

Kali shook her head and smirked. She had neglected such simple logic, showing how her concern for the matter made her unable to think straight.

The tiny black-lit person's face immediately turned sullen as it angrily said, "Are you kidding me? Fine, you silly dog, have recognized a human as your master, then you are no longer fit to be Sire's sacred pet. Die, and return your willpower to Sire!"

The moment the tiny black-lit person's words faded, it opened its mouth. A tiny hole darker than the darkness appeared in its throat like a black hole. A strong attractive pull struck the white dog.

As the ground began to rupture, rocks began to be torn apart into fragments. Winds howled as stones began swirling around like they were in a vortex towards the tiny black-lit person's mouth. In the sky, clouds began to move at an astonishing speed, as though they were trying to escape the terrifying pull, but instantly they dissipated, and flowed towards the darkness like water.

The white dog yelped, but it did not have the strength to struggle against the tiny black-lit person's pull. The struggle its four limbs did was useless as though it was being washed away by turbulent rapids.

A beam of light bloomed as the white dog's body was wrapped in light, as the the surging attractive force came to a halt. The white

dog whined and hurriedly ran backwards. The way it was flailing its limbs in mid-air looked rather adorable.

The white dog fled behind Shi Xiaobai, and produced a low whine, like a frightened child.

The tiny black-lit person seemed determined to kill the white dog and began taking a deep breath in the direction of Shi Xiaobai and the white dog.

Its mouth could devour the heavens and earth, and with it taking a deep breath, the attractive forces would definitely be extremely terrifying.

Unfortunately, Kali was just beside.

“Courting death?” Kali sneered.

Did Gluttony think that she did not exist? Or was its brain screwed up after being kicked by a donkey?

It was a suicide to attack Shi Xiaobai in front of her!

Kali had repeatedly felt the apprehension of a possible truth, leaving her in quite a bad mood. Seeing the tiny black-lit person acting madly, she did not hold back any more.

Kali stretched out her slender hands, and her jade-like finger

tapped in mid-air, as a small beam of light the size of a needle shot towards the tiny black-lit person.

Wherever the light passed, darkness dissipated. The terrifying attractive force was instantly dispelled, and the tiny black-lit person was wrapped within the light.

“Ah!”

The tiny black-lit person screamed as the black light that covered it dissipated. Beams of light began to pierce through its thin, wizened and ugly body like needles.

The tiny black-lit person's screams continued as the white dog peeked its head out from behind Shi Xiaobai. Its eyes were filled with a struggle. Its instinct made it want to plead for the tiny black-lit person, but its intelligence was only that of a three-year-old. Having nearly been devoured by the tiny black-lit person, the horror it had experienced made it momentarily at a loss.

“Foolish pixie. The day of the Sire's awakening is the day of your regret!”

The tiny black-lit person cursed in a tragic scream. They were both at the Psionic Mortal Realm, but its strength had yet to be fully restored. In terms of means and power, the gap between Kali and it was just too large.

The light began to stab into the tiny black-lit person's body, like

needles stabbing into a voodoo doll.

Kali had a cold expression. Gluttony had devoured countless humans in the past three calamities and so it had committed atrocious crimes. If not for hopes for fishing for bigger fish, Kali would have killed it a long time ago.

Now, having discovered Gluttony constantly making her feel apprehensive, nearly making her mistaken Shi Xiaobai as the Original Sin of Calamity, she decided to kill it to cheer herself up.

Kali decided not to hold back. With another tap of her finger, a golden beam of light shot out like an arrow, instantly penetrating the tiny black-lit person's chest.

The tiny black-lit person's body suddenly began to swell like a constantly inflating balloon.

“Sire, here I come... Hahahaha...”

The tiny black-lit person suddenly guffawed with its head up right before its death. Its laughter did not sound like it was filled with indignation, instead, it had the inkling that its plan had worked.

Kali fell silent. Gluttony's actions were clearly courting death.

Could it be...that its goal was to commit suicide?

“Boom!”

An explosion echoed as the inflated tiny black-lit person exploded, blasting into pieces. Instantly, it swirled into the light and vanished into nothingness.

Gluttony had fallen!

The white dog whimpered and lowered its head, as though it was feeling upset.

Shi Xiaobai watched the scene of the tiny black-lit person dying. For some reason, this was clearly the first time he was seeing the tiny black-lit person and was unhappy with the tiny black-lit person's rampant attitude, but he felt a baffling sense of grief when he saw the tiny black-lit person die.

Just his imagination?

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and repressed the strange feeling. He reached his hands out and ruffled the white dog's head before keeping it back into the golden ball.

Kali turned around and glanced at Shi Xiaobai, feeling a stone roll off her heart.

Shi Xiaobai was not the Original Sin of Calamity, if not Gluttony

would not have been so overbearing with its words when talking to Shi Xiaobai, willing to attack him even at the cost of its life.

Although Shi Xiaobai's experiences were somewhat unique, the kind and upright him definitely could not be the Original Sin of Calamity that was attempting to destroy the world.

Kali was relieved and immediately thought of something. She hesitated for a moment and whispered, "Xiaobai, it's almost time for me to leave."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback. He understood a moment later that Kali was not a trial-taker. Indeed, there was no reason for her to stay in the trials. Furthermore, if she were to stay by his side, the following trials would become overly simple because of her existence.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a moment but did not retain her. After all, the trial was about to end soon, so it wasn't like they were short for time. He said with a nod, "Alright, let us meet outside."

Kali gave a gentle smile. Walking towards Shi Xiaobai, she hugged him in a very natural manner.

In fact, Kali still wanted to accompany Shi Xiaobai to engage in more escapades, even if she just watched by the side. However, when Shi Xiaobai was unconscious, the assessment program's central computer took the initiative to look for her.

The assessment central program put forth a peace agreement. The agreement allowed Shi Xiaobai to pass the sixth level unconditionally, and Kali agreed to leave herself after Shi Xiaobai recovered.

There were only seven dragons. Four were already dead. Although the fifth dragon had been deliberately hidden by Kali, the assessment program quickly discovered this and recreated a new dragon.

Kali was unable to determine when Shi Xiaobai would wake up. If all the dragons were killed before Shi Xiaobai woke up, Shi Xiaobai would automatically be deemed eliminated.

Kali had no choice but to agree to the assessment program's concession. By leaving the trial, Shi Xiaobai would unconditionally clear the sixth level.

"When you come out, I'll look for you." Kali whispered into Shi Xiaobai's ear.

Shi Xiaobai nodded and said, "Alright, you are free to find me anytime."

"Really?" Kali chuckled, "Even...when sleeping and bathing?"

Shi Xiaobai was surprised and was at a loss as to how to respond.

Kali laughed and as her cheeks blushed, she suddenly forced a



kiss on Shi Xiaobai's cheek. Releasing her hand, she walked into the light.

She was as cool as ever, and it was also the best way to hide the sadness of their temporary parting.

As Shi Xiaobai watched Kali leave, he suddenly realized he had a big problem.

What was he to do now?

Typically, wouldn't the assessment program tell him what the rules of the seventh level were?

Why didn't it say a thing?

Shi Xiaobai was filled with questions in his head. At this moment, he was located in a beautiful forest, and it was also where a crossroad was.

Without the assessment program's hints, he did not know what to do for the moment or which direction he should take.

"Growl..."

Suddenly, a loud sound resounded in the quiet forest.

“Growl, growl...”

The sounds continued incessantly.

Shi Xiaobai lowered his head in shock. Was this sound coming from his stomach?

Suddenly, baffling pangs of hunger overwhelmed Shi Xiaobai's entire being.

That hunger instantly went from a mild state to an intense state. Before Shi Xiaobai could realize what had happened, the intensity made Shi Xiaobai feel like he was close to starving to death.

“Why is This King suddenly so hungry?”

Shi Xiaobai was astonished. He began activating Unleaking Turtle Aura, but it could not stop the hunger pangs!

It was an intense hunger of him not having eaten for months.

“Food...food... Where is This King's food!?”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes turned slightly red. The hunger pangs had only begun less than ten seconds ago, but Shi Xiaobai was already nearly fainting from the hunger.

He only had one thing on his mind.

Where can food be found?

Regardless of what it is, This King can eat anything now!

...

# Chapter 337: Shi Xiaobai's Delicacy Tour

---

Shi Xiaobai was at present, extremely famished. It was not a hunger that made him feel so weak that he would nearly faint, but a strange hunger that made him feel like going mad if he did not eat something. Even Unleaking Turtle Aura could not inhibit it.

Shi Xiaobai knew that there was no doubt that in his present state, he could swallow anything stuffed in his mouth as though it was the best of delicacies.

However, Shi Xiaobai's willpower prevented him from losing his reason. Things like grass or tree bark were things he refused to eat.

Shi Xiaobai immediately began running through the sparse woods.

“Come on out, This King's food!”

Shi Xiaobai shouted out loud, but did not see a single living creature after running for nearly a minute!

What darn forest was this?

Shi Xiaobai was nearly going mad, but thankfully, he was able to maintain his final bit of reason.

Finally, Shi Xiaobai saw a wild pig in front of him!

It was a gray-furred boar about twice the size of ordinary wild pigs. It had two vertical husks that made it look somewhat ferocious.

Shi Xiaobai felt as though bliss had come too suddenly. He rushed at the wild pig impatiently.

When the wild pig noticed an enemy, it immediately grunted angrily and charged at Shi Xiaobai with reddened eyes.

This was practically it throwing itself into his jaws.

Shi Xiaobai guffawed and dodged the wild pig's straight-line charge with Crab Steps. Appearing by the wild pig's side, he thrust out a knife!

Slaughtering a pig obviously should be done with the Pig Slaughtering Knife!

Shi Xiaobai's Pig Slaughtering Knife instantly pierced the wild pig's heart. With a slight whimper, the wild pig closed its eyes without feeling too much pain.

Shi Xiaobai could not wait any further to feast on the wild pig. Although his instincts told him to swallow it as soon as possible, his habits as a human prevented him from eating it raw.

At the very least, he needed to roast it.

Shi Xiaobai beheaded the pig and dissected the pig's belly, digging out its innards. This procedure was something he had seen from his father back when he was still young.

Following that, Shi Xiaobai used his psionic power to construct a psionic sword. Kun Peng's Sword of Water slashed out, as water sprayed down like rain, cleaning the blood-stained pig's carcass and his hands.

Finally, he cut down a tree branch and constructed a simple roasting rack. He placed the beheaded carcass that was void of its innards on it and used Kun Peng's Sword of Fire to begin roasting it.

The simple roasting process ended with Shi Xiaobai using his fastest speed to complete it. As he was going mad from his hunger pangs, he had nearly convinced himself to eat it raw several times.

Shi Xiaobai had even activated his Sword Truth to produce the Sword of Fire, allowing the temperature of the fire to be even higher.

In less than a moment of roasting, the pork was about nearly 80% done under such intense flames. Without waiting a moment longer, Shi Xiaobai stretched his hands out into the fire and ripped a piece of meat. Ignoring how the pork was still boiling hot, he placed it into his mouth.

The pork was without any seasoning and it was boiling hot, but when Shi Xiaobai placed it in his mouth, he immediately felt like he was eating the most delicious pork in the world.

The chew was perfect and it was slightly spicy. The fragrance unique to pork burst out in his mouth as its fresh juices made him could not help but moan.

Holy shit, what's going on?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes widened. The haphazardly roasted pork was so tasty?

Shi Xiaobai ate one piece of pork after another. He felt as though he had never tasted something this delicious before. What was even more astonishing was that as the pork gradually digested, he could sense his physique strengthening. Be it his physical strength or physical defense, they had been enhanced slightly.

What sort of wild pig was this? How could it be so tasty, and have such effects?

Shi Xiaobai was astonished, and very soon, he finished the entire wild pig, leaving only its skeleton behind.

Shi Xiaobai was delighted. The entire wild pig was twice the size of ordinary pigs. Shi Xiaobai had never eaten so much in a single seating.

With this, he should be full, right?

“Growl...”

Full my ass!

Shi Xiaobai frowned. After eating an entire pig's carcass, he still felt extremely hungry!

He was feeling extremely blissful while eating, but the moment he stopped, the hunger immediately reared its head at him, making him nearly go crazy.

“Why is this happening!?”

Shi Xiaobai was alarmed, but there was no time for him to ponder over it.

Shi Xiaobai dashed through the forest once again, and nearly a minute later, he saw a gigantic hare!

Without saying a word, Shi Xiaobai stabbed at it with the knife!

Removing its head and innards, and then using Kun Peng's Sword of Water to clean it before roasting it with Kun Peng's Sword of Fire.



Shi Xiaobai began to enjoy the wild hare meat.

And you don't say. The wild hare meat was no way inferior to the wild pig's meat in taste. There was no seasoning at all, but it was so delicious?

Furthermore, eating this wild hare also strengthened his physique!

Shi Xiaobai was immediately puzzled.

Why was this happening? Were the wild pig and wild hare extremely rare, or was it a problem with his body?

After eating an entire gigantic wild hare, Shi Xiaobai was still famished.

How much did he need to eat in order to resolve this insufferable hunger!?

Shi Xiaobai felt helpless as he continued running through the woods. The torment of his hunger as well as the flavors of the wild pig and hare accentuated his desire to eat more.

Thankfully, there were still animals in the woods despite there being only a few. Shi Xiaobai encountered a gigantic wild chicken, a gigantic wild ox, as well as other edible animals.

These animals were extremely delicious after roasting. Furthermore, it could slightly enhance his physique, and with that, Shi Xiaobai finally realized that it was not a problem with the animals, but a problem with him.

Although he was suffering from his hunger, he still found the roasted meat that lacked any seasoning to be delicacies. Furthermore, it could also enhance his physical strength and defense. It could be said to be both woe and weal together in one.

However, Shi Xiaobai was close to tears. After eating so much meat, he was still famished. Although his hunger pangs had reduced slightly, it was still extremely intense.

How much food did he need to eat to see an end to it?

And what gave Shi Xiaobai a headache was that as he ran through the woods, he appeared to reach the outer perimeter of the woods. There were fewer and fewer plants, and there were no longer any animals in sight.

After three minutes, Shi Xiaobai did not even see a single animal!

“This King is starving!”

Shi Xiaobai cried out loud and felt that if he continued being in such a starved state, he would really go crazy.

After enduring another minute, Shi Xiaobai failed to find any

more beasts. Finally, he could not tolerate any longer!

He pulled up a tuft of grass from the ground.

“This King never expected the day of him eating grass would come!”

Shi Xiaobai was too deep for tears as he stuffed the grass into his mouth. Quickly, he began chewing on them.

“Oh?”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly shocked. This grass...this grass was strawberry-flavored!

Shi Xiaobai pulled up another tuft of grass and began chewing on it.

Soon, Shi Xiaobai realized that different grass had different flavors, but they were all related to fruits—Strawberry-flavored, apple-flavored, orange-flavored, mango-flavored, watermelon-flavored... There were all sorts of flavors!

Shi Xiaobai indulged himself in enjoyment. He just felt that eating on a grass plain was such a blissful matter.

But soon, Shi Xiaobai quickly realized that although eating grass enhanced his physique, it was much lesser than the effects gained

from eating meat. It was nearly negligible.

Shi Xiaobai was a person with goals. Although he was very hungry, he woke up from his reverie of eating grass. After filling his pockets with grass, he continued running through the woods.

Shi Xiaobai was very hungry, but he desired meat even more.

But soon, there was still no sight of animals after running a distance through the woods. When Shi Xiaobai finished the grass in his pockets, he could replenish them on the spot. So he had found temporary respite.

But soon, Shi Xiaobai arrived at the end of the forest.

Outside the forest, it was a desolate desert. Other than sand and rocks, nothingness spanned to the horizon.

Shi Xiaobai did not see a single person despite running through the entire forest. From the looks of it, the other trial-takers were not in the woods. So it was a waste of time for him to continue running in the forest.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a long period of time. Finally, he prepared some grass and ran into the desolate desert that did not have a single strand of grass.

On the desert, there was only sand and rocks. After running for nearly ten minutes, Shi Xiaobai did not even see a strand of grass,

much less animals.

The grass he had prepared was also quickly finished by him.

Soon, Shi Xiaobai found himself in a distressing situation.

He was more than ten minutes away from the woods. As for the endless desert, it was unknown how long it would take for him to reach the other end. Furthermore, his grass had been finished!

“Growl, growl...”

His stomach began to growl as Shi Xiaobai stumped forward from his hunger.

But in this desert, there was no longer any food. There was not even a single strand of grass!

There was only sand and rocks...

Wait!

Rocks!?

Shi Xiaobai, who was about to go mad from starvation, quickly cast his eyes on the rocks that were strewn everywhere on the ground.

There was no other way. He was just too hungry.

Shi Xiaobai picked up a rock and carefully placed it in his mouth.

Would such a hard rock crack his teeth?

Who cares, when starving to madness, eat it first!

“Kacha!”

Shi Xiaobai forcefully gnawed at the rock!

“Holy shit!!”

Shi Xiaobai cursed in shock.

This rock was...was chicken-flavored! Furthermore, it was tender and crisp!

Shi Xiaobai picked up another rock and bit at it softly. He could not help but widen his eyes.

The rock was so hard in his hand, but when placed in his mouth it was...it was as soft and sweet as cotton candy?

It was as though Shi Xiaobai had discovered a brand new world as he madly ate the rocks. There were rocks everywhere in the desert, so Shi Xiaobai got a kick from eating.

However, the rocks were inferior to grass. Eating them did not improve his physique.

Shi Xiaobai quickly got sick of eating these. He continued dashing through the desert. This time, it was much simpler. With rocks everywhere on the ground, Shi Xiaobai was no longer afraid of him lacking food.

He felt a clear decrease in his pangs of hunger. Although it was still extremely intense, it had made Shi Xiaobai heave a sigh of relief.

At least there was an end to it, wasn't there?

Shi Xiaobai had dashed through the desert for more than ten minutes, but had not seen any living things during this period. Finally, he saw a massive creature at the horizon!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up slightly as his drooled.

That was a stone dragon made of stone!

A stone dragon could be eaten for very long. Furthermore, what would its flavor be?

Shi Xiaobai had a bit of anticipation as he charged towards the stone dragon that was flying in the air. As he approached it, he realized that there was a human sitting on the dragon's back!

It was as though the stone dragon was transporting this human.

Did this gigantic dragon have an owner?

Who cares!

No one can stop This King from eating this stone dragon!



# Chapter 338: This Matter Was So Hard To Refuse

---

Above the vast stretches of barren deserts, the sky was covered in a thin veil of sand. A stone dragon more than ten meters long was flapping its heavy stone wings as it flew forward.

And on the back of the stone dragon sat a youth who looked and dressed extremely normally.

The youth had his hands crossed, while his eyes were closed. He did not seem worried at all that a sudden backflip by the stone dragon would result in him being thrown to the ground.

The stone dragon was flying very smoothly as it steadily flapped its wings. Its flight trajectory was very simple and was nothing fancy. It was as though it was afraid to stir the youth riding on its back.

Shi Xiaobai could only see the youth's back, but the youth's back view made it unlikely that he knew him. However, with the stone dragon flying so carefully, he immediately guessed that the stone dragon was the youth's mount.

Having eaten rocks all the way, Shi Xiaobai was tired of rocks. However, he did not know what flavor the dragon's meat which was made of rock was. Immediately, he felt a strong craving for it that drove him mad.

But if the stone dragon was the youth's mount, this matter was problematic.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and touched his heart and asked his consciousness if he could really bear to let the delicacy in front of him.

It was a bit difficult!

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment and decided to first 'discuss' with the youth.

Shi Xiaobai sprinted at full speed ahead and quickly closed the gap between him and the dragon.

The youth on the dragon's back appeared rather mighty since he could sense someone chasing him from behind. Opening his eyes, he turned his head to give a look.

Shi Xiaobai's full speed was astonishing, but the youth only flashed a look of surprise before closing his eyes again, as though he could not be bothered with the sudden pursuer.

However, when Shi Xiaobai reached a distance a hundred meters away, the stone dragon also sensed something chasing behind it. It turned its head and gave a tumultuous roar.

The roar was deafening and contained a rather powerful dragon's might. But to Shi Xiaobai, it was like a delicious duck quacking at

him.

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt a stronger craving.

Maybe due to it sensing the hostile intentions of the black-haired youth, the stone dragon hurriedly turned its head and began flapping its wings furiously. It shot out at a faster speed, as though it was on the run.

“Don’t you escape!”

Shi Xiaobai gave out a loud laugh and chased fervently.

The stone dragon was not slow, but it was still inferior to Shi Xiaobai. The gap was constantly narrowed.

“Roar!”

The stone dragon constantly roared as it struggled to flap its wings, using all its energy to escape, but soon, it realized that it could not rid itself of the human. Therefore, it could only fly towards the sky.

The stone dragon flew higher and higher, only coming to a stop when it reached hundreds of meters high. When it looked down to see Shi Xiaobai that was beneath it, its large eyes seemed to be filled with ridicule.

A human without wings could only stare helplessly from the ground!

Shi Xiaobai was amused. He was unable to fly, but he had cultivated his sword techniques to a particular realm. Unless the dragon could fly to a height tens of thousands of meters high, there was no way it could escape his grasp.

Shi Xiaobai noticed that the youth on the dragon's back was composed, so he did not plan on holding back.

There was a price to pay to posture in front of him!

A black sword appeared in Shi Xiaobai's hand. With his Sword Truth activated, Shi Xiaobai slashed upwards with the sword.

A golden sword beam shot towards the sky like a rocket, as it blasted at the stone dragon's belly, in an attempt to rip it apart.

The stone dragon hurriedly lowered its head and opened its mouth. It spewed a beige-colored dragon's breath that was ice-cold at the golden sword beams.

“Boom!”

The two forces collide and immediately an explosion bloomed like a golden light show.

But out of the sparks and smoke, a transparent sword beam shot straight at the stone dragon's belly like a cicada casting off its skin.

A translucent sword beam was contained within the golden sword beam. This sword within a sword attack was a move Shi Xiaobai thought off after countless of his sword beams had been resisted.

The stone dragon clearly did not expect the human to have such an ingenious method and was momentarily at a loss. It watched as the translucent sword beam nearly struck its belly.

At this moment, the youth on the dragon's back finally opened his eyes once again. A silver light flashed from his normal-looking eyes.

Without making any movement, a silver shield appeared in front of the stone dragon's belly. With a clang, the sword beam collided with the barrier as both of them shattered.

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows pricked up slightly. The second translucent sword beam was weaker, to begin with. After being retarded by hundreds of meters, it was not a surprise for it to be blocked. However, the silver shield looked somewhat odd.

How did the youth, who was sitting on the dragon's back, conjure a shield so precisely with the dragon's body separating him?

“Interesting.”

As Shi Xiaobai ran, he gathered energy and slashed at the stone dragon in the sky once again.

A golden Bladestorm stirred as sword beams swept towards the stone dragon like arrows.

The sword beams surged disorderly while it was mixed in the wind. The youth pricked up his eyebrows and his hands that were crossed against his chest finally extended out straight.

The youth stretched out the index finger on his right hand as a silver halo bloomed on his fingertip. He quickly drew in the air what looked like a magical incantation.

A gigantic silver shield appeared beneath the stone dragon, covering its entire body.

“Peng! Peng! Peng!”

More than a hundred golden beams struck the silver shield, causing the silver shield to quiver incessantly, and very soon, cracks began to appear, as though it was about to shatter at any moment in time.

But only up to the final sword beam’s strike, did the precarious silver shield shatter!

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback.

Was this a coincidence? Or was it calculated ahead of time?

This youth was not a simple person!

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt his fighting spirit stir. It was not going to be easy to eat the stone dragon, but the harder it was to obtain it, the more compelling it was!

Shi Xiaobai was contemplating how he could slaughter the stone dragon that was hundreds of meters in the air with an inclination to fly even higher, under the ‘aloof’ youth’s hands.

At this moment, a shout came from the sky.

“Watch your feet!”

It appeared to be a shout from the youth.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised as he suddenly felt an inkling of danger. He immediately came to a halt, and thankfully, Crab Steps possessed a deceptive trait to it. The level of changes he could do was what most movement techniques could not match, so Shi Xiaobai was able to seemingly violate the principle of inertia as he came to a sudden stop.

After coming to a stop, Shi Xiaobai looked in front of him. In

front of him was a wide ravine hundreds of meters across!

The ravine spread through the desolate desert without any end in sight. It looked like endless darkness, and the gap that spanned hundreds of meters was impossible to cross with one's strength alone.

If not for the youth's reminder, and Shi Xiaobai's perception of danger, he might have plunged headlong into the ravine while he was fully focused on the sky.

Shi Xiaobai did not have wings after all. He had no way to forcefully cross a ravine. From the looks of it, he could not succeed in his chase.

The stone dragon seemed to discover this as it raised its head and roared, as though it was cheering how it had finally shaken the human off.

Shi Xiaobai pouted. Food that was nearly in his mouth had flown away. It was infuriating!

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt famished from his anger. Taking out a rock from his pocket, he stuffed it into his mouth and chewed on it.

Hey, this rock was beef-flavored. It had quite a nice chew to it.

Shi Xiaobai began devouring the rocks to vent his anger, secretly



swearing to slaughter that stone dragon the next time he encountered it, so as to have a taste of stone dragon meat.

At this moment, there was a sudden sound of the wind that echoed above him.

Shi Xiaobai looked up and saw the stone dragon that had already fled return!

Huff, puff....

The stone dragon flew closer and landed beside Shi Xiaobai.

The stone dragon warily watched Shi Xiaobai with great hostility, while on full alert. Clearly, it had flown back reluctantly.

Then, it had to be the youth on the dragon's back that flew back because of something?

Indeed, the youth's voice was immediately heard from the stone dragon's back.

“This brother, can I buy some food from you?”

The youth leaped from the stone dragon's back and stared at Shi Xiaobai with burning eyes.

Shi Xiaobai found it somewhat amusing.

He was planning on eating the stone dragon the youth was riding, but now, the youth was trying to buy food from him?

What food did he have to offer?

But seeing how the youth had warned him to watch his feet despite it being superfluous when it came to him, the youth did not appear to be someone wicked. As such, there was no reason for Shi Xiaobai to give him a stinky face.

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, “Sorry, This King does not have any food to sell.”

The youth’s eyebrows pricked up, clearly unaccustomed with Shi Xiaobai’s way of addressing himself. However, he quickly pointed his fingers at the rock in Shi Xiaobai’s hand and said with a laugh, “Isn’t that food? You must have quite a lot in your pockets.”

The rock in Shi Xiaobai’s hand had been bitten through halfway. Regardless of who it was, the rock looked like food that resembled a rock, if not, how could anyone eat it?

But Shi Xiaobai knew very clearly that the rock was not really food, but because there was a problem with his body. He could only say, “Sorry, this is not food, but a rock.”

The youth frowned slightly and seemed somewhat unhappy. He

said, “Brother, the thing seems like a rock, but the both of us know that it’s actually rock cake, a famous delicacy in the capital. I have not eaten for some time now, and I’m having a craving suddenly after seeing it. If you can’t bear to part with it, just say so directly. Why is there a need to give such a lame excuse? I saw you eat a few of the rock cakes with my own eyes. The one in your hand is bitten halfway. Are you telling me that you are eating rocks?”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent. Indeed, he was eating nothing other than rocks.

But if he said so, the youth would probably believe that he was treating him for a fool.

Shi Xiaobai could only shake his head and said, “It’s really a rock.”

Shi Xiaobai was reluctant to scam others. After all, the youth had warned him to be careful.

The youth sighed and said, “Are you willing to sell a slice of rock cake for 100,000 bucks?”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly taken aback.

The youth immediately stretched out two fingers, “200,000?”

Shi was somewhat startled, unsure of a response.

“300,000?”

The youth said with a heavy tone, “A million. A million to buy a slice of that rock cake. How about it?”

Shi Xiaobai felt helpless.

Spending a million to buy a rock...

Sigh, this matter was so hard to refuse!

...

## Chapter 339: A Difficult Nemesis

---

Although rock cakes were a famous delicacy in China, it was just a dessert, costing a thousand bucks for one slice. However, the youth immediately offered a hundred thousand and later added it to a million himself.

Others would be bewildered if they were to hear him offer a million for a slice of rock cake and exclaim the phrase, ‘having money makes you capricious!’

Of course, that was the case if it were really a rock cake.

Shi Xiaobai felt somewhat helpless. This was clearly not the rock cake the youth was thinking of. It was just a rock, a random piece of rock that could be found anywhere on the ground, an ordinary rock that could be easily picked up from the ground.

Was he trying to scam himself by paying a million bucks to buy a crappy piece of rock for eating?

“This is really a piece of rock.”

Shi Xiaobai struggled internally and finally shook his head to reject the youth’s offer. While doing so, he swallowed the remaining rock in his hand, and out of habit, took out another rock from his pocket and took another mouthful, looking jubilant in the process.

The youth's face immediately turned black.

Hey, you are eating it so sumptuously while mentioning that it's just a piece of rock, are you treating me for a fool?

“It seems as if you do not believe that I have a million bucks, nor do you believe that I will use a million bucks to buy a slice of rock cake. Fine, I will snatch a rock cake from your pocket and stuff a million into it!”

The youth's eyes turned slightly cold.

Who would believe it if he were to tell others that he could not buy a slice of rock cake with a million?

In that case, he could only be oppressive and forcefully ‘buy’ it from him.

With his strength, snatching a few slices of cake would have been an easy task, something he took for granted. He had already done enough to offer a million bucks to buy the cake.

As for the reason why he would use a million to buy a slice of rock cake? It was because he had a craving for rock cake. As such, the rock cake was worth a million.

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai was delighted instead of turning furious. He said, “Perfect, This King happens to have something to snatch from you as well!”

Shi Xiaobai had been coveting the stone dragon for a very long while, but he was unsure of the trigger for casus belli. Now, his 'robbery' was justified!

The youth chuckled and said, "Fine, then let's fight. If you can win, you can take anything from me, including my life. If I were to win, it wouldn't be as simple as taking a slice of rock cake from you!"

Shi Xiaobai's eyes turned slightly austere. He never expected the youth to instantly escalate the matter to a life-and-death battle. This person was a little odd.

However, Shi Xiaobai naturally wasn't afraid as he immediately summoned the black sword. Most of the time, strength was much more useful than reason.

"Using a sword in front of me?"

The youth scoffed as his eyes flashed a silver beam. A black sword appeared out of nowhere in his hand!

Shi Xiaobai's pupils constricted slightly. This black sword was identical to the black sword in his hand!

The next moment, golden points of light began emerging out of the ground as it slowly gathered towards the youth's body, giving his body a golden luster.

This was the power of Shi Xiaobai's Sword Truth—Excalibur!

Mimicry?

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. The sword intent emanated by the youth was not as simple as imitation!

“Take that!”

Without waiting any longer or grapple over who should attack first, the youth slashed right at Shi Xiaobai!

Golden sword beams burst out forcefully!

Shi Xiaobai pricked his eyebrows up slightly. He activated his Sword Truth as well, producing a golden sword beam that was hardly any different from the one it was meeting!

“Boom!”

The two golden sword beams collided and shattered.

“Bang!”

As the golden sword beams shattered, two translucent sword beams shot straight out like a cicada casting off its skin. Once



again, they collided with a boom and shattered!

The scene looked like it was a mirrored reflection.

“Take another strike of mine!”

The youth laughed out loudly and slashed with his sword once again.

As he raised his sword, there was a whistling of the wind.

As the sword cleaved downwards, a sword beam surged down like a strong gust of wind!

A hurricane stirred up large amounts of sand, dicing the rocks on the ground as it swirled towards Shi Xiaobai!

This was the Kun Peng’s Sword of Wind!?

Shi Xiaobai similarly used Kun Peng’s Sword of Wind to resist the attack. As the two sword winds clashed, they reached a stalemate for a moment before sounds of sword beams clashing resounded incessantly.

Once again, this clash of swords was like a reflection of each other.

The youth said with a laugh, “Come on, it’s time for you to attack. Use whatever move you have!”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent.

Did this youth think of him as a fool?

Using other moves to let him imitate them as well?

Shi Xiaobai had figured that it was likely that the youth had a superpower that allowed him to copy the moves or even items of others. His Sword Truth power and Kun Peng’s Sword of Wind had been learned by the youth when he was pursuing the stone dragon.

Shi Xiaobai gradually lifted his sword. If any attack he used could be mimicked, he could only use the easiest method, a competition of speed and power!

Shi Xiaobai charged at the youth and slashed out!

This attack was the purest and simplest Beginner Sword!

The youth could read Shi Xiaobai’s intentions. While shaking his head with a laugh, a silver light flashed in his eyes. A silver shield appeared in front of him, instantly blocking Shi Xiaobai’s sword.

Following that, the youth took a step forward and the black sword in his hand transformed into a silver spear!

“Tyrant Spear!”

The youth bellowed as a cold beam flashed. The spear thrust forward with a domineering force as though it was a dragon!

Shi Xiaobai’s heart leaped.

Wasn’t Tyrant Spear one of Pulp Farmer’s moves?

From the force coming at him, the youth’s strike was much stronger than Pulp Farmer’s Tyrant Spear!

Shi Xiaobai’s sword had been blocked by the shield, and was momentarily unable to parry the thrusting spear; therefore, he could only retreat.

At this moment, the silver spear in the youth’s hand transformed into a purplish-golden wheel gun.

The transformation took only an instant, and at the moment it completed its transformation, the youth had pulled the trigger!

A purplish-golden bullet shot out at Shi Xiaobai!

This was no doubt Sen Senyuan’s attack!

Shi Xiaobai knew the power of this bullet. He did not dare to block it with only Beginner Sword, so he had no choice but to quickly dodge sideways and escape the explosive range of the bullet!

“Boom!”

The bullet exploded as sand blasted in all directions and filled the sky, like a mushroom cloud.

Shi Xiaobai had just managed to escape the blast range, so he was not injured.

But he was now facing a dilemma. The youth had countless means and it was unknown how many moves he had learned from others. If he only restricted himself to using Beginner Sword or Kun Peng's Sword of Wind, it was unlikely for him to defeat the youth.

Knowing that his moves could be replicated, Shi Xiaobai did not even plan on using the essence of Crab Steps, 'flash motion'.

However, if he did not even use Crab Steps, how was he to defeat the mysterious youth that had a wide array of techniques?

The youth could apparently tell Shi Xiaobai's dilemma, or it should be said that he had intended to force Shi Xiaobai into such a dilemma.

The youth chuckled and said, “Shi Xiaobai, you should not only be this strong considering how you have conquered five Level Lords. Come on, use the most powerful techniques you are proudest of, or else...this will be the end of your trial.”

...

## Chapter 340: Not Only Mimicry

---

Shi Xiaobai was not surprised that the youth knew of his identity. After all, he was rather famous among the rookies at present. It was very likely that news regarding him had spread throughout each level in the trial. Many of his features were very identifiable.

In fact, Shi Xiaobai had also roughly guessed the identity of the youth. Although they had exchanged only a few blows, the trouble and pressure the youth gave him was higher than any rookie, much higher than Sen Senyuan and Pulp Farmer.

The rookies with such power that participated in the trials could only be the ones ranked first or second, Speechless Li or Mu Lengxi in the official forecast. Shi Xiaobai did not know the identities of these two people.

However, Mu Lengxi was apparently a girl based on the official forecast's information. Then, the mysterious and powerful youth that had arrived in the seventh level was most likely Speechless, a person he had frequently heard people mention, but had no understanding of him.

Apparently, this was a person who rendered people speechless.

Using a million bucks to buy a slice of rock cake and even going to the point of using force to force a sell was indeed rather speechless rendering. Furthermore, the strength he possessed made him feel rather helpless.

Speechless had requested to buy a rock cake from Shi Xiaobai from the very beginning. Shi Xiaobai had rejected it a few times, and he had even told him that it was only a rock. In fact, Shi Xiaobai could have thrown the rock in his hand or a rock from his pocket to let the youth test its authenticity, then everything would have been simpler.

But in actual fact, the matter was not as simple as it seemed.

Place yourself in the other person's shoes, if you were to see someone eating a cake that looked like a rock with relish, but when you bit at it after it was given to you, only to find out that it was a rock, what would be your first reaction?

Would you really think the other person was truly eating a rock?

No, you would think the other person was playing you for a fool! A certain trick undetectable to you that had replaced the cakes in your hand or pockets with a rock might have been employed.

When that happened, Shi Xiaobai would have to come up with a new explanation and a cumbersome way to prove himself.

Therefore, explaining would only create new misunderstandings, and misunderstandings needed new explanations. Trying to prove that he was really eating a rock was quite a troublesome matter to begin with.

For a stranger, Shi Xiaobai naturally could not be bothered to

explain or prove that he was really eating a rock.

But from the looks of it, explaining was futile. It would only steer itself in the path the youth wanted.

Shi Xiaobai said scornfully, “Speechless, since you wanted to fight This King from the beginning, why is there a need to go through so much trouble?”

Seeing his identity and goal seen through, Speechless did not quibble. He said with a chuckle, “There’s no other way. There is no one in the trial that dares to fight This Emperor. Pulp Farmer, Liu Yu and the rest run whenever they see This Emperor. It wasn’t easy to meet a passable opponent, so how can This Emperor let you go? Therefore, it’s best if you want to fight, and even if you don’t, you have to!”

With Speechless’ ability to ‘imitate’ the moves and abilities of others, there was indeed no one who would be willing to fight him.

However, Shi Xiaobai was different.

He was not afraid that his moves would be stolen, or even easily replicated.

This was because a move depended on the person using it. Different executors of the same move, regardless of how powerful it was, would definitely be different.



Furthermore, there was a sentence Shi Xiaobai always remembered—every superpower had its weakness and limitations!

Shi Xiaobai condensed a psionic sword in his left hand as his eyes burned with fighting spirit.

Since you insist on doing battle, This King will keep you company to the end, shattering the ability that you hold so much pride in!

“Dual blade style? Slightly interesting.”

The corner of Speechless’ mouth suffused a belittling smile. The spear in his right hand transformed into a black sword and his left hand similarly condensed a psionic sword.

People said that being able to learn a particular move with a single look meant being a rare genius.

And the heavens gave Speechless possession of the most outstanding talent in the world!

He could replicate his opponent’s moves and weapons with a single glance. He could use his own insights to enhance them to an even stronger realm!

Speechless said with a sneer, “Shi Xiaobai, if you think This Emperor is strong only in replication and imitation, then you can’t get any wronger.”

Shi Xiaobai naturally did not think so because Tyrant Spear that Speechless had used was clearly replicated from Pulp Farmer, but it was much stronger than Pulp Farmer's.

Speechless had added his own insights over his imitations.

“Unfortunately, This King is often imitated, but never surpassed!” Shi Xiaobai responded with a sneer as well.

The period of smack talk came to an end as the sound of winds echoed. The two of them charged at each other nearly simultaneously!

At the same time, golden beams of light lit up from their bodies as they activated the power of Sword Truth!

Shi Xiaobai looked at the golden light from Speechless' body as a sneer suffused across his lips.

This was not his Sword Truth!

Or it could be said, it was not Sword Truth at all!

“You can only replicate moves!”

Shi Xiaobai roared loudly and by attacking with both swords as one, he slashed them at Speechless!

Sword Truth was the sublimation of Sword Intent. It was the path of enlightenment that one's sword pointed in. It was a swordsman's understanding of swords!

Speechless was only able to replicate sword moves, sword beams, sword shapes, but he could not replicate Sword Intent or Sword Truth!

The golden light was just a superficial imitation!

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai did not use any sword moves for this strike, not did he slash out any sword beam!

This was a strike that was augmented purely by Sword Intent, as well as the essence of concentrated Sword Truth!

“Boom!”

The four swords clashed violently as energy spewed in all directions, blasting the surrounding air as dust flared into the air. A deep pit sunk into the ground.

The two experienced the repulsive forces of the collision, but neither of them retreated. Instead, they both took a step forward!

At this moment, it was a contest of strength. Whoever retreated first would suffer an abject defeat.

The two was deadlocked for a moment.

Shi Xiaobai said in a heavy tone, “So that’s the case. Disguising Sword Truth is also Sword Truth. Is this your Sword Truth?”

Speechless had also used a pure and concentrated Sword Truth as well. However, the power of his Sword Truth was different from Shi Xiaobai’s. The strike looked like an imitation, but it was only imitating the move. The core strength still belonged to Speechless.

Speechless said with a chuckle, “It’s just Sword Truth. This Emperor gained insights into it at the age of eight. People call Sunless Ye the number one genius in the way of the sword among the younger generation, but it’s only because This Emperor doesn’t use a sword.”

Shi Xiaobai fell silent. This person was great at posturing, but Speechless did have the ability to posture.

With the deadlock at that moment, Shi Xiaobai had no way to withdraw. He could only inject more power. Whoever had the strength to repress the other would gain access to a great advantage.

Speechless said with a laugh, “Shi Xiaobai, you are really good. Among peers that This Emperor has seen, you can be considered one of the best. Unfortunately, you are still weaker than This Emperor!”

Shi Xiaobai said with a chuckle, “Defeat This King before you brag any further!”

Speechless shook his head and laughed. His lazy-looking eyes suddenly flashed a look of seriousness.

Shi Xiaobai grinned as his eyes burned with fighting spirit.

The two were in a stalemate, but they apparently had tricks up their sleeves.

It was a problem about who to attack first and when they would attack.

This was because the first person who made the move would end up being in a passive state.

They were waiting, waiting for the moment their opponent lost their patience to attack!

At this moment, a gust of wind howled!

A hard tail made of rock swung at an extremely fast speed at them!

Shi Xiaobai’s pupils slightly contracted. The stone dragon had taken this opportunity to sneak an attack!

At this moment, any one of them could defend against the dragon's tail if they withdrew their power, but the person would end up being injured by the opponent's power!

The stone dragon had chosen a moment to make an extremely cheap shot!

However, why?

Why was the hurling of the dragon's tail aiming straight at Speechless?

...

## Chapter 341: Their Choices

---

The stone dragon had chosen an opportune time to sneak an attack. The deadlock situation Shi Xiaobai and Speechless were in was just like they were on either side of a see-saw. If they pulled back to defend the stone dragon's tail, they would be sent 'flying' by the see-saw.

Compared to the stone dragon's attack, the force that was pent up in the deadlock was even stronger, but being hit by the dragon's strike would cause the deadlock to be broken, resulting in an internecine outcome.

Hence, this tail's strike was an extremely cheap shot.

However, the target of the attack was not Shi Xiaobai, but Speechless!

As the stone tail swept over, a wind whistled. At that instant, Shi Xiaobai had two choices.

The first choice was to continue in the stalemate. It could be predicted that even if Speechless had been able to defend against the strike, he would have to pay a certain price. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai would have easily obtained victory. Later he could explain it away by using excuses like how he 'did not react in time' or that he was 'stupefied from shock'.

And the second choice was to take the initiative to separate. If Shi Xiaobai took the initiative to separate, he would have to take a

certain level of risk. This was because if Speechless ignored the stone dragon's strike and continued imbuing strength into the embroilment, Shi Xiaobai's separation would be like he had lifted his butt from the see-saw, and he would be sent flying.

But if he took the initiative to separate, it would allow Speechless an opportunity to defend against the stone dragon without any injuries.

There were two choices—victory and danger, but they were of unequal weighting. Most people would usually choose the former.

However, Speechless was very lucky that his opponent was Shi Xiaobai!

Shi Xiaobai took the initiative to separate without any hesitation. He found cheap victories disdainful. Despicable sneak attacks were something he abhorred. As for danger, it was something Shi Xiaobai was long accustomed to!

At that instant, Speechless was also facing two choices.

The first choice was separation so that he could defend against the dragon's strike, but whether he would be injured was left up to Shi Xiaobai.

The second choice was to continue the stalemate and withstand the hard blow from the dragon's tail. Then, whether he would be injured or not depended on how he would react.



Believing in someone else or himself was similarly of unequal weighting. Most people would tend to choose the latter!

Speechless was a person with great confidence in himself. Logically speaking, it was very likely that he would choose the second choice.

But this time, Speechless believed in himself, but what he chose to believe in was his ability to read someone.

As a person with regal standing, he naturally had to master the art of reading someone!

Speechless believed in his ability to read others.

Shi Xiaobai was not a despicable person that would take advantage of someone else!

Therefore, Speechless chose the first choice in an instant. He took the initiative to withdraw and turned around to face the dragon's tail!

At that moment, Speechless' back was facing Shi Xiaobai!

If Shi Xiaobai did not stand down, Speechless' back would be imprinted with two deep sword scars or he might even die for this.

However, there were no ifs. Shi Xiaobai had withdrawn his strength almost at the same time with Speechless. It was just like two people had jumped off from both ends of the see-saw spontaneously. The equilibrium was not broken; therefore, no one was injured!

Shi Xiaobai's eyes flashed with a look of appreciation. Speechless' choice was courageous and decisive. It surprised and also impressed him.

A smile suffused across Speechless' lips. Shi Xiaobai's choice, which was upright and benevolent, did not catch him by surprise, but it made him feel a form of respect!

The stone dragon's ferocious eyes flashed a look of stupefaction, but it immediately turned to horror. It never expected that the two would make a choice that was detrimental to its wellbeing in such a short period of time. It was going to suffer from this happening!

But spilled water was difficult to retrieve, the flick of a tail could not be retracted!

With two sword beams flashing, the shimmering stone tail was diced into three segments!

Speechless' eyes were cold and he looked enraged. Sneak attackers had to die!

“Roar!”

The stone dragon cried out as it tried to flap its wings to fly higher, but its nightmare had only just begun.

Shi Xiaobai had already leaped up!

“Go down for This King!” Shi Xiaobai roared as he slashed out!

“Boom!”

The stone dragon’s wings were instantly severed, and its massive body in mid-air immediately plummeted, crashing heavily to the ground.

The stone dragon cried out tragically, but its instinct for survival made it continuously squirm its body in an attempt to escape.

Speechless apparently did not have a habit of torture. With a sneer, he slashed out, decapitating the stone dragon as it bellowed tragically.

The tiny episode of a sneak attack came to an end.

The two looked each other in the eyes and immediately laughed, clearly very satisfied with each other’s choices.

A smile vanquished any enmity. After all, the two of them did not have much hatred for each other, to begin with.

Speechless was the first to stand down.

Shi Xiaobai asked with a smile, “This stone dragon isn’t your mount? Why did it sneak an attack on you instead of This King?”

Speechless said with a scoff, “How can that trash dragon be qualified to be This Emperor’s mount? It was encountered on the road and captured for the road. This stone dragon was taught several lessons by This Emperor, so it probably held a grudge all this time.”

Shi Xiaobai also shook his head with a scoff. This person was posturing with every word he said and it did not seem to have an end to it.

Shi Xiaobai turned his head at the decapitated stone dragon. Immediately, hunger reared its head at him, as he nearly drooled.

Since this stone dragon was already dead and it was not Speechless’ mount...

Shi Xiaobai said with a chuckle, “This King won’t be standing on ceremony.”

Speechless was slightly taken aback, unsure of what Shi Xiaobai meant.

He watched Shi Xiaobai turn around and walk towards the decapitated stone dragon. Breaking off a piece of rock, Shi Xiaobai stuffed it into his mouth and began chewing on it.

The stone dragon was made of stone, and despite it being beheaded, not a single drop of blood flowed. After it died, it was like a stone sculpture, so Shi Xiaobai just ate it 'raw'.

After chewing a few times, Shi Xiaobai felt somewhat disappointed.

"It's chicken-flavored again. This King is already getting a little sick of it."

Shi Xiaobai muttered to himself. The stone dragon's meat was not much different from the flavor of ordinary rocks.

However, having just been engaged in a bit of action, Shi Xiaobai immediately felt famished again. He began to focus on eating the stone dragon.

Speechless was left silent and speechless. After a moment of silence, he walked forward and broke off a piece of rock and hesitantly placed it in his mouth to bite at it...

"Pui! You are really eating rocks!?"

Speechless widened his eyes slightly.

Shi Xiaobai chewed on the rocks with relish and muttered, “Didn’t you realize that from the beginning?”

Speechless curled his mouth. “Realize my ass. I thought you were using some illusion... Fuck, you sure are a talent when it comes to eating rocks!”

Shi Xiaobai shrugged. He couldn’t do a thing either. None of this made much sense, and he too was unsure of why this was happening.

However, the chicken-flavored rock was still rather delicious.

For his hunger that was driving him crazy finally felt some sense of satiation. It was as though pee that had been held for an entire day was released at one go. It was a refreshing feeling and made one only crave for more.

Shi Xiaobai was getting a bit addicted to eating.

Furthermore, the stone dragon was much better than the ordinary rocks. It could slightly increase his physical strength and defense.

Shi Xiaobai began eating at an even faster speed. Soon, the stone dragon that was larger than a whale had been wiped clean by him!

Speechless turned more and more speechless seeing this. With a loud sigh, he said, “In terms of eating, I, Speechless, am willing to acknowledge defeat!”

Suddenly, Speechless seemed to sense something as his eyebrows pricked up. He cast his gaze towards the deep ravine.

“Something’s coming!” Speechless alerted with a soft whisper.

Shi Xiaobai swallowed the rubble in his mouth and wondered aloud, “What’s coming?”

Before Speechless answered, the answer had already come crawling.

Suddenly, deep in the ravine, black gigantic scorpions crawled out one after another!

Like a wave, dense hordes of black scorpions crept up towards the duo. The rustling sound they produced was extremely creepy.

At the same time, there was a sudden wind that resounded through the clouds in the sky. As though a dark cloud had suddenly eclipsed the sun, a look at the sky revealed hundreds, if not thousands of stone dragons flying towards them in an assault!

The ground began to quake, with roaring sounds in the distance.

Turning to take a look, they saw the horizon behind them filled with spiky steel rhinoceroses rushing over in a stampede!

Shi Xiaobai gulped as his eyes brightened up slightly.

“So, it’s because the food is here!”



## Chapter 342: It's Venomous, You Are Toxic

---

In front of them was a dense swath of black scorpions creeping out of the deep ravine, and behind them were countless steel rhinoceroses swarming forward in a stampede from the horizons. There were hundreds, if not thousands of stone dragons flying in the sky.

Shi Xiaobai and Speechless were instantly surrounded. From the aggression displayed and murderous intent emitted from the horde, it was unlikely that these monsters came in peace.

Speechless' expression turned slightly serious. The monsters were trivial when alone, but in such large numbers, it could easily exhaust him. But now, with two of them, the situation would probably be much better. The only thing he was unsure about was how psychologically robust Shi Xiaobai was.

Just as he was thinking of this, Speechless heard Shi Xiaobai mutter to himself with eyes shimmering, "So, it's because the food is here!"

Gee, why does this fellow seem more fearless than he was?

Speechless said, "Each person takes one side. If you can't hold on or you lack the stamina, shout out and This Emperor will save you."

Shi Xiaobai said scoffingly, "You stole This King's line. Alright, This King will take this side."

With that said, Shi Xiaobai took a step towards the ravine.

Judging from the momentum of the beasts, the stampede of the steel rhinoceroses looked fiercer, but in terms of danger, the gigantic black scorpions were far more dangerous than the steel rhinoceroses.

The reason was because the gigantic black scorpions were venomous creatures. Touching a tiny bit of the venom or being stung by the scorpion's tail would probably kill an ordinary person hundreds of times over.

However, Shi Xiaobai was different from ordinary people. He had previously received the reward of the Absolute Choice of 'enhanced poison resistance'. He was immune to 80% of the venom, and the other 20% could be absorbed by Unleaking Turtle Aura, enhancing his physique.

Therefore, not only was Shi Xiaobai unafraid of venom, he actually loved venom.

Speechless hesitated for a moment before saying with a nod, "Alright, be careful."

The two agreed on their roles in a short period of time, and like playing video games, each person took one side to hunt mobs.

But in fact, what they were facing was a sea of monsters, with

great potential for them to have their lives taken at any time.

Speechless looked calm as he turned to head towards the left before charging towards the steel rhinoceroses.

Shi Xiaobai was extremely composed. With each hand holding a sword, he faced the gigantic black scorpions that covered the lands.

At this moment, the stone dragons circling the skies were first to pose a threat as they swooped down one after another.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes were cold as he slashed both his swords out as a storm of sword beams filled the sky. Immediately, one stone dragon after another was reduced to rubble!

These stone dragons were massive in size, and they looked very powerful, but in fact, it was just on the surface. Their physical defenses were very weak!

Of course, this was if they faced Shi Xiaobai. If it were any ordinary rookie, the stone dragons would be quite a troublesome foe.

At that moment, the gigantic black scorpions were quickly approaching like a wave that rolled towards the coastline.

Shi Xiaobai was naturally not foolish enough to rush in or let the scorpions surround him. Just think about how there were

scorpions everywhere on the ground, with nowhere to place his feet. There was a possibility for a bunch of scorpions to climb all over him. What sort of feeling would that be?

Shi Xiaobai immediately began spinning like a top as sword beams swirled like a hurricane as the sword beams ignited. Immediately, there was a column of fire around Shi Xiaobai.

The moment the gigantic black scorpions entered the flames, they cried in pain as their carapaces were instantly burnt to a crisp.

However, the gigantic black scorpions were unafraid of death. They advanced wave after wave into the flames, using their bodies to douse the flames!

Shi Xiaobai did not expect to easily defend against these gigantic black scorpions; therefore, he activated the power of his Sword Truth!

These monsters were perfect for him to practice his dual blade technique that he had yet to fully master!

A sword like wind slashed at the stone dragons!

A sword like fire burned the gigantic black scorpions!

With swords used in unison, wind and fire raged into the sky, as the sweeping inferno illuminated the ravine a shimmering red. The gigantic black scorpions that had yet to climb out of the ravine

cried out tragically as they plummeted!

Shi Xiaobai constantly brandished his swords as the endurance provided to him by Unleaking Turtle Aura allowed him to have sufficient energy to do so.

The stone dragons that deluged the skies were diced to pieces in mid-air, while the gigantic black scorpions that flooded the ground were burnt to a crisp before they even proceeded half the distance.

Shi Xiaobai did not even move from his spot from the beginning to the end!

A smile suffused across his mouth.

Unknowingly, he had already become so powerful.

However, this was far from sufficient. He needed to become stronger at a faster rate!

...

These monsters were not powerful, but their numbers were terrifying. Shi Xiaobai slew the endless gigantic black scorpions that crawled out of the ravine from noon till dusk until they were completely wiped out.

With the endurance provided by Unleaking Turtle Aura, Shi

Xiaobai was able to persist all the way despite being exhausted. However, he did not have much free time to eat during this period of time. His hunger was driving him crazy.

With the gigantic black scorpions no longer crawling over, Shi Xiaobai finally could no longer endure it.

He immediately picked up a gigantic black scorpion that was grilled to a crisp.

“It’s poisonous!”

A warning cry came from behind him.

Shi Xiaobai turned to take a look and Speechless had dealt with the ‘problem’ on his side as well. At this moment, his forehead was dripping with a few beads of sweat, and his clothes were somewhat messy, but he did not look too exhausted. He clearly still had strength left.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. From the looks of it, Speechless had an endurance technique on par with ‘Unleaking Turtle Aura’.

Shi Xiaobai said with a laugh in response to Speechless’ warning, “This King isn’t afraid of poison.”

Although the gigantic black scorpions were roasted, they were still extremely poisonous. It was not something edible by normal

people, but to Shi Xiaobai, it was equivalent to a tonic.

Without another word, Shi Xiaobai took a bite.

Immediately, there were the crisp, crackling sounds.

It was very crispy, and the flavor was...

“It’s actually potato chips...”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but moan. Having starved an entire afternoon, the feeling of being able to finally eat something felt too good.

Furthermore, the roasted gigantic black scorpions had the flavor of potato chips—barbecue-flavored, giving him a pleasant surprise.

After removing the scorpion’s head, he finished the scorpion very quickly.

Shi Xiaobai did not immediately eat another scorpion but instead, he walked towards another side.

The other side similarly looked hellish. There were the carcasses of steel rhinoceroses everywhere.

Shi Xiaobai was eager to know what the flavor steel rhinoceroses

were before he decided on what was for dinner.

Shi Xiaobai sliced off a piece of steel hide from a rhinoceros's carcass. It was very hard when pinching it.

Hesitating a bit, he placed the steel hide into his mouth and gently bit at it.

Unsurprisingly, the steel hide may be hard in his hands, but in his mouth, they mysteriously became brittle with a single bite. It melted in his mouth, but not in his hand...

Furthermore, this steel hide tasted identical to chocolate!

Yea, and it had the sweetness of milk. Was this milk chocolate?

Shi Xiaobai sighed.

How was he to choose between barbecued-flavor potato chips and milk chocolate?

He might as well eat all of them!

Shi Xiaobai was not vexed either. He believed it was very likely for him to finish all the 'food' on the ground.

For Shi Xiaobai, eating anything seemed like a normal affair, but



in the eyes of others, it was a fascinating matter.

Eating venomous scorpions?

He even ate steel hide with such relish?

Speechless said in a speechless manner, “You are toxic!”

Shi Xiaobai did not refute him and thought for a moment before asking, “Why were those monsters suddenly attacking us?”

Shi Xiaobai remembered that he did not see a single creature while running in the desolate desert for such a long period of time, but for there to be so many monsters suddenly surrounding him, it was certainly not a coincidence.

Was this related to the rules of the seventh level?

Shi Xiaobai had been in the seventh level for a period of time, but he still did not know what he needed to do. This was unacceptable moving forward.

Speechless was a trial-taker that had always been leading in the forefront, so it might be possible to obtain some information from him?

# Chapter 343: Four Legendary Figures

---

“Why were these monsters suddenly attacking us?” Shi Xiaobai asked.

He knew nothing about the seventh level, and now, there was someone he could ask. He had a feeling that it was no accident that these creatures had suddenly attacked them.

The reason why the assessment program had delayed telling him the rules of the seventh level might have been because there were no rules, to begin with, but it was more likely that it did not want to inform him.

Upon hearing this, Speechless pricked up his eyebrows slightly and asked curiously, “You don’t know?”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up slightly and asked, “What’s going on? Does it have to do with the rules of the seventh level?”

Speechless said with a light laugh, “It appears like you don’t even know the rules.”

Shi Xiaobai shrugged and affirmed his thoughts. He said, “There’s not much that can be done. This King is too outstanding that even the assessment program is targeting This King negatively. Not a hint was given.”

Speechless chuckled and said, “If the assessment program is

really targeting you negatively, the chances of you clearing this level is basically zero.”

Shi Xiaobai frowned and asked, “Why do you say so?”

Speechless quipped, “This is because the rules of this level can only be described in one sentence... Survive, until you gain the approval of the assessment program!”

Shi Xiaobai’s heart leaped.

Survive until he gained the approval of the assessment program?

The word ‘survive’ was easy to understand. The sudden attack of the monsters was probably one of the obstructions to ‘surviving’. However, what did it mean by gaining the approval of the assessment program?

Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask, “How could one gain the approval of the assessment program?”

Speechless said scoffingly, “It seems like you did not do any research about the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower? You don’t even know its most famous stories?”

Shi Xiaobai asked in surprise, “Its most famous stories?”

Speechless had enough of this question and answer conversation.

He decided to simply say everything. “The first six levels of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is considered a screening, while the last three levels are the real trials. The first six levels of the trial are randomly generated, while the final three levels, which are the seventh, eighth and ninth level are set in stone. Throughout history, there have been countless people who have passed the screening of the first six levels, but only four people have ever passed the seventh level! And that is to say, only four people have obtained the approval of the assessment program on the seventh level! Therefore, these four stories have been recorded in the history books of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he immediately could imagine the difficulty of the matter. He remembered from Mu Yuesheng’s introduction that the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower had existed for several thousand years and was refreshed every month. It could accommodate up to a thousand trial-takers each time, so how many trial-takers had ever entered the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower over all these years?

But there were only four people that managed to clear the seventh level?

It was apparent how difficult it was to obtain the assessment program’s approval.

Then, how did the four historical figures obtain the approval of the assessment program? What were the four stories?

An intense curiosity arose in Shi Xiaobai as he said to Speechless,

“Quick, tell me the stories you know!”

Speechless rolled his eyes and said, “You really do not know what it means to be polite. This Emperor has a story, do you have wine?”

Shi Xiaobai said with a grin, “Not for now, but there will be a day when This King will treat you to the best wine in the world.”

Using the best wine in the world in exchange for a story known by everyone was a completely unequal exchange. It was unbelievable, but for Shi Xiaobai, it was not an empty promise, but a promise of a King.

Speechless hesitated before saying, “Alright. This Emperor does not expect the best wine, but if you happen to come across some legendary brews, sharing a few mouthfuls with This Emperor would do. The four stories are actually very simple. First, you have to know that the world in this level is completely different from the worlds of the previous six levels. In the world of this level, there are countries as well as people that exist other than the trial-takers!”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly astonished. People? Thinking back to the previous six levels, they were filled with monsters and the goals of the trials were relatively simple. But there were countries and people appearing on this level?

Shi Xiaobai immediately had a strong interest in the four stories. He urged, “Continue on!”

Speechless said with a chuckle, “Although they are said to be people, they are actually people on another plane of existence. According to speculation regarding this world’s era and background, this was on the plane of existence of the species that created the Nine Revolutions Transcendental World. Therefore, we call the people in this level’s world the Transcendents.”

“However, as the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is a land of trials for the Psionic Mortal Realm, the Transcendents have their strength reduced by the assessment program. The strongest Transcendent is only around the strength of a Level Lord. The historical period of this world is rather old-fashioned. It’s labeled the age of ‘Bravehearts and Infernal King’. The seven trial-takers that slew the dragons in the sixth level will be chosen as a Hexstar Bravehearts and sent to this level. Do you understand? Our role in this level’s world is that of Hexstar Bravehearts that are enemies of the Infernal King.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes lit up slightly.

Bravehearts and Infernal King?

This kind of background story was fatally attractive to him.

Speechless continued, “Then, what follows will be the four famous stories. In mankind’s history, the first person to clear the seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower is the most famous overlord, Ji Feng. This person was fearless and rash, but he lacked intelligence. He chose to forcefully clear the level!”

Shi Xiaobai immediately said with a smile, “Survive?”

“Smart,” said Speechless with a nod. “Back when humans did not know how to obtain the approval of the assessment program, survival was not considered a way to clear the level. However, Overlord Ji Feng managed to survive a hundred days on the seventh level. The monsters that suddenly attacked us is just a tiny appetizer in the difficulty of survival. However, Overlord Ji Feng did not do a thing except tour the world. Regardless of how many monsters came, he slew them all, never suffering defeat for a hundred days! Even the Level Lord could not do anything to him! Therefore, the assessment program made an exception, allowing him to clear the seventh level, making him the first trial-taker to reach the eighth level in the history of mankind.”

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt his blood boiling in his veins when he heard this. He imagined a scene of him slaying all monsters that came at him. How domineering was this?

A trace of longing flashed in Speechless’ eyes as he continued, “Later on, people tried following Ji Feng’s method of surviving a hundred days, but not a single person succeeded. Therefore, people began finding new ways to clear the level. Finally, about a thousand years later, Sword Immortal Xu Taibai managed to clinch victory in the seventh level’s Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament. He defeated all the talented Transcendents, accomplishing what seemed impossible to the eyes of commoners, opening up a new path of success. Although defeating the Transcendents and clinching victory at the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament was extremely difficult, it was much more normal than surviving a hundred days. Therefore, this has become

the most common method of clearing people have attempted on the seventh level. However, the assessment program adjusted the difficulty of the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament after that happened. As such, no human has managed to clinch victory in the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament for the next thousand years.

As he ate his ‘potato chips’ and ‘chocolates’, Shi Xiaobai listened to the narration of the story. It was really delightful.

“What’s next?” Shi Xiaobai continued urging Speechless.

Speechless coughed and said, “Six thousand years ago, it was the world’s most famous Conquest King, which is also the second Original Sin of Calamity that everyone knows. He clearly had the ability to survive a hundred days, and it would be a cinch winning the Martial Arts Tournament, but this person chose to step into the Infernal City and slew the Infernal King himself! Although the Infernal King’s strength had been reduced, his strength was above the Level Lord’s. As such, he became the third person who cleared the level!”

The three clearers had used different methods to clear the level, but they made Shi Xiaobai turn more feverish. In the age of Bravehearts and Infernal King on the seventh level, how great a pleasure would it be to slay the Infernal King using one’s own hands?

“What about the fourth person?”

Shi Xiaobai was eager to know what the other method the fourth



person had used.

But at this moment, Speechless was lost in thought for a moment as though he thought of something. His expression turned somewhat strange as though he was in reflection and was engaging in remembrance.

Speechless sighed and whispered, “The fourth clearer was the man who established the age of heroes, who was given the title ‘Hero King’... What he did could be said to have surpassed the three before him. As a human, he left behind the most famous story in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.”

...

# Chapter 344: Stop Or Die!

---

The most famous story of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower still belonged to the man whose existence was most dazzling even when placed throughout the history of mankind. He had established the age of heroes, thus he was dubbed “Hero King”!

This was a well-known legend, but this was the first time Shi Xiaobai was hearing this. The word ‘hero’ could always pique his interest; hence, when he heard this, Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask, “He established the age of heroes?”

Speechless said appalled, “It can’t be that you don’t even know the legend of the ‘Hero King’?”

Shi Xiaobai nodded calmly.

Speechless rolled his eyes and said in a speechless manner, “In the nine years of compulsory education, nearly every textbook has mentioned the stories of the Hero King. Therefore, all hero organizations and hero institutes would pay homage to this great man on December 25. The first person that comes to mind for every child who aspires to become a ‘hero’ would be the Hero King... You are at least a rookie of a particular hero organization, but you don’t even know of the Hero King!? It’s best you read some books in the future. The stories of the Hero King can go on for three days and three nights.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded in silence. He did not like reading books, but Speechless’ exaltation of the man known as ‘Hero King’ made him

suddenly have the urge to read to better his understanding.

Shi Xiaobai asked, “What did the Hero King do on the seventh level?”

This was the matter Shi Xiaobai was most concerned about at the moment. Be it surviving a hundred days or defeating the Transcendents in the Martial Arts Tournament to be made the champion, or killing the Infernal King, were stories that caused his blood to boil in excitement. And what the Hero King had done had surpassed the three predecessors. It had the honor of being the most famous story, so the story was bound to be a lot more interesting.

A look of anticipation flashed in Shi Xiaobai’s eyes.

Speechless quipped, “It was common for This Emperor to narrate stories to his younger sister back in the day. When it came to the highlight of the story, the look in her eyes would be identical to the one you currently have, but usually, at such a moment, This Emperor can’t help but keep her in suspense.”

Shi Xiaobai said, “Therefore, you plan to keep This King in suspense?”

Speechless gave a sinister laugh and said, “No, This Emperor plans to stop right here. To learn more, wait till next time!”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but pull his sword out as he said

coldly, “Wretch, pull your sword out!”

Speechless guffawed before his expression turned slightly serious. He solemnly said, “Shi Xiaobai, to tell you the truth, This Emperor has only one goal in joining this trial, it is to replicate the legend of the Hero King. You and This Emperor are the same type of person, so This Emperor is somewhat afraid that if you were told what the Hero King did, you would not help but want to go down the same path. This is a very dangerous path that only admits one; hence, This Emperor does not plan on continuing the exposition.”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, “You are wrong. This King is not the same kind of person like you. This is because This King will not walk down the same path others have gone down. No matter how legendary the feat accomplished by the Hero King is, This King would not deliberately mimic it. This King will walk down a path that belongs to him!”

Speechless’ eyebrows pricked up slightly as he said with a laugh, “It looks like This Emperor has looked down on you. Go ahead, create a fifth story that belongs to you. It’s time for This Emperor to leave. The Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament is held in the country of the Transcendents, Transcendence, towards the east. The castle the Infernal King lives in is to the west. The other rookies have basically headed to Transcendence since participating in the Martial Arts Tournament is still the most mainstream method when it comes to clearing the level. You can go there and take a look.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded.

Speechless waved his hand before he turned around and headed north.

“See you next time.”

The north was where the ravine several hundred meters across was. Speechless quickly walked to the edge of the ravine as he leaped forward. Suddenly, a pair of crystalline wings appeared on his back. Lustrous light flashed as his wings were flapped and like a meteor, he flew straight towards the other end of the ravine.

Shi Xiaobai watched Speechless leave but did not immediately make a move. He was hesitating if he should head east or west.

Of course, the most important thing was because Shi Xiaobai was famished again. And with ‘food’ littering the ground, it would be a waste not eating it!

...

Shi Xiaobai indulged in the countless gigantic black scorpions and steel rhinoceroses. His stomach was like a bottomless pit, with no end in sight.

Shi Xiaobai knew he would be satiated sooner or later, but he never expected that only after he finished all the ‘food’ on the ground to the point of him feeling sick from just catching a whiff of potato chips or chocolate, was he barely satiated!

Shi Xiaobai ate an entire night till the early hours of the next morning.

Shi Xiaobai sighed. Filling this stomach was quite difficult, and he had no idea how long this meal would last him. He wished he would not be famished so quickly again.

Although he had a heavy heart, Shi Xiaobai was also feeling pleasantly surprised. After eating the countless gigantic black scorpions and steel rhinoceroses, Shi Xiaobai could no longer imagine how strong his physical strength and defense had become.

Now, once his body completely absorbed the energy given to him by the food, Shi Xiaobai's physique would reach new heights in strength.

Shi Xiaobai contemplated as he ate, eventually deciding on going to Transcendence to see the Martial Arts Tournament. Although killing the Infernal King was very attractive for him, he had promised to meet Sunless on the seventh level back on the fifth level. According to what Speechless said, the Martial Arts Tournament was the mainstream method used by most people. As such, it was likely that Sunless was in Transcendence.

Shi Xiaobai did not plan on clearing the seventh level using the Martial Arts Tournament, but he wanted to fulfill the promise of meeting Sunless. He also wanted to take a look at how powerful the talented Transcendents were for them to prevent human trial-takers from clearing the level for thousands of years.

Shi Xiaobai bolted through the barren lands and headed east. Along the way, all he saw was sand and limestone. It was a desolate scene.

However, what looked like an oasis gradually appeared. Slowly, it was replaced by lush green plains, with an inkling of civilization.

It appeared as though he was approaching Transcendence!

Shi Xiaobai continued running and during this period of time, he was not as hungry as before. From the looks of it, eating so much 'food' in one go was effective.

Another half an hour later, a gigantic wall appeared across the lush green horizon!

The wall was nearly a hundred meters tall, and it stretched across the horizon, with no end in sight. The length was evident, and in the middle of the wall, there was a city gate about fifty meters tall!

This was the city of Transcendence?

It was really expansive!

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised as he felt a hint of anticipation.

Shi Xiaobai was very fast, and in a few moments, he had gone

from one end of the horizon to a spot in front of the city walls.

When Shi Xiaobai came several hundred meters from the city gates, a domineering voice resounded from within the city.

“Stop, alien!”

At the same time, a gigantic head peeked out of the hundred-meter wall!

It was a gigantic head that had little flesh, making it look like a large skull. Its head was more than ten meters in diameter and peeking out over the city walls, its body was situated behind the city walls.

It was a gargantuan more than a hundred meters tall!

“Stop or die!”

The gargantuan roared, sending reverberations across the world!



# Chapter 345: Racial Discrimination

---

A gigantic head peeked out of the city walls that were more than a hundred meters high. The head was ferocious-looking and it immediately bellowed angrily, “Stop, alien! Stop or die!”

The roar was filled with intense killing intent. It was terrifying and if it were any ordinary person, they would stop in fright or even take a few steps back.

However, Shi Xiaobai ignored it. Not only did he not stop, he accelerated instead.

If it were nice words of persuasion, Shi Xiaobai would have stopped, but if it was a threat from the beginning, Shi Xiaobai would not stand for that!

“You’re courting death!”

The hundred-meter-tall gargantuan clearly did not expect a member of an alien race that was as small as an ant would dare to ignore its deterrence. Immediately, it was incensed, but since it was situated inside the city walls, it could only serve as a deterrent, so it could only bellow repeatedly.

The bellows were filled with an imposing pressure as well as a turbulent gust of wind.

“Shut up, or This King will eat you!”

Shi Xiaobai found the gargantuan's bellow harsh on the ears as he railed out angrily. With an extremely fast speed, he charged towards the city gate that was dozens of meters tall.

The city gate was tightly shut and there were no guards at the gate. From the looks of it, the gargantuan was the gatekeeper.

Shi Xiaobai sneered as he made a mad dash towards the city gate before suddenly leaping up. He kicked at the city gate with all his strength!

“Boom!”

A deafening crash echoed. After consuming a great deal of ‘food’, Shi Xiaobai's physical strength was no longer the same as before. The power of his kick was rather terrifying as it caused the entire city gate to vibrate incessantly.

However, the city gate was rather hard, made of some unknown metal, so Shi Xiaobai had failed to knock it down with a single kick.

“Open the gate, or This King will not stand on ceremony any further!”

Shi Xiaobai looked up and yelled. Following that he began entering a punching stance.

The gargantuan's threats had pissed him off greatly, and it appeared as though there was no intention for the tightly closed city gate to be opened.

If the city gate was still closed after ten more seconds, Shi Xiaobai did not mind letting the city gate have a taste of the horrifying power of Turtle-speed Divine Punch!

The hundred-meter-tall gargantuan found it unbelievable that an ant-like alien would dare to rave about 'eating it' or even dare to attack the Transcendents' city gate!

This was a provocation on the mighty Transcendents!

“Alien, you will definitely die!”

The gargantuan roared angrily as a large pair of hands appeared above the city walls. The entire city wall began to vibrate!

The gargantuan was planning on leaping across the walls by using the walls as support!?

Shi Xiaobai immediately pulled his black sword out. If the gargantuan dared to jump out, Shi Xiaobai did not mind slicing off its legs!

At this moment, an anxious voice resounded from inside the city walls!

“Stop immediately!”

The moment this voice resounded, the gargantuan immediately withdrew his hands and the shaking of the city walls came to a stop.

“You fool, are you trying to tear down the city walls!?”

The anxious voice turned into one of condemnation.

The gargantuan’s deep voice sounded from inside, “No, Lord Moya. There is a lowly alien outside the city who ignored my warnings. He even dared to hit the city gate. It’s a provocation on us, the Transcendents!”

The scolding voice bellowed angrily like it was fuming, “Fool! Is this the reason for nearly tearing down the city walls? What right does a gargantuan-halfling like you claim to be a part of the Transcendents? Also, your job is not to be a gatekeeper, but a gate watcher. Do you understand? All you need to do is report what is happening outside the city in a timely manner, and not take the liberty to be rude to outsiders! Yesterday, you nearly entered a conflict with the alien Bravehearts, and you have yet to learn your lesson today?”

The gargantuan lowered its head as its voice turned increasingly muffled, “But...today is the day of the Martial Arts Tournament. His Majesty, Leonis, instructed me to be vigilant...”

“Shut up!”

The scolding voice from within the city immediately cut the gargantuan off. “Leonis only instructed you to be vigilant and to report if any Bravehearts come from afar to participate in the Martial Arts Tournament. It is not for you to bar them access. Fool, why aren’t you opening the city gate yet!?”

The gargantuan grunted indignantly but did not dare to refute the scolding voice.

When Shi Xiaobai heard this conversation, he slowly withdrew his fist. He did not have any grudges with the Transcendents. The only thing that slightly pissed him off was the gargantuan’s threatening words, but since the gargantuan was only a watchdog, Shi Xiaobai would not go as far as to pick a fight.

He found it odd. The hundred-meter-tall gargantuan did not even dare retaliate verbally after being scolded in a such a manner. What sort of ‘monster’ was the other creature inside the city?

At this moment, the heavy city gate slowly opened. It was obvious how heavy the city gate was from the screeching sound it produced as it dragged across the ground,

Just opening this city gate would require tremendous strength.

As the city gate slowly opened, it revealed the gargantuan’s body.

It was extremely thin, as though it was a massive body that had been reduced to bones. The tiny amount of flesh did not make it look like a skeleton, but most of its large innards could be seen, making it look rather terrifying.

The gargantuan had pulled the city gate open with his bare hands before walking to the side of the city gate. The person scolding inside the city was finally seen by Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes immediately flashed a look of disappointment when he saw this.

The existence that was freely scolding the gargantuan was a tiny dwarf. He did not look much different from humans, but his skin was dark green in color. He had a single horn on the top of his head.

Was this dwarf a Transcendent?

Why could he scold the hundred-meter-tall gargantuan freely?

Shi Xiaobai was disappointed. The green-skinned dwarf, Moya, similarly flashed a hint of disappointment in his eyes.

“So it's a human.”

Moya deliberately suppressed mutter did not escape Shi Xiaobai's ears.

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows pricked up slightly.

From the dwarf's tone, it appeared as though he looked down on humans?

Moya gathered himself and said, "If I didn't guess wrong, you must be here to participate in the Martial Arts Tournament with the other humans that came yesterday. Although it's unfathomable how the God of Courage showed favor upon you humans with such weak physiques, the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament welcomes the participation of all Hexstar Bravehearts."

Weak physiques?

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly as he said coldly, "You look down on humans?"

Moya chuckled, "You are being overly emphatic. Humans are considered a mysterious and strange race to us. Yesterday was also the first day we encountered humans. But on the surface, it seems the physiques of humans are inferior to the most inferior species in the world of Bravehearts, much less comparable to us, the Transcendents. Of course, this is on the surface. If you humans are able to put up a somewhat impressive performance at the Martial Arts Tournament, I wouldn't mind changing my opinion. You are a guest, so I naturally don't have intentions of belittlement and am just stating an objective opinion. Whether I look down or not is nothing to do with my thoughts, but on you humans."

Shi Xiaobai fell silent. The dwarf sounded exceedingly nice, but his words were filled with a discriminating tone despite him appearing to take on an objective standpoint.

What an arrogant sentence of ‘whether I look down or not is nothing to do with my thoughts, but on you humans’.

This was the first time Shi Xiaobai felt racial discrimination from another race as a human. The crux of the issue was that you could not be angry after the dwarfs said those words, or it will appear as though one was turning angry from embarrassment, making it seem like a form of confession!

“Open your eyes well and wait. Humans will very quickly prove their excellence.”

Shi Xiaobai sneered before striding into the city. He did not know how impressive the Transcendents were, for them to claim that humans were the most inferior species. As a human, regardless of how impressive the Transcendents were, the discrimination he endured was the precursor to him using his actions to smack the dwarf’s face so much that it would swell into a pig’s head in time to come!

Moya was deadpan as a faint smile that exuded contempt suffused across his lips. He whispered, “Then I’ll wait and see. Follow me, I’ll bring you to your companions. The Martial Arts Tournament will begin soon, and I hope the lot of you would be able to give us a surprise.”



...

## Chapter 346: To Dare Mess With This King, Eat First, Talk Later

---

After entering the city, the bustle of the city formed a stark contrast to the austerity at the city gate. As today was the day the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament was being held, Shi Xiaobai saw several races on the streets.

According to Moya, the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament welcomed Bravehearts from all races. There was still a form of cohesion among the different races in this world after all.

Shi Xiaobai saw dark-skinned dwarves the most along the way. Clearly, they were the prevailing look of Transcendents.

However, it was as though every dwarf had a stuck-up attitude. They seem to exude a sense of ethnic superiority against the foreign races.

But strangely, the conversations he heard along the way were how Bravehearts of other races would lower their statures despite being mildly ridiculed. It was as though the green-skinned dwarves' contempt was a matter taken for granted.

Be it a three-meter tall ape-headed man, or a ferocious-looking tiger-headed man, or a bizarre snake-bodied person, they appeared very respectful towards the green-skinned dwarves in the city.

Even the most ordinary Transcendent would look at Bravehearts

from other races with contempt.

And what rendered Shi Xiaobai the most speechless was how these Bravehearts from other races look at him after being treated with contempt. They looked at him with extreme contempt!

This blatant disparity from racial discrimination was infuriating.

Shi Xiaobai nearly wanted to use his sword to slaughter all these strange and ugly Bravehearts of other races.

A towering tree managed to divert Shi Xiaobai's attention away, saving these alien Bravehearts in the process.

This towering tree was located in the middle of the city. It was several hundred meters tall; therefore, it could be seen even on the outskirts of the city.

The towering tree's height was not only outrageous, it looked very strange as well. Its tree trunk and branches were brownish-black in color as a metallic sheen suffused from them. The leaves were like crystals refracting the luminance of the sunlight, as its massive crown was enveloped in a colorful luster.

“This is the holy tree of the Transcendents, known as the Transcendence Holy Tree. It possesses divine power, so when the Infernal King's forces invade, the Transcendence Holy Tree will bestow its power upon us, making the Transcendents' Bravehearts even more powerful and courageous!”

Moya was clearly accustomed to the shock outsiders had from seeing the Transcendence Holy Tree, so shocked that they would gulp their saliva. Therefore, he proudly introduced it.

However, Moya never expected that the human in front of him was gulping his saliva, not because of shock, but because he had a craving!

Despite being several kilometers away from the holy tree, Shi Xiaobai could still catch a scent of the aroma the tree's leaves were emitting. The refreshing fragrance was different. To him, it was the fragrance of a delicacy.

What would be the flavor of the crystal leaves?

Shi Xiaobai gulped his saliva once again, taking a moment to suppress his terrifying appetite that nearly reared its head.

...

As he proceeded forward, the closer he reached the heart of the city, the scene looked even more flourishing. Although the buildings had a medieval flavor to them, they were frequently adorned with ornaments like gold and crystal, making the buildings very opulent.

Every brick that made up the royal palace in Transcendence was adorned with gold, making it look extremely extravagant.

After passing by the royal palace, they finally reached guest houses the Transcendents had prepared for foreign Bravehearts.

These guest houses were not considered luxurious but it was rather spacious and clean.

However, Moya did not stop at any of the houses but instead walked towards a corner.

“There is the resting area for you humans.”

Moya pointed to a corner.

When Shi Xiaobai saw this when he walked over, he immediately frowned.

It was a tiny hut and looked dingy on the outside compared to the terrace houses from before. There was no need to mention how little room there was on the inside.

It was like a barn beside a high-end hotel.

This was the guest house prepared for humans!?

Shi Xiaobai was immediately incensed.

Moya said with a chuckle, “Sorry, as you humans, who suddenly have the title of Bravehearts, appeared out of the blue, it has exceeded our expectations. As there are too many foreign Bravehearts that came for the tournament, there is a shortage of rooms, so all of you can only be temporarily put up here. Really sorry about that.”

The green-skinned dwarf’s words were apologetic, but be it his facial expression or the tone in his voice, there was not the slightest hint of apology.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and said coldly, “You will feel remorse for what you have done very soon.”

Despite knowing that the Transcendents did not really exist, with them being non-playing characters created by the assessment program, Shi Xiaobai was so infuriated that he nearly lost his reason when faced with such racial discrimination.

However, Shi Xiaobai was vaguely aware how terrible things would become if he were to let his anger boil.

Therefore, he forcefully repressed his anger.

Moya said in a deadpan manner, “It seems you are very angry, but that is normal. You should cherish this moment of anger. That’s because when you realize the power of the Transcendents, you will have awe and fear left in your heart. Look at all those other species, they are just like you humans. They complain and resent the disparate treatment, but now, they have accepted it.

This is because the world is not fair. From the moment you are born, your race is decided, destining your stature. Then, we shall meet in the Martial Arts Tournament. If you wish to prove the stature of humans, that is the best opportunity.”

After Moya finished speaking, he left.

Shi Xiaobai stood in his original spot with a deadpan expression. He took a few deep breaths, suppressing an inexplicable impulse in his heart.

He realized that when he was angered, he felt a faint feeling of him losing his reason. There was a raging desire to destroy. That primordial foul emotion made Shi Xiaobai have no choice but to force himself to calm down.

Shi Xiaobai realized that he could not be so easily controlled by anger.

However, it was impossible for him to take this injustice lying down.

Smacking faces only at the Martial Arts Tournament?

No, that would be too late. Shi Xiaobai was eager to vent his pent up feelings!

This desire was extremely intense!

As Shi Xiaobai took deep breaths, he could not help but look at the towering tree that could be seen from any location.

This was the holy tree of the Transcendents?

Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up slightly as he had a thought on his mind.

Since these Transcendents who thought highly of themselves belittled humans, to the point of giving them unfair treatment, why did he need to maintain any decorum with them?

“It's all of you forcing This King...to eat your holy tree!”

Shi Xiaobai sneered as he began pondering how to devour the holy tree.

Regardless what problem would be provoked from eating the holy tree, Shi Xiaobai could not take this lying down!

To dare mess with This King?

Eat first, talk later!

...



# Chapter 347: The Powerful Transcendents

---

The reason behind Shi Xiaobai having thoughts of eating the Transcendence Holy Tree was not only due to the unfair treatment of humans by the Transcendents that infuriated him, but also because the leaves of the Transcendence Holy Tree emitted a fragrance that made him salivate.

Now, Shi Xiaobai was located in the middle of the city, so he was very close to the holy tree. The fragrance was permeating through the air, constantly invoking his ‘appetite’.

Eating the holy tree could vent his anger as well as satisfy his ‘appetite’, so why not?

However, Shi Xiaobai did not immediately take action.

Back when he passed the holy tree, Shi Xiaobai had taken note of the area. The holy tree did not have many guards, apparently because the Transcendents were not too worried that others would have nefarious thoughts on the holy tree. However, the area around the holy tree had a steady stream of foreign races passing through.

The holy tree was the most famous landmark of Transcendence, so it was very natural for foreigners to take a look, having come to Transcendence.

Therefore, if Shi Xiaobai were to ‘eat’ the holy tree in a view of everyone, he would be committing a crime openly, which would

definitely stir everyone in Transcendence.

Shi Xiaobai did not mind causing a scene since he did not plan on obtaining the assessment program's approval through the Martial Arts Tournament.

However, the other trial-takers belonged to the same human camp as he was. If he were to do something so atrocious, he might implicate them, causing them to lose their eligibility for the tournament. They might even be dealt with as enemies by the Transcendents.

Shi Xiaobai could ignore the rest, but he did not want to harm Sunless.

Therefore, his plan of eating the holy tree could only be done incognito. He had to find an opportunity when there would be fewer tourists so as to hide inside the holy tree's crown. He could then slowly eat clean the holy tree without anyone knowing.

Now, it was best he met up with Sunless first, so as to fulfill the promise that he made with her on the fifth level.

Go ahead first. Let us meet on the seventh level.

This was what Shi Xiaobai had previously said and he was never one to break his word.

...

...

“Knock, knock...”

Shi Xiaobai gently knocked on the mottled wooden door on the short and aged hut.

“The door isn’t locked. Please enter.”

A voice responded immediately from the inside.

It was a familiar but also unfamiliar male’s voice. Shi Xiaobai had heard it before but it had not left a deep impression on him.

Shi Xiaobai immediately opened the door.

As the wooden door opened, it let out a light creaking sound. The scene inside the narrow house was imprinted in his eyes. It was a house without a single window. There was only a chimney for ventilation, and the sunlight that entered was extremely dim; therefore, the room was lit with candles.

In the dim candlelight, the old walls and floor were filled with the marks of time, but they were extremely clean, apparently having been meticulously cleaned not long ago.

Shi Xiaobai scanned the room and saw only three people. They

were sitting in three separate corners of the room. Two of them were in Cogitation with their eyes closed, while one of them was looking extremely bored.

Shi Xiaobai focused and indeed, the two people in Cogitation were familiar. One of them was Pulp Farmer and the other was Liu Yu. As for the person looking bored, he was an armored-youth.

If he wasn't mistaken, this youth was called Feng Yuanlin? From what Mu Yuesheng said, the youth had once protected him on the fifth level.

With the door opened, the cogitating Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu did not open their eyes, apparently unconcerned with the person who had knocked.

Feng Yuanlin widened his eyes as he looked over, and when he realized it was Shi Xiaobai, he immediately exclaimed, "Wow, Boss Shi Xiaobai!"

With this said, Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu spontaneously opened their eyes as they looked surprised.

Shi Xiaobai's appearance here was a very problematic matter for them. This was because the Bravehearts that had slain the seven dragons had already been decided. They were finding it unfortunate that Shi Xiaobai had been eliminated on the sixth level, but now, he had appeared here with them.

Could it be that he was directly promoted to the seventh level after killing four Level Lords? If that was the case, it was somewhat reasonable.

However, how was Shi Xiaobai able to kill four Level Lords? And why did he do so?

The three people in the room were immediately filled with questions.

Shi Xiaobai asked before they could ask their questions, “There’s only the three of you?”

Feng Yuanlin guessed at what Shi Xiaobai was really referring to and answered, “That’s right. We are the only three participating in the Martial Arts Tournament. Sunless isn’t here.”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly disappointed when he heard this. After all, he had specially made the trip to Transcendence to meet Sunless. He never expected that she wasn’t here and that only three people, a number less than half the Bravehearts, were participating in the tournament.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask, “Isn’t it said that participating in the tournament is the most mainstream way to clear the level?”

Feng Yuanlin said with an awkward smile, “The most mainstream way usually means the simplest... Proud geniuses like

Speechless, Mu Lengxi, and Sunless probably do not wish to go down a well-trodden path, or they might be attempting to leave the beaten track, or challenge the Conquest King or the Hero King's feats."

With Feng Yuanlin saying so, Shi Xiaobai was immediately enlightened. After all, he too did not wish to clear the level using the tournament. After hearing the four different stories, there was an inclination for people to have the impassioned hope of creating the fifth story.

However, Shi Xiaobai had a feeling that things were apparently not that simple.

At this moment, Pulp Farmer did not agree with what Feng Yuanlin said. He said, "The most mainstream way doesn't necessarily mean the simplest. Ever since Xu Taibai clinched victory at the tournament, the strongest member of the Transcendents, Leonis, had an enhancement in strength. As such, not a single trial-taker has managed to defeat Leonis in the tournament for the several thousand years. People say that the Ji Feng and the Conquest King would be able to easily defeat Leonis, but it might not be the case. After all, they were at the Psionic Mortal Realm back then. As for Leonis' strength, it was likely on the same level as the Infernal King. Therefore, it might not be the simplest way to clinch victory at the tournament. However, there is a lower risk even if this ends up failing; hence, it became the most mainstream way."

Liu Yu added as well, "Let's not talk about Leonis. Throughout history, the number of trial-takers that can defeat Moya, the

second strongest Transcendent so as to have the right to challenge the defending champion can be counted with one's fingers. Most trial-takers get halted during the qualifying matches. In fact, being able to defeat any of the eight Bravehearts of the Transcendents is already an extremely impressive feat."

Shi Xiaobai said in astonishment, "The Transcendents are that powerful?"

Liu Yu said with a nod, "The Transcendents is the only race in this level's world that can put up a fight with the Infernal King, allowing them to enjoy a stature above all other races. They are naturally gifted with strong physiques, and the strength of the eight Bravehearts has already exceeded the Psionic Mortal Realm. Especially Leonis and Moya, their strength is unfathomable. Over the thousands of years of history, only five people have been able to defeat Moya. The only person that could defeat Leonis was Xu Taibai. Furthermore, it was against a weaker Leonis. Now, Leonis almost has the same power as the Infernal King!"

...

## Chapter 348: Leonis And Civil Strife

---

“Leonis is also quite a legendary figure among the Transcendents. He is not a purebred Transcendent, but a ‘hybrid’ of Transcendents and a member of the lion-headed species. The Transcendents are extremists when it comes to racial superiority. Therefore, Leonis suffered discrimination and bullying from a young age, but for some reason, the talent he possessed far exceeded all Transcendents, so he slowly became the strongest member of the Transcendents. Although he was able to use its redoubtable strength to become the king of the Transcendents, there are many people who are unconvinced about its reign as king. Especially when Leonis recently revealed his intentions of overthrowing racial discrimination, a revolutionary faction was secretly formed, with Moya, the second strongest Transcendent, as the leader. At the tournament, they would mutiny and attempt to overthrow Leonis. This is the story background of Transcendence. How is it? Is it interesting enough?”

Feng Yuanlin patiently introduced the situation regarding Transcendence to Shi Xiaobai.

This information was of course readily available on the Internet, collated by countless trial-takers over the years. This was also the reason why the first six levels of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower were determined randomly. It was to prevent trial-takers from using prior experience to come up with strategic shortcuts.

However, from the seventh level onwards, even if one knew exactly how to clear it, it would be useless without the strength to do so.



Shi Xiaobai had already experienced the Transcendents' racial discrimination. Furthermore, the green-skinned dwarf that led the way was also called Moya.

The dwarf had spoken with an air of superiority, but it was unexpected for him to be the second strongest member of the Transcendents!

Shi Xiaobai could only feel a sense of 'schadenfreude' regarding the Transcendents' civil strife. He had a poor impression of the race that found themselves superior.

“How did the civil strife end?”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but ask. Since this story was repeated every month, its ending should have happened countless times.

Feng Yuanlin held up two fingers and he said, “There are two outcomes. The simpler outcome is that the trial-takers, which is us, defeat Moya in the qualifying match, Moya would lose all prestige, demolishing the chance for mutiny.”

“The slightly more complicated outcome is Moya gaining the qualification to challenge the defending champion, battling the seven times defending champion, Leonis, in a final match. In that match, the eight Transcendent Bravehearts will suddenly attack Leonis sneakily. After that...guess what happens?”

Feng Yuanlin playfully kept Shi Xiaobai guessing.

Shi Xiaobai thought for a moment before saying, “Leonis won?”

Feng Yuanlin said with a chuckle, “Not only did he win, it was a wipeout! Leonis had always been hiding his true strength. In his rage, he finally went mad, killing the eight Bravehearts instantaneously. Moya could only last a few moves before dying as well!”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised. Despite only five trial-takers after Xu Taibai managing to defeat Moya over thousands of years to qualify to challenge the defending champion, Leonis was able to wipe out the eight Bravehearts. It was able to kill Moya in a few moves despite being ganged up upon. If that was the case, how terrifying was his strength!? It was no wonder no one after Xu Taibai had managed to win the championship.

At this moment, Liu Yu said, “Therefore, although challenging the tournament is the most mainstream method, it might not be the easiest. The true strength of Leonis should not be much worse than the Infernal King. However, this method is less risky. Even if one fails in the challenge, one can still attempt the other methods.”

Feng Yuanlin said with a bashful smile, “It seems that’s the reason. Thinking about it carefully, there’s no hope to clinch victory at the tournament. Being able to defeat Moya is enough to brag for years. Anyway, Liu Yu and I are nobodies here to join in the bustle. Being able to reach the seventh level and enter the top ten for the selection is already something to be content with.”

The remark sounded lacking in ambition, but Liu Yu, who had been dubbed a ‘nobody’, did not retort. Instead, he said earnestly, “This Penniless Priest doesn’t have great ambitions. Being able to witness the outcome of the civil war is enough to content me. But for Benefactor Xiaobai and Benefactor Pulp Farmer, both of you are different as both of you possess limitless possibilities. If it’s possible, please do your best to defeat Moya. Let those snobbish Transcendents see how powerful we humans are!”

Be it the way the Transcendents looked at them or how bad the guest house designated to them was, they could feel the racial discrimination from the Transcendents, as well as the unequal treatment. In fact, Liu Yu and company were infuriated just like Shi Xiaobai.

Pulp Farmer nodded his head seriously and said in a heavy tone, “There’s no need for you to say that. I already can’t wait to let the Transcendents know that we humans are a great race that far exceeds their imaginations!”

Upon hearing this, Shi Xiaobai’s blood boiled with fervour. He could not help but sigh, “This King...does not intend to participate in the tournament.”

Shi Xiaobai never planned on participating in the tournament even though he had the strong desire to brutally smack Moya and the Transcendents in the face at the tournament.

However, he could not do so, because once he participated in the

tournament, he could not lose, at least not to the Transcendents.

He would have to work hard at clinching the ultimate victory.

However, by winning, it also meant losing the opportunity to create a fifth story. It would also mean leaving the seventh level before meeting Sunless. It would be equivalent to breaking his word.

As for abstaining after fighting a few rounds, it would be a waste of time. He might as well use the time to eat the holy tree secretly while the tournament was ongoing.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai did not plan on participating in the tournament.

Shi Xiaobai said with a sigh, "Sorry."

Pulp Farmer said calmly, "There's no need to apologize. We can understand your choice."

Feng Yuanlin laughed and said, "Haha, this kind of trifling matter really doesn't need Boss Shi Xiaobai to take action. The three of us will be enough to make those Transcendent idiots sit up and take notice!"

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head seriously, "Alright, This King believes that all of you will definitely be able to ruthlessly smack those aliens in the face! This King may not be participating, but

This King will accompany all of you till the tournament ends before leaving.”

...

...

At nine in the morning, the tournament unfolded. The alien races in the Braveheart village began heading towards the tournament's arena.

The arena could accommodate more than ten thousand people and the civilians of Transcendence had been waiting early in the morning in the audience stands, filling up the arena even before the tournament began.

The annual Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament was considered one of the biggest events of Transcendence. With more than a hundred species gathered, it was enjoyable watching the tussle between Bravehearts.

Pulp Farmer and company had already headed towards the waiting area for participants. After Shi Xiaobai bade them farewell, he headed to where the Transcendence Holy Tree was.

As Shi Xiaobai expected, there was nearly no one around the Transcendence Holy Tree as the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament was about to begin. After all, compared to the holy tree that could be seen at any time, watching the annual

tournament was more important.

However, there were still four Transcendent guards defending the surroundings of the holy tree.

# Chapter 349: Do You Prefer Being Raped Before Being Killed, Or Being Killed Before Being Raped

---

The Transcendence Holy Tree was more than a few hundred meters tall, and its crown was dozens of meters in diameter. The trunk's circumference was the combined arm span of dozens of people. Four ten-meter high walls surrounded the Transcendence Holy Tree.

Although the Transcendence Holy Tree was free for tourists to view, they could only watch it from afar. Tourists could only awe at the magnificence of the holy tree outside the walled compound.

The four guards were standing on each of the four walls. In fact, it was not considered heavily guarded. Furthermore, the guards looked rather lazy.

This was because, despite the Transcendence Holy Tree looking divine and how there was a fragrance emitted by its leaves, the bark and leaves were poisonous. Furthermore, the holy tree would automatically counterattack if it were attacked.

In the past, the Infernals had invaded, nearly wiping out Transcendence, but the holy tree revealed its might, scaring the Infernals away, allowing the Transcendents to continue prevailing.

Therefore, there was no need for the holy tree to be defended.

The four guards were just symbolic.

Although the four guards were not being negligent, their hearts were not on the job.

Shi Xiaobai did not know that the holy tree was laced with poison. He was only attracted by the fragrance from the holy tree despite him having even more ways to 'get back' at the Transcendents for their contempt.

However, the fragrance from the holy tree made him willing to take the risk to do it this way.

There was a fiery voice in his mind that made him unable to abandon such delicious 'food'.

Shi Xiaobai was patiently observing from a secluded corner and soon realize that the guards were daydreaming.

Such lax defense was equivalent to nothing for Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai patiently waited until the last tourist headed to the tournament arena. Only when there were only the four guards did he begin his mission.

Shi Xiaobai first pretended to be a tourist that was here to admire the holy tree. As he approached it, the guard who was daydreaming gave him a quick glance before ignoring him.



Shi Xiaobai looked up as he pretended to admire the holy tree. As he nudged his feet slightly, he slowly came to a blind spot of the guard.

“Now is the time!”

Shi Xiaobai seized the moment when the guard blinked his eyes as Crab Steps went into full motion. Instantly, he came in front of the wall and by repressing his sounds and breathing, he leaped up gently, onto the wall. With both hands supporting him, he somersaulted once in the air and landed on the holy tree’s trunk.

This set of actions was done fluidly at an extremely fast speed. There was almost no sound to it.

The guard only felt a sudden gust of wind but did not pay attention to it.

Shi Xiaobai had specially picked the moment when there were no tourists around before jumping onto the tree trunk. Therefore, no one noticed him. From afar, all that could be seen was a tiny black speck on the tree trunk.

The four guards were standing guard with their eyes facing forward, but they had no idea that someone had went past them and entered the wall’s confines.

Shi Xiaobai naturally wasn’t dumb enough to hang on the trunk

or any tourist would see him at a glance.

In fact, it was now a race against time.

“Please don’t let there be any tourists.”

Shi Xiaobai climbed up the straight trunk like a nimble monkey. As the trunk was massive, there was no way to cling onto it. Therefore, it was as though he was climbing up a wall, but this was not too difficult for Shi Xiaobai.

However, Shi Xiaobai quickly sensed poison entering his body through his pores.

Shi Xiaobai immediately realized that the tree bark was laced with poison.

The poison was extremely pervasive. If it were anyone else, they would have been poisoned to death. It was no wonder the defense was so relaxed.

But thankfully, Shi Xiaobai possessed a poison-resistant body. Furthermore, with Unleaking Turtle Aura’s ability to inhibit his senses, the poison did not impact his movement in the slightest.

Shi Xiaobai climbed up at an extremely fast speed. In fact, this was an exhausting affair because Shi Xiaobai needed to use strength from every muscle he had. If he relaxed just a bit, he would plummet straight down.

But the fatigue was nothing compared to the ‘delicacy’ in front of him.

Shi Xiaobai climbed up at full speed, approaching the crystalline leaves. Their fragrance was assaulting his olfactory senses.

“Pu!”

Shi Xiaobai penetrated the leaves and finally reached the tree’s crown. The crystalline leaves refracted the sunlight, causing the crown to have a myriad of colors. It was nearly impossible to see into the crown from outside. This meant that Shi Xiaobai was temporarily safe.

In the crown, it was as though he was immersed in a rainbow, somewhat like a fairyland.

However, Shi Xiaobai only had eyes for the leaves. Stretching his hand out, he plucked a leaf and quickly placed it into his mouth.

“Pui!”

Shi Xiaobai nearly spat it out.

The crystalline leaves were as bitter as Chinese medicine. It was extremely unpalatable!

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat stunned.

Why were these fragrant leaves so unpalatable?

He could even eat rocks with great relish, but he could not even chew on the leaves!

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai realized that something was wrong. He stretched his hand out and plucked a leaf, placing it to his nose to take a deep sniff at it.

“The fragrance isn’t coming from the leaves?”

When he took a deep sniff with the leaf in front of him, Shi Xiaobai was surprised to realize that the tantalizing fragrance did not come from the leaves. However, the fragrance was too rich, nearly permeating the entire crown of the tree, causing Shi Xiaobai to be mistaken.

Then, what was the thing emitting such a fragrant aroma?

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and climbed up the canopy based on his intuition.

The higher he went, the richer the aroma became.

He was approaching it. He was getting closer to the source of the aroma.

Shi Xiaobai gulped down a mouthful of saliva.

What was it that was so fragrant?

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai saw a fruit the same color as the leaves in the foliage.

The fruit's outline could not be easily seen, as though it was a chameleon camouflaging itself into the leaves.

If not for the fragrance leading him, Shi Xiaobai would not have noticed the fruit hidden in the leaves.

After he pushed the leaves away, the crystal fruit that was shaped like a heart revealed its contours.

Shi Xiaobai took a deep breath and immediately felt like he had ascended into heaven, moaning out a few times.

Shi Xiaobai was certain that the fragrance he caught a whiff of from several kilometers away and nearly made him lose control was a result of this crystalline fruit!

...

...

Transcendence capital, King Leonis' Palace

A green-skinned dwarf with a lion head was lazily sitting on a throne. One of his hands held his cheek, while his other hand was putting grapes into his mouth.

Two Transcendent 'beauties' were massaging him.

There was only Leonis, his maidservants, and a green-skinned dwarf that was genuflecting in the palace.

The green-skinned dwarf said in hushed tones, "Your Majesty, according to the spy you planted beside Moya, Moya plans to mutiny during the finals tomorrow! It seems...the other eight Bravehearts have joined the ranks of the rebellion."

When Leonis heard this, he lazily lifted his eyelids, as though he did not put this alarming matter to heart.

"Since they plan on courting death, This King does not mind letting them know what reality is. Take your leave. This King has plans of his own."

Leonis waved his hand.

"Yes!"

The green-skinned dwarf nodded and quickly left the palace.

Leonis turned to look at the Transcendent ‘beauties’ massaging him.

“Do you prefer being raped before being killed, or being killed before being raped?” Leonis asked with a chuckle.

The two Transcendent ‘beauties’ immediately knelt down in fear, claiming repeatedly that they did not hear a thing.

Leonis stood up from the throne and pushed a ‘beauty’ down beneath his crotch.

“I was planning on eating it only after it matured a bit more. It looks like it’s time to eat it now.”

Leonis’ gaze penetrated the palace as it landed on the Transcendence Holy Tree that ascended into the sky.

...

# Chapter 350: Some Fruits No Longer Exist If You Miss Them

---

Leonis's gaze penetrated the palace as it landed on the Transcendence Holy Tree that ascended into the sky. His eyes revealed a nostalgic look.

Leonis's mother was an aristocrat in Transcendence, but for some baffling reason, she fell in love with a lion-headed man, to the point of giving birth to him, against all opposition.

The Transcendents' racial discrimination was deeply rooted. In their minds, a Transcendent beggar was of even greater nobility than the kings of other races.

It was conceivable how terrible the repercussions Leonis' mother had faced. She was expelled from her family, going from an aristocrat to a lowly civilian. Leonis's father could not withstand the external pressure and left, abandoning the helpless mother and son to fend for themselves.

Therefore, Leonis's life was divided into two parts. The second half was obviously the brilliant moment as king, while the first half was dark and bitter, unimaginable to the common person.

Leonis tried his best to forget his tragic childhood, but he could never forget the spring when he was ten years old.

It was a sunny and vibrant morning. His mother, who felt



despair towards life and the future facing her, had cooked a pot of gruel.

Leonis's mother drank a bowl with a deadpan expression before spitting out a black blood that soaked the ground before dying in pain.

The gruel was poisoned, and it was extremely poisonous.

Leonis had only taken a sip but did not immediately die from the poison. However, he was unlikely to live for long.

This was not murder but suicide.

His mother could not put up with the hardships of life and the cruel reality she faced, so she chose death.

Leonis still loved life, but no one would save him.

Leonis was filled with despair. He knew that he would die once the poison spread through his body.

However, before his death, what could he do in his young and powerless state?

Leonis came in front of the Transcendence Holy Tree and began climbing it. Since he was destined to die, he wanted to die somewhere closer to heaven.

Back then, the Transcendence Holy Tree was only surrounded by a wall, without any guards watching it. This was because the tree was laced with poison, it was equivalent to courting death if one attempted to approach it.

However, Leonis was facing certain death, so why couldn't he achieve his childhood dream of climbing the tallest holy tree, hiding in its rainbow crown where no one could find him while looking down at the Transcendents that trampled him and his mother?

Could such a beautiful wish be fulfilled before he died?

People noticed him climbing the holy tree, but no one stopped him. Instead, they watched gleefully, waiting for him to be consumed by the poison before plummeting to the ground when his body was eroded by it.

It was a death for all to view, colder and crueler than an execution ground.

Leonis climbed upwards, unsure of how high he had climbed, but he knew that he had to climb higher.

Higher, just a bit higher, stay further away from the dwarves on the ground.

Ten meters, twenty meters, thirty meters...

Leonis was not poisoned to death by the holy tree's poison because it conflicted with the poison in the bowl of gruel. Maybe it was divine mercy, or maybe it had not activated...

But the result was Leonis successfully climbing into the tree's crown, disappearing from the crowd's sight. He overlooked the capital of Transcendence, feeling like he had fulfilled his dying wish. In the dirty and dark country, this was the only holy ground that was clean.

If he could be buried here, it would be a silver lining.

But at that moment, Leonis saw two heart-shaped fruits.

The outline of the two fruits was nearly indiscernible as they camouflaged themselves within the leaves. If not for Leonis sitting on a branch just beneath the fruits, he would not have discovered them.

The two fruits were different in size. One of them appeared to be ripe while the other appeared somewhat nascent.

Leonis was curious over its taste and plucked the ripe fruit. He chewed on it before swallowing it.

And that was the moment his life and fate changed.

That was a mysterious and magical fruit. It allowed a hybrid child of Transcendents and a member of the lion-headed species to possess a physique that exceeded purebred Transcendents.

He went from a desperate child that was facing imminent death to the strongest Braveheart that ruled over Transcendence. Leonis's life had a turning point because of this fruit!

Therefore, for the decades that followed, Leonis was waiting for the nascent fruit to ripen.

If it was possible, Leonis wished to send an army to guard the holy tree, but that would easily arouse the suspicion of others. In addition to him not dying after climbing the tree at the age of ten, and how he experienced a life-changing situation after coming down, it was easy to guess about the matter regarding the holy tree's fruit.

Therefore, Leonis only assigned four guards. In fact, he was not too worried that others would have such heaven-defying luck like he had.

And at this moment, knowing that Moya, the head of the eight Bravehearts, was about to lead a rebellion, Leonis could not wait any longer.

The fruit was almost ripe, but Leonis wished to consume it only after it was fully ripened, but it was not a bad idea eating it at that moment either.

Leonis retracted his gaze from the holy tree and lowered his head to see the Transcendent ‘beauty’ that was working hard with her mouth to serve him, afraid that she would be silenced. Slowly, a male desire was ignited.

Before eating the fruit, he decided to eat the two ‘beauties’ first!

With this thought in mind, Leonis reached his hand out to rip the clothes of the ‘beauty’ beside him.

Soon, moans that sounded closer to screaming sounded in the palace in an endless fashion.

...

...

If Leonis had not chosen to succumb to his lust by eating the ‘beauties’, or if Leonis was not that everlasting by finishing the tussle in a minute or two, what he missed might not have been irredeemable.

But there were no ifs in this world.

As Leonis was engaging in sex, Shi Xiaobai had already plucked the heart-shaped fruit.

Shi Xiaobai swallowed his saliva and took a bite.

The fruit that melted in his mouth was like a delicious ice-cream, but its flavor was even more complex. It was as though sweetness, sourness, bitterness and spiciness were all mashed together. There was an ice-cold feeling that pervaded the entire mouth cavity, but after swallowing it, it suddenly turned hot. Instantly, his organs warmed up, as though he had drunk a mouthful of aged white wine.

What was this taste?

It seemed rather superficial to describe it as a delicacy because the flavor of the fruit could not be considered to be the most flavorful, but it was certainly the most unique.

Shi Xiaobai felt that his trip was worth it. This fruit seemed to be the most delicious item he had ever eaten. It was probably addictive if he ate more of it.

The coolness shot straight to his brain, while the warmth filled his blood. The complex blend of the four flavors felt like a microcosm of life.

Shi Xiaobai enjoyed every mouthful of the fruit. He did not even spare the fruit's core. When the entire fruit was finished, he could not help but lick the juice off his fingers.

“Burp...”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but burp after finishing the fruit.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly widened his eyes.

He was finally satiated?

Despite eating countless rocks, gigantic black scorpions and steel rhinoceroses that filled the desert, he had never been satiated.

But just eating a single fruit made his stomach feel bloated. It appeared as though he did not need to eat for a long period of time.

Shi Xiaobai immediately realized that the fruit...contained unimaginable power!

As he felt his body digesting this inexhaustible energy, his physique was being enhanced at an exaggerated speed, so much so that Shi Xiaobai nearly laughed out loud.

However, Shi Xiaobai quickly noticed that the fragrance that permeated the holy tree was vanishing. With the fruit eaten, the fragrance left behind on the leaves was dissipating. Soon, the fragrance would vanish completely.

“Time to run!”

Shi Xiaobai did not dare to stay in the holy tree for long. The fruit was clearly extraordinary. If the fragrance were to disappear,

someone would likely discover that the fruit had been eaten.

Since the tree leaves were unpalatable, there was no more reason to stay in the tree!

Shi Xiaobai quickly left.

...

When Leonis was done with his tussling, with two of the Transcendent 'beauties' no longer looking normal, Shi Xiaobai was already sitting in the audience stands of the arena.

Some fruits no longer exist if you miss them.



# Chapter 351: Wrong Way Of Posturing

---

The Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament officially began at nine in the morning. There were about five hundred Bravehearts from various races participating in the tournament. The Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament lasted for two days; therefore the system could not be one that had continuous stops in between, or else it would take too long.

The highlights of the tournament were the qualifying match in the afternoon and the challenge against the defending champion the next day.

Therefore, the morning competition could be said to be unusually cruel. About five hundred people were split into thirty-two groups, with each ground having approximately ten people. They fought in a free-for-all, with two people from each group qualifying, resulting in sixty-four people.

As for the sixty-four people that qualified, they would duel each other in pairs, with the final victor being able to obtain the eligibility to challenge the defending champion, King Leonis.

Hence, it was a long day for the participating Bravehearts. To be able to win the right to challenge the champion, they needed to win the ten-person battle royale, as well as the 64 to 32, 32 to 16, 16 to 8, 8 to 4, 4 to 2, 2 to 1, a total of seven matches.

With the battles in the tournament so packed, the outcomes of the matches were decided rather simply. It was made in order to

prevent the participants from expending too much of their stamina due to anxiety, which would affect their next match.

Other than the final battle between two Bravehearts to determine the final challenger, with rules requiring the opponent to lose all ability to carry on fighting, the other matches had a rule that deemed having all four limbs touch the ground or falling out of the arena as defeat.

The host of the tournament fluently described the rules once before announcing the beginning of the tournament.

The participants had already drawn lots and split into groups. The first group with nine participants was first to take the stage.

The arena for the free-for-all was very expansive, about the size of ten soccer fields. The nine participants were dispersed on each corner of the arena.

The free-for-all could only have two contestants left standing; therefore, other than using overwhelming strength to crush the other contestants, playing safe was another method to persist on till they were one of the remaining two.

If one did not have the absolute confidence, no one wanted to be the focus of a free-for-all.

...

When Shi Xiaobai left the Transcendence Holy Tree, the fragrance that permeated the air had nearly dissipated.

As for the power that the fruit had given him, it was constantly being converted by him, like a steady stream of spring water.

Shi Xiaobai felt his body turn warm, as though he had drunk a mouthful of hard liquor. His muscles were filled with energy and his blood was boiling, but not burning. It was as though his blood vessels were undergoing a transformation.

Shi Xiaobai was overjoyed that his body was evolving and transforming.

After he left the holy tree, he quickly headed to the tournament's venue.

At this moment, the seats were packed with people, but thankfully there were a few empty spots. Shi Xiaobai randomly found a spot to sit down, but his surroundings were all green-skinned dwarves or strange people from other races.

Of course, in the eyes of the other races, Shi Xiaobai as a human was the true freak of nature. This was because they had never seen or even heard of such a race in their impressions or memory.

Shi Xiaobai ignored the probing eyes of the others. He watched the intense battle in the arena while he experienced his body's absorption of the energy.

When Shi Xiaobai came to the arena, the tightly-packed free-for-all battles had already begun. It was unknown which group it was, but Shi Xiaobai immediately lost interest in it when he noticed that Pulp Farmer and company or the eight Transcendent Bravehearts were not participating in this round. He focused on experiencing the growth of his strength.

This form of focus could also speed up the absorption to a certain extent.

Time quickly passed as there was no stalemate that lasted very long in the free-for-all. After all, having four limbs touch the ground or falling out of the arena resulted in elimination. Therefore, there were only two participants left after about five minutes.

After this free-for-all ended, the next round of contestants was already ready along the sidelines. Thirty-six free-for-all rounds had to be completed in the morning, therefore time was rather tight.

Shi Xiaobai found it rather boring, but the audience was enthusiastic. Although the scrimmage was not gory or even considered violent, as long as the confrontation during a scrimmage was complicated enough, be it the overwhelming might or psychological intrigue, the brainless spectators would find it awesome despite not understanding a thing.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up slightly. He noticed that Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu were in the next group of participants!

The two human trial-takers had been chosen to be in the same group!

Thankfully, there were two spots for each group, preventing the need for the two to engage in an internecine struggle. They could even cooperate.

Before the battle began, Shi Xiaobai heard an unbridled discussion.

“Look, what race is that? They look so weird. Have you seen it before?”

“I’ve never seen it before, but I heard that they are called ‘humans’. Previously, there was some conflict with the gate watcher gargantuan when they entered the city. Apparently the gargantuan felt that humans were a race even lowlier than ants, so they were barred from entry.”

“So that’s the case. No wonder they look so frail and weak. How were they chosen to be Bravehearts?”

“Who knows, but it doesn’t matter. Such weaklings would not even last a single round, so they are nothing of concern. Sigh, this group doesn’t have any of the eight Transcendent Bravehearts. I’m so looking forward to Lord Moya’s appearance!”

“ ... ”

Two green-skinned dwarves behind Shi Xiaobai discussed without considering their words. The contempt in their words caused Shi Xiaobai to frown slightly.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat angry, but he did not speak, nor did he turn his head.

Engaging in a war of words did not lend credence to the matter. Using facts to smack someone in the face was most practical. Shi Xiaobai believed in Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu's strength. None of the eight Transcendent Bravehearts were in this group, so they were likely able to quickly end the match. When that happened, the two green-skinned dwarves would know to shut their mouths.

...

The free-for-all began.

Just as Shi Xiaobai expected, without the eight Transcendent Bravehearts in the group, the Bravehearts from other races did not apply any pressure on Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu.

However, the quick end to the battle rendered Shi Xiaobai speechless, because it ended too quickly.

At the instant the free-for-all began, Pulp Farmer thrust out his spear, and with his domineering strength, he pushed down five participants in front of him. With a wave of Liu Yu's whisk, the

remaining three participants were pushed out of the arena by an unknown force.

Immediately, only Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu were left standing in the arena. Pent-up anger had welled in the two of them; therefore, they used a domineering strength immediately.

The free-for-all lasted only a few seconds before it ended.

The scene should have been shocking, but the ordinary Transcendent civilians did not understand what had happened.

“What happened?”

“Why did all the participants except the humans fall down by themselves or fly out of the arena? Was this match fixed?”

“Despicable. They probably bribed the participants. It seems that the humans are very rich.”

“...”

Shi Xiaobai felt somewhat helpless hearing these ignorant conversations. Sometimes, posturing too much would end up being overdone. It required the audience to understand what sort of posturing you were doing.

Shi Xiaobai sighed, but he was not too anxious either. The

tournament still had a long way ahead. With the opponents overly weak, there was no way to reflect the might of Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu.

When they battled with the eight Transcendent Bravehearts, these snobbish idiots who looked down on humans would realize how ignorant they were.

Maybe the heavens had heard the inner voice in Shi Xiaobai's heart.

In the next free-for-all, Shi Xiaobai was surprised to see Feng Yuanlin as well as the second strongest Transcendent, Moya!



# Chapter 352: The Importance Of A Posturing Technique

---

Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu had won too fast, resulting in the ignorant audience to mistake it for match fixing. Immediately, there was public outrage, but at this moment, the third human Braveheart had come on stage. He was also in the same group as the second strongest Transcendent, Moya!

The audience went into a frenzy!

“Lord Moya, wipe out those despicable humans that engaged in match fixing!”

“Despicable humans, get the fuck out of the tournament!”

“...”

The denouncement and cursing went back and forth, and of course, there were some voices of reason in them, but they were quickly drowned out.

At this moment, Moya had walked to the middle of the arena. Other than Feng Yuanlin, the other seven contestants knew their worth and walked to the edges of the arena in a bid to get as far away from Moya as possible.

Feng Yuanlin stood closest to Moya at a corner of the arena. His

usual cheeky grin was replaced with something more serious.

Just like Shi Xiaobai, even if they were maligned, they would not waste their breaths in an argument. They would use facts to speak for themselves and smack faces. This was because they possessed the power to do so.

Even though his opponent was the second strongest warrior, Moya, who had only been defeated by five trial-takers throughout history, Feng Yuanlin would not cower. After all, the reputation of his partners, as well as the dignity of humanity, was at stake.

What he wanted to defend and prove was a hundred times more important than being defeated!

Therefore, he had to face it straight on!

“Go to one side and let me fight Moya alone!”

Feng Yuanlin bellowed angrily at the other participants. He was extremely high-handed and arrogant!

Moya’s eyes were filled with an ill-humored look.

The other Bravehearts showed disdain for him as they scoffed, “Who the hell do you think you are? Wouldn’t it be humiliating if we followed whatever you said?”

Feng Yuanlin's eyes turned cold. He did not mind demolishing the bunch of idiots!

Shi Xiaobai's impression of Feng Yuanlin increased by several times upon seeing his domineering attitude. He was extremely eager to see Feng Yuanlin fight a wonderful match so as to vent the anger that had welled up.

At the same time, he was somewhat curious how strong this green-skinned dwarf, Moya, was.

At this moment, the referee announced the commencement of the battle!

At that instant, the one-meter-tall Moya suddenly swelled up, as though he was a shriveled balloon that was suddenly injected with a large amount of gas.

In an instant, the green-skinned dwarf turned into a three-meter tall green-skinned gargantuan!

His muscles bulged, making him look as hard as a rock. His massive limbs contained terrifying power!

What was going on?

The audience immediately answered Shi Xiaobai.

“Wow, Lord Moya has activated his first form!”

“It looks like Lord Moya does not plan on going easy!”

“Heh heh, it’s just the first form. It’s said that Lord Moya is a monster that can reach the third form. Other than King Leonis, no one can match him!”

“ ... ”

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised.

So this was the reason why the Transcendents were so powerful?

They even had transformations. Moya, who had activated the first form, was now like an elephant compared to its previous state. Moya went from a harmless looking dwarf to a three-meter-tall gargantuan that obviously appeared to be filled with explosive power!

The free-for-all had already begun, but no one moved. Feng Yuanlin was given quite a fright by Moya’s perverse change.

At this moment, Moya suddenly lifted his right foot and stamped on the ground!

“Boom!”

An explosion sounded as the foot that trampled towards the ground possessed terrifying power. Instantly, the ground cracked as a shockwave emanated!

Feng Yuanlin snapped out of his daze as he quickly concentrated. He bent his legs and stood firmly as though he was rooted to the ground.

As the ground quaked, he could sense the vibrating energies surge through his body from his foot.

Feng Yuanlin wobbled gently a few times, abating the energies.

This stamp naturally could not knock him down.

Two shields appeared out of thin air into Feng Yuanlin's hands!

“Moya! Eat this!” Feng Yuanlin bellowed angrily as he raised his shields and charged at Moya!

Your contempt!

Your slandering!

I'll destroy them all!

The match has only just begun!

“The match is over!”

The referee’s resounded voice suddenly splashed a basin of cold water, dousing Feng Yuanlin’s burning rage. He stopped in surprise as he surveyed his surroundings.

He realized that the remaining seven participants had fallen to the ground, with some of them even unconscious!

Moya’s stamp was something Feng Yuanlin could withstand, but the other Bravehearts could not resist it at all. They instantly lost their ability to continue doing battle.

“Fuck, aren’t they just too weak!?”

Feng Yuanlin could not help but curse.

Moya transformed back to a dwarf state and nonchalantly glanced at Feng Yuanlin before leaving.

The free-for-all had ended in an instant, and Moya had no interest in staying even though the human that spoke recklessly had managed to withstand his most ordinary stamp. Feng Yuanlin was unable to give him the slightest desire of fighting.

This was because the opponent was too weak!

The scene Moya left behind while departing was like it was an invincible powerhouse seeking defeat. It looked somewhat lonely, but it was also excellent posturing!

It was a successful act of posturing because the audience had clearly seen Moya's stamp. They had also seen the resulting cracks on the ground, as well as the shocking scene of how the powerful stamp had ended the battle!

“Moya! Moya! Moya!”

The Transcendents went wild as they screamed Moya's name at the top of their lungs!

At this moment, Moya was the center of attention!

As for why the human did not fall down despite the stamping attack, it did not matter. He was just an irrelevant side character!

There was no end to the deafening cheers because the audience could no longer extricate themselves from the magnificence and thrill of that single stamp.

Only after a long time did the cheers fade away, allowing the next free-for-all to continue as per normal.

In the following matches, the eight Transcendent Bravehearts took the stage one after another. For some odd reason, the eight Bravehearts were experts at posturing. They used a variety of

methods of posturing, attracting the wild screams of the audience till they turned hoarse.

A silent Shi Xiaobai had no interest to continue watching the matches any further. Pulp Farmer and company had already taken the stage and they had successfully reached the second round's sixty-four people knockouts. Yet, Shi Xiaobai was not happy at all.

Strength aside, they had lost when it came to posturing. It was an abject defeat!

“Sigh, if it were This King...”

Shi Xiaobai imagined what kinds of posturing he would do if he took the stage.

Shi Xiaobai realized that if he were to take center stage, a simple move would make everyone stand aside.

In terms of posturing, the eight Bravehearts were greatly lacking!

“Unfortunately This King did not participate in it!”

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat regretful that he did not participate in the tournament. If he knew that posturing could redeem themselves as humans, he would have done it without any qualms.

Shi Xiaobai sighed, but he was in no hurry at the moment. There



was still the 64-strong playoffs in the afternoon.

There were no tricks to a duel between two people.

When the time came, Pulp Farmer and company would demonstrate their strength, letting those idiots shut their mouths!

Afternoon, afternoon, please come quickly!

...

# Chapter 353: Shi Xiaobai, I Want To Learn To Posture!

---

After the battle royale ended in the morning, there was only an intervening hour. The 64-strong playoffs ensued in the afternoon.

The enthusiasm among the audience in the afternoon was soaring even higher. One-on-one duels were even more exciting.

During the break, Shi Xiaobai, Pulp Farmer and company convened. Indeed, the trio was furious. Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu had overdone their posturing, making the audience think that they had fixed the match. Feng Yuanlin won without doing a thing and was mocked by the audience as winning while lying down.

The trio found the situation fucked up.

However, after drawing lots during the break to determine the battles, the three immediately felt better. They had pretty good luck.

In the first playoff that reduced 64 people to 32, Pulp Farmer had drawn a lot to fight Siba, who was ranked fifth among the Transcendent Bravehearts. Feng Yuanlin had drawn a lot to fight Mill, who was ranked seventh among the Transcendent Bravehearts.

The other contestants were dreading to meet the eight Bravehearts, but the three of them had encountered two. This was

considered bad luck from a probability point of view, but to them, it was an extremely good thing.

Liu Yu said, “According to This Penniless Priest’s information, only Moya has a special transformation unlike the rest. The other seven Bravehearts are only slightly stronger. With how strong the both of you are, it wouldn’t be a problem winning!”

Pulp Farmer said with a sunken tone, “Winning is not a problem. The problem is that it needs to be beautifully won, won in a manner...”

Before Pulp Farmer finished his sentence, Feng Yuanlin finished his words, “Won in a manner with sufficient posturing! The idiotic audience really maddens me. Other than Moya having a bit of strength, the other seven Bravehearts are just fucking posturing. They didn’t even do a good job, but the audience had orgasmic reactions as though they had eaten aphrodisiacs.”

Pulp Farmer said with a sigh, “Actually, there is no need for us to care about them or what they think. However, there is really no way of swallowing this anger. In the afternoon, I’ll beat that Siba, making all of them shut their mouths.”

Liu Yu said, “Is shutting their mouths enough? This time, I agree with what Feng Yuanlin just said. Not only must we win, we must win with sufficient posturing. The more posturing we do, the more we smack those suckers in the face.”

Feng Yuanlin nodded when he heard this.

Pulp Farmer said with a wry smile, “Sorry, I’m not good at posturing.”

Feng Yuanlin said with a chuckle, “Liu Yu and I aren’t good at posturing either. Power is needed for posturing after all. However, there is a person whose posturing realm is godlike. We can learn from him.”

Pulp Farmer was surprised as he asked in wonderment, “Who?”

Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu simultaneously pointed to a youth who had been silent in the corner all this while.

“Who else?” Feng Yuanlin said with glee, “Boss Shi Xiaobai’s shattering of the diamond monster on the sixth level with that one punch is the best posturing act I’ve ever seen!”

Liu Yu said with a nod, “In terms of posturing, Shi Xiaobai is the only person that can awe This Penniless Priest. Both of you should ask for his advice.”

Shi Xiaobai slowly shook his head and said in all seriousness, “This King isn’t good at posturing either. That punch was purely lucky, and there happened to be a mountain behind it. If it was a diamond mountain, it would probably need two punches.”

Pulp Farmer was not at the sixth level back then, but upon hearing what they said, he could immediately imagine the scene.

In addition to what Shi Xiaobai had said, Pulp Farmer's expression was extremely fascinating.

Pulp Farmer said with great emotions, "Shi Xiaobai, I want to learn to posture!"

...

...

At one in the afternoon, the tournament continued.

The first match was looked forward to by the audience. It was that human that won lying down, Feng Yuanlin, against one of the eight Transcendent Bravehearts, Mill!

Now, the Transcendents had a great aversion to the race known as humans. They felt that such a race was weak and despicable, but they had wicked luck. They did not consider them worthy of becoming glorious Bravehearts or deserving to participate in the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament!

And in this first match, Mill ranked seventh among their glorious eight Bravehearts would give penance to a human. It was something they eagerly looked forward to!

"Mill, all the best. Kill that human!"

“Lord Mill, don’t show mercy!”

“Let that foolish human know that the inborn gap between races is something unbridgeable!”

“ ... ”

As the audience biased themselves in their cheers, the two participants appeared from both sides of the arena.

Mill raised both his hands to greet the audience. He clearly enjoyed the feeling of being in the limelight.

Mill stretched his finger out and said loudly, “One punch. I only need one punch and I’ll send this human scrambling out of Transcendence!”

Mill had begun vaunting himself before the fight even began. Bragging was all a part of posturing, so he did not mind posturing first!

The audience enjoyed this and immediately gave their kudos.

Feng Yuanlin sneered in his heart as he maintained his silence.

Such inferior posturing was extremely ridiculous. It was nothing compared to true posturing.

At the referee's signal, the arena slowly turned silent.

The duel was about to begin.

Mill habitually talked smack. "Human, there's still time to run!"

Feng Yuanlin did not respond as a shield suddenly appeared out of nowhere in his hand.

It was a shield made of bronze and it looked extremely ordinary. There were even patches of rust on it, giving it a worn-out look.

The way the shield appeared was rather fascinating, but its shape was greatly lacking.

Mill said mockingly, "A trickster? Can't you buy a nicer-looking shield? Aren't you humans very rich? I can shatter this crappy shield with a finger!"

However, Feng Yuanlin remained unresponsive. His eyes revealed a silence and seriousness, as though he was a young contestant facing the duel seriously.

Mill felt that he had postured enough verbally, so he did not speak any further. His body suddenly bulged as he turned from a short green-skinned dwarf into a three-meter tall gargantuan!

"Begin!"

Seeing how both sides were ready, the referee signaled by waving his hand down!

The battle officially began as the audience immediately held their breaths as they calmly waited for Mill's performance!

The Transcendent Bravehearts had never let them down, and it would be no different this time!

Mill laughed maniacally as he strode towards Feng Yuanlin!

“Watch me shatter it with a finger prick!”

There was practically not a moment when Mill wasn't posturing!

Feng Yuanlin did not face him head on, nor did he dodge. Instead, he raised his shield and stood in place, like he was a member of a supporting cast!

Mill's three-meter tall body was rippling with firm muscles. His thick arms contained terrifying power, as his finger was nearly the size of a human's fist!

Mill approached and with a loud roar, he stretched out his finger and poked at the shield!

The audience stared with widened eyes, looking forward to the



shocking performance of that simple poke.

“Bang!”

When the thick finger slammed into the worn-out and rusty bronze shield, it let out a dull thud!

The audience focused their eyes and were immediately left appalled. Despite being struck by the power of the finger, the shield did not even crack, much less shatter!

The human was still standing still and remained motionless!

What was going on?

“Impossible!”

Mill stared with widened eyes. How could this shield be so hard?

“Eat my fist!”

Mill reacted very quickly. Although he had failed to posture as the shield was not shattered with a prick from his finger, it did not really matter. He had only been careless!

He used 70% of his strength in his punch. He made sure to shatter the shield and not let the human stand up any further!

Mill gave a thundering roar as he punched out!

Feng Yuanlin held up his shield and remained motionless, as though he was a fool.

“Boom!”

The large and hard fist smashed heavily into the worn-out shield!

# Chapter 354: Shi-Style Posturing Technique

---

Mill's first transformation made him three-meters-tall. His arms were as thick as a tree trunk, and his solid fists looked like a savage hammer. His angry punch would cause winds to howl, nearly to the point of creating a sonic boom.

Feng Yuanlin continued holding up his shield without dodging, as though he was a fool.

“Boom!”

When this punch struck straight into the shield, there was no loss in power. An explosive collision sounded like a gigantic cruiser had hit the rocks. Sound waves blasted like explosives.

The force of this punch was apparent from its sound. The audience pricked up their ears and held their breaths as they stared at the rusty and worn-out shield with widened eyes!

At the instant the hammer-like fist made an impact, it looked like it had been fixed in place.

And the worn-out bronze shield looked as though it had been frozen, remaining in impeccable condition!

Feng Yuanlin's legs only shook gently!

The power of that punch only resulted in this?

The audience let out exclamations of disbelief!

In terms of sound and momentum, this punch did not appear lacking in any way. Mill's slightly red face was extremely real as well. It was impossible for this fist to look impressive but lack real worth!

But how did that worn-out bronze shield perfectly withstand the blow?

How could this shield be so strong?

“Impossible!”

The person who found it most unbelievable was Mill. He refused to believe that 70% of his strength had failed to shatter the worn-out shield. There must have been a trick in this matter!

“Tricks are only a joke in front of absolute power!”

Mill roared ferociously as he immediately punched out again. This time, he used all his strength. The sound and momentum of the punch were boosted once again!

He did not believe that his punch would fail to shatter the worn-out shield!

The Transcendent citizens refused to accept the situation as well, but they had no reason to doubt. They stared at the arena with widened eyes, unwilling to miss the heart-wrenching scene!

Feng Yuanlin, who still had his shield raised up, remained extremely confident. Against Mill's third punch that came seamlessly, he remained motionless like a mountain. The way he held up his shield was like a firm rock!

“Boom!”

The third punch struck the shield!

What was the outcome?

“It still did not break!?” The audience exclaimed!

The worn-out shield managed to withstand three consecutive punches from Mill, who was ranked seventh among the eight Transcendent Bravehearts?

“That human's feet moved slightly.”

A meticulous Transcendent citizen brought attention to this point that was easy to miss.

However, immediately there were indignant citizens who began

sparking a war of words, “So what? Three punches only to make someone move his feet slightly? How can that trash, Mill, be one of the eight Bravehearts? Fuck, it can’t be that the title of the eight Bravehearts is hogwash?”

In any team, race or country, anything could lack except bashers and anti-fans. Bashers who had been lurking but never had a chance to vent their displeasure finally encountered the ushering in of a great opportunity, so how could they miss this opportunity to criticize without needing to pay any responsibility?

“Failing to shatter a crappy shield is putting us Transcendents to shame!”

“I already said that other than Moya, the other seven Bravehearts are hogwash. Mill has let the cat out of the bag!”

“Sigh, if the eight Bravehearts are only this strong, how are we to fight against the Infernal King?”

“...”

The bashers had seized the perfect moment. Most citizens would not choose to remain silent at this moment. Although true fans of Mill refuted, they were clearly being overwhelmed.

The truth was for all to see!

Mill’s three consecutive punches had failed to shatter the worn-

out bronze shield. The excuse that the opponent was too strong or that the shield was extremely strong was something the Transcendent citizens refused to accept. Then, the only explanation was—Mill was crap!

Mill naturally heard the boos ringing as his expression immediately turned as ugly as if he had eaten shit!

“I have to shatter it!”

Mill realized this point. If he failed to shatter the shield, this matter would leave on a lifetime stain on him.

“Well done human. I admit that I have belittled you. You have forced me to turn serious! Just now, I only used 20% of my strength. Now, watch me use 30%!”

Mill pretended that he had yet to use his full strength and continued posturing forcefully. Now, as long as he shattered the shield, he could still save his reputation!

Thankfully, this human continued to not take any action, as though he was waiting for him to continue hitting the shield. This gave Mill a final chance!

“It’s time to crack!” Mill roared angrily as he smashed his fist at the shield!

“Boom!”

In this punch Mill used his full strength and more!

But it was useless. The shield remained indestructible!

Then what else could Mill do?

Another punch!

After striking with a right punch, Mill immediately followed up with a left punch!

“Boom!”

Two punches that were made using his full strength and a little bit more were still unable to shatter the shield. However, the worn-out bronze shield finally revealed a new crack!

There was hope!

“I can shatter it!”

Mill saw hope!

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!



Mill began striking the shield wildly!

One punch, two punches, three punches...

Feng Yuanlin was also extremely accommodating as he continued raising the shield, withstanding the storm-like barrage of punches from Mill.

The audience gradually fell silent, with some of them frightened by the scene.

A frenzied Mill emitted a menacing power, and his storm of fists was astounding!

That worn-out bronze shield finally began to reveal cracks!

Some of the meddling members of the audience had already begun counting the number of Mill's punches loudly.

In the silent arena, other than Mill's angry roars and deafening sounds of the impacts, there were only voices of people counting with others joining into the foray.

“Fifty-six!”

When the number of punches reached fifty-six, a loud crack resounded!

The worn-out bronze shield finally shattered, only after Mill frantically bashed at it for fifty-six times!

“It has shattered, it has shattered. Hahaha!”

Mills laughed in madness as he looked overjoyed. He did not forget to posture by saying, “Not bad, human. You forced This Braveheart to use 60% of his strength. You are worthy of praise!”

This time, the silent arena did not break out into cheers. The Transcendents were all silent. They were no fools after all. There was no way they would believe that Mill’s frantic look was one of him using only 60% of his strength. Mills had probably expended the power for childbirth as well.

At this moment, Feng Yuanlin, who had been like a silent rock, gently patted his palms as he said, “Impressive, the Transcendent Bravehearts indeed live up to their reputation. You are worth making me a bit more serious.”

After Feng Yuanlin said this, he raised his right hand, producing a golden shield that appeared out of nowhere!

It was a perfect and glimmering golden shield that looked extremely hard!

If the worn-out bronze shield was like an old man on his deathbed, the golden shield would be described as a high-spirited youth. The rigidity and the strength were extremely contrasting

from the appearance!

There was an uproar.

Mill's face turned ashen!

The worn-out bronze shield that Mill shattered using fifty-six punches was just a small trick of his opponent's. If by being slightly serious, the golden shield that was conjured was clearly upgraded several levels. How was Mill to shatter it?

“Humans are that powerful?”

Such words came out of the mouths of the Transcendents.

In the audience stands, Shi Xiaobai raised a big thumbs up at Feng Yuanlin with a smile!

Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu were sitting beside him, looking overjoyed, but they were mostly feeling speechless.

Liu Yu said with a sigh, “This kind of posturing repertoire is truly matchless.”

Pulp Farmer's mouth twitched as he said, “Shi Xiaobai, I'm impressed by you this time.”

Feng Yuanlin's actions were naturally taught by Shi Xiaobai. That worn-out bronze shield looked worn-out, but it was, in fact, Feng Yuanlin's strongest technique. If not, how could it have withstood fifty-six punches from Mill?

However, with Shi Xiaobai's teachings, Feng Yuanlin had put on some cosmetics on the shield!

Did you use all your strength to shatter a shield?

Sorry, that's just a worn-out bronze shield!

The perfect golden shield is waiting for you!

In less than a minute, Mill, who no longer had any fighting spirit left, was struck down by Feng Yuanlin's sudden shield bash, ending the match.

From the beginning to the end, Feng Yuanlin did not say many words to posture, but the act of switching the two shields had allowed his posturing to be presented in an extreme manner.

The Transcendents shut their mouths.

However, there were still some who remained stubborn, claiming that humans were not strong but rich, with them possessing powerful treasures.

Regarding this, Shi Xiaobai only sneered.

This was because in a short while, Pulp Farmer, who had learned the Shi-style Posturing Technique, was about to go next!

...

# Chapter 355: Unarmed Combat

---

Posturing required skill, but there was also a need for strength.

If not for Feng Yuanlin's shield being sufficiently hard, allowing him to withstand fifty-six of Mill's punches, everything would only be theory craft.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai was very pleased with Feng Yuanlin's performance and he was actually somewhat surprised.

This youth that looked rather unreliable was rather shocking when he turned serious, especially as a result of the stark contrast he had from his stone-like appearance.

From the looks of it, the top ten rookies in the official forecast were worth their salt. Of course, it definitely had something to do with the seven other Transcendent Bravehearts like Mill not living up to their reputations.

After the battle, Mill's reputation was ruined. In Transcendence, where the strong were considered supreme, it was an indelible stain on him for losing to another race.

And regarding the true strength of the humans as a race, the audience went from contempt to having divided opinions.

A number of Transcendents began believing in the possibility that humans were strong, while the majority of Transcendents

supported another viewpoint—humans were very weak, but very wealthy, allowing them to possess very powerful treasures.

Feng Yuanlin had used his superpower, which should have been considered his own strength, but the Transcendent citizens did not understand such a thing. They only knew that the worn-out bronze shield had an extremely formidable defense. Furthermore, this human had a golden shield as well. From the looks of it, he might be hiding a platinum shield or a diamond shield. The number of treasures humans had was frightening, but the strength of humans remained a mystery.

At this moment of time, no Transcendent believed that the human named Feng Yuanlin had won lying down in the first round from before. By association, the voices that believed Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu had fixed their matches gradually vanished as well.

There were even members of the audience who began looking forward to the second time the humans could clash with the other Bravehearts—Pulp Farmer versus Siba, who was ranked fifth among the Transcendent Bravehearts!

Regardless of race, it was only natural to be exclusive or to show curious ambivalence to something foreign. Towards a completely mysterious race, their instinct to be exclusive caused them to belittle humans. However, once there was something the foreign entity was worth exploring for, their buried curiosity would sprout with no way of curbing it.

As they looked forward to the battle between a human and Siba, the audience lacked interest in the matches that followed. Like a

food chain, Moya was standing at the top of the chain, while the eight Bravehearts were on the second level. The other Bravehearts from the other races were trampled beneath them, without being able to put up any resistance. Moya and the other eight Bravehearts would usually end the battle the moment they appeared.

Only at the twenty-third round of the 64-to-32 playoffs did Pulp Farmer and Siba's battle begin. This unbreakable food chain was finally challenged, its stability at threat. What was the true strength of humans, and where would they be placed in the food chain? Or would they win the battle with some astounding treasure?

But contrary to all expectations, the audience was immediately left extremely surprised when Pulp Farmer appeared. This was because Pulp Farmer had taken off all his armor, appearing only in casual clothing. He did not even hold a single weapon in his hand!

Unarmed combat?

“Is this human crazy?”

The Transcendent citizens were feeling somewhat stupefied and also somewhat incensed. As Transcendents, their biggest advantage came from their natural physique, allowing them to surpass the physiques of other races. And the reason why humans were discriminated against was a result of their greatly inferior physiques.



This human that was proficient at using spears wanted to use his disadvantage to fight the Transcendent Bravehearts in their greatest advantage?

Siba felt insulted as he cursed, “Fool, do you think I’m the same as that trash, Mill? Watch your arrogance and pick up your spear or I will rip your limbs apart, making you regret your stupidity for life!”

Pulp Farmer remained silent with a calm expression. He was composed and turned his body sideways in an unrestrained manner. He reached out his right arm and used his palms to make a curling inward gesture.

The way he looked seemed to indicate that this was nothing, give it your best shot!

Siba turned furious as his body instantly swelled up. He transformed from a short green-skinned dwarf to a three-meter tall gargantuan that was covered in muscles. The first form of the Transcendents was a gift the heavens gave them. It was also the main reason why they enjoyed a sense of superiority over other races!

Siba’s firm muscles were harder than steel, and his power was frightening. In terms of physique, a hundred Pulp Farmers would not have been enough to beat Siba!

However, Pulp Farmer did not reveal any fear. He did not have any plans on using his weapon, as though a melee battle with Siba

was not a problem at all. A mocking smile even suffused across his lips.

With this, not only was Siba feeling humiliated, even the Transcendent citizens could not tolerate it any further.

“Fuck, Siba, flatten the arrogant human!”

“This fool is courting death for him to dare to engage in a melee tussle with us, the Transcendents!”

“Siba, if you lose to this fool in a melee tussle, you might as well commit suicide on the spot!”

“ ... ”

Tempers flared from the audience stands once again. Clearly, Pulp Farmer’s acts had infuriated the Transcendent citizens. In their hearts, the Transcendents were the strongest race, with only the Infernals being able to compete with them. And when it came to melee fights, the Transcendents were invincible!

The human was challenging the honor of their race!

Seeing the situation losing control, the referee gestured for the audience to quieten down with no avail. The referee announced the beginning of the duel amid the din!

“Human, prepare to die!”

Siba was extremely eager to strike. The moment the referee gave the signal, Siba charged at Pulp Farmer like a bull!

The audience was still yelling angrily as they looked forward to Siba ripping the arrogant human to pieces!

Despite the din, one could hear the sound of Siba charging forward. As he trampled across the ground, it was as though a hammer was slamming into a wargong, causing the ground to quake!

Pulp Farmer did not move, but instead, he bent his knees slightly as he clenched his right fist, retracting it towards his chest!

That was a stance of him readying a punch!

Siba laughed from his extreme anger. This human actually wanted to fight him using fists?

“Courting death!” Siba roared angrily and rushed in front of Pulp Farmer. His fist that was thirsting to strike out suddenly slammed forward!

The winds from the punch howled as air crackled, as though the terrifying power was ripping through the void!

At the same time, Pulp Farmer's fist came thrusting forward like a bayonet.

But in that split second, the hand that he was clenched tightly suddenly opened, like a blooming flower bud. His body moved slightly to the side at that moment, while his right foot took a step forward!

An eye-popping scene suddenly happened.

With Pulp Farmer dodging slightly, he easily came beside Siba. He reached out his right hand and grabbed Siba's right elbow, and hooking his right foot around Siba's legs, he used a tiny bit of force!

“Bang!”

Siba instantly lost his balance and crashed to the ground!

At that moment, it was as though the audience had their throats pinched. The invectives they were hurling came to an abrupt halt.

This was because although Siba had fallen to the ground, the battle was not yet over.

Pulp Farmer was using one hand to hold onto Siba's right arm, preventing it from touching the ground!

# Chapter 356: Leonis On The Brink Of Raging

---

The physical strength of Transcendents was indeed terrifying, but having strength did not mean that they were powerful. A simple and nimble dodge by Pulp Farmer, a grab, and a trip, allowed him to cause the large and heavy Siba to fall to the ground.

According to the rules, in order to ensure that the contestants had sufficient stamina, contestants in any battle before the final round would be considered to have been defeated if their four limbs touched the ground, or if they fell out of the arena.

Therefore, by tripping Siba, Pulp Farmer had already won the match.

However, by holding on to Siba's right arm and preventing it from touching the ground, Pulp Farmer's intentions were obvious!

What an arrogant human!

While the Transcendents were reeling in shock, their emotions turned complicated. From time immemorial, it had been the Bravehearts of the Transcendents who held back, but this time, they were being humiliated by another alien race!

Pulp Farmer remained composed as he said unfeelingly, "Aren't you getting up?"

Siba was somewhat stupefied, but when he heard this sentence,

he was immediately incensed. He roared loudly and got up from the ground.

Siba said in fury, “Human, what trick did you use!?”

From Siba’s point of view, whatever that happened in that instant was too strange. All his strength had been easily neutralized, and with a slight use of force from the human, he found himself unable to find his footing.

This was clearly not some physical strength that had caused him to fall, but some weird trick!

Pulp Farmer sneered without a word.

The Transcendents’ physiques were indeed superior to humans, and he was indeed not their match in a simple fight. However, a melee battle was never limited to the clash of punches head on. Fighting skill played an extremely important role as well!

Pulp Farmer remembered that he had said to Shi Xiaobai not long ago, “Shi Xiaobai, I want to learn to posture.”

Shi Xiaobai’s answer was very simple. In a sentence, he said, “Since they think their physique is extraordinary, why don’t you beat them in a melee fight? Use your weakest trait to defeat their strongest!”

Use your weakest trait to defeat their strongest!

This was the best form of posturing!

No, this was no longer posturing, but actual awesomeness!

And Pulp Farmer happened to possess this capability. Most rookies believed that Pulp Farmer was impressive with spears, but they suffered a memory lapse by not remembering a piece of information provided by the official forecast—Pulp Farmer had been a defending champion of the National Secondary School Martial Tournament for three consecutive years!

Therefore, not only was Pulp Farmer proficient with spears, he was actually proficient in a multitude of weapons. His martial arts were amazing!

Pulp Farmer gestured with his right hand again and said with his eyebrows raised, “Shall we continue?”

This provocative stance was taught to him by Shi Xiaobai. However, Pulp Farmer was indeed bad at posturing, so he was rather stiff when doing such an action.

The stiffness of his posturing nearly drove Siba mad!

Siba roared angrily as he charged once again.

The story that happened after this became Siba’s nightmare for

life, and it also subverted all that the Transcendents knew.

They saw Pulp Farmer easily defuse Siba's attack, and with a cool pose, slammed Siba to the ground. He even did an over shoulder throw, and every time Siba fell to the ground, he would hold up Siba's wrist or ankle, preventing all of his limbs from touching the ground.

This was a merciless form of teasing and blatant humiliation. However, the audience could no longer remain angry because all of this already indicated the overwhelming disparity in strength.

At least if one considered the rules, Siba had lost countless times!

Finally, Siba could no longer tolerate the repeated humiliation and ran out of the arena, pretending to have been defeated out of carelessness, ending the heart-wrenching situation that he was powerless at overturning.

Pulp Farmer had used his excellent fighting skills to completely trash Siba, who was ranked fifth among the Transcendent Bravehearts!

This was the might of humans!

The Transcendents had no choice but to admit that in terms of fighting techniques, humans were not to be underestimated.

From their point of view, humans had already proven



themselves. They were a race to be taken seriously.

...

After the battle ended, Pulp Farmer returned to the audience stands, but he did not look very happy.

Feng Yuanlin exclaimed in surprise, “Eh? Why don’t you feel happy at all?”

Pulp Farmer sighed and said, “It wasn’t perfect enough.”

Liu Yu rolled his eyes and said, “Pulp Farmer, you have been corrupted by Shi Xiaobai so quickly. Isn’t that perfect enough? Is there a need to posture any further?”

Pulp Farmer shook his head and said with a heavy tone, “It’s not posturing. Didn’t you notice that there was no way for me to clash head on with the Transcendent Bravehearts? In terms of physical strength, they are on a completely different level than me. If I got hit by his punch, I would have definitely been the one being defeated. Although I managed to trash him with my fighting technique, it’s completely different from what Shi Xiaobai said. I was clearly using my strongest trait to defeat my opponent’s weakest trait.”

With Pulp Farmer saying this, Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu were stunned. That was indeed the case, as they could not help but cast their gazes at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai smiled and said, “It’s already sufficient. There’s no need to posture, just proving that humans are very awesome is good enough.”

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was somewhat disappointed as well. According to the objective, to complete a perfect posturing by ‘using your weakest trait to defeat their strongest’, it needed Pulp Farmer to clash with Siba using his fist, beating him down with a single strike.

But he had been too optimistic. Although Pulp Farmer was a martial arts genius, the physique humans had was indeed too disparate from the Transcendents’. It was already pretty good accomplishing such a feat.

Shi Xiaobai did not reveal his disappointment but gave a word of encouragement, “Continue working hard. If you are able to really defeat Moya, that would be true awesomeness.”

Shi Xiaobai was cognizant of his body increasing rapidly in strength as it constantly absorbed the energies of the holy tree’s fruit. He could not help but feel a sense of anticipation.

After he completely absorbed the holy tree’s fruit, how strong would his physique be?

Was it strong enough to physically repress the Transcendent Bravehearts?

...

The tournament continued on. The only person to challenge the defending champion, Leonis, had to be determined out of the sixty-four Bravehearts by the afternoon. As such, the tournament battles happened in close succession.

Thankfully, the method to determine victory was simple and crude. Therefore, every match did not take long to end.

Pulp Farmer and company had become the focus of attention. They demonstrated their redoubtable strength against other races in a way no different from fighting the Transcendent Bravehearts. Even when they encountered the other Transcendent Bravehearts other than Moya, they were still able to easily defeat them.

The audience was completely disappointed in the eight Bravehearts, but they were filled with confidence when it came to Moya. They looked forward to seeing the outcome when any of the three humans encountered Moya.

However, Pulp Farmer and company had pretty good luck. They did not encounter Moya up to the final eight.

And during this period of time, Pulp Farmer eliminated two of the eight Bravehearts, Feng Yuanlin eliminated one, while Liu Yu eliminated one during the 16th-finals. One of the other Bravehearts was ruthlessly eliminated by Moya.

Hence, when the tournament reached the final eight, there were only three Bravehearts out of eight, including Moya.

This was something unthinkable in previous years.

The Transcendents who witnessed this with their own eyes began doubting if their Bravehearts had the ability to fight the armies of the Infernal King.

And just as the intense quarterfinal battles were about to begin,

Leonis, who should have appeared only tomorrow, suddenly appeared in the arena.

At that moment, the audience shut their mouths.

This was because everyone could clearly sense a formidable fury from him!

It was a rage that made him seem like he wanted to annihilate everything in front of him!

After Leonis came to the arena, his eyes swept across every member of the audience in the audience stands. He twitched his nose, as though he was trying to catch the scent of something. Suddenly, his eyes fixated on a spot around Shi Xiaobai, Pulp Farmer, and company.

The eyes that looked like they were about to devour a person made him seem like a raging wild beast!

...

# Chapter 357: Moya's Rage

---

Why was Leonis so angry? Naturally, it was because the fruit of the Transcendence Holy Tree had been stolen by someone. However, Leonis could not find the thief and he did not even have a single clue.

The four guards that had failed in their duty had already been ripped to pieces by a raging Leonis. He had searched the entire city with no avail.

Now, he came to the tournament's arena, hoping that he had a sliver of hope. Or maybe it was just a struggle of indignation.

However, Leonis did not have any psychic powers. He was unable to use his naked eyes to tell which bastard in the audience that numbered in the thousands had stolen the fruit. It was even possible that it had been swallowed into the person's belly.

When he came to the stadium, an imperial guard had informed him of the situation at the tournament. The imperial guard trembled as he mentioned how Pulp Farmer and company had eliminated four of the Transcendent Bravehearts to Leonis.

The Transcendents noticed Leonis' ugly expression and believed that it was a result of the poor performance of the Transcendent Bravehearts. But in fact, Leonis could not be any happier regarding this matter. After all, he was already aware that Moya and the other Bravehearts would mutiny at the tournament tomorrow. He was eager for the eight Bravehearts to lose all their reputation.

However, Leonis was somewhat curious over the mysterious race called 'humans' his imperial guard told him about.

How would the sudden appearance of such a powerful race effect change to the present world?

The imperial guard pointed in the direction of Shi Xiaobai and company. As Leonis looked over, his eyes looked like a ferocious tiger, mainly because of the anger that resulted from the theft of the fruit.

The Transcendents fell silent and did not dare to make a sound. They had long heard of Leonis's violent temper and ruthless character when it came to slaughtering.

The four Transcendent Bravehearts that had been eliminated deeply bowed their heads and hid the fear and loathing in their eyes. A wretched bastard child should have never become their king, but Leonis's might allowed him to crush all dissent. If Leonis wanted them dead, no one would dare to voice their opposition.

"Humans, welcome to Transcendence. It appears that all of you have temporarily achieved good results, so continue working hard."

Leonis faced Shi Xiaobai and company and said with an overbearing voice that sounded like thunder. Although his words were polite, it was impossible to disguise the anger in his words.

However, Leonis was naturally hoping that these humans would be able to defeat the Transcendent Bravehearts, even better if they could defeat Moya.

However, Leonis knew that it was very unlikely. Moya's strength had once shocked Leonis. If not for him eating the holy tree's fruit, Moya would have been a king that could not be overthrown by the Transcendents for a hundred years. His strength far exceeded that of the other Transcendents.

However, there were no ifs in this world. His existence left Moya no choice but to swallow his ambition.

However, a proud existence like Moya finally could not tolerate being trampled by someone else.

Tomorrow, Moya is planning on going for broke and make a reckless move?

Leonis sneered as he announced to everyone with a deep voice, "The performance of the four Bravehearts today has disappointed everyone present, as well as This King. The four of the eight Transcendent Bravehearts will have their status as Bravehearts revoked. In addition, for the following quarter and semifinals, as well as the final match to determine the challenger, any Transcendent Braveheart that loses to another race, will have their status as Bravehearts revoked! The race of the Transcendents is the strongest race. This King knew this from a very young age. Then, why can the strongest race lose to another race? Is our mentality



wrong? Or is it that the so-called Bravehearts are just too disappointing?”

The racial discrimination the Transcendents had were deeply rooted. As a hybrid of the Transcendents and the lion-headed species, Leonis had been humiliated from a young age. Everyone could tell the mockery in his words, but it was a fact that the Transcendent Bravehearts had lost to Bravehearts from another race. Therefore, no one could retort in any way.

Then, between the two reasons for the failure being ‘the race of the Transcendents is not the strongest race’ or ‘the eight Bravehearts are too disappointing’, no Transcendent would be foolish enough to choose the former. As such, the outcome was fixed. The four Bravehearts, like Mill and Siba, who were defeated by humans were no longer Bravehearts from that moment!

Moya’s eyes flickered a cold beam, but he eventually managed to maintain his silence.

The four Bravehearts including Mill and Siba clenched their fists, but they did not dare to utter a word of disagreement.

Leonis was very pleased with such a situation. This made him feel slightly better as he said, “Then, let the tournament proceed. I hope the remaining Transcendent Bravehearts will not disappoint us any further!”

...

...

Pulp Farmer and company, Moya and two Transcendent Bravehearts, as well as a lion-headed man and a leopard-headed man, were the eight finalists.

Pulp Farmer and company had pretty good luck, with none of them facing Moya in the quarterfinals. Moya was matched with the lion-headed man.

Feng Yuanlin was lucky to draw a lot to battle the leopard-headed man, while Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu each drew the lots of the remaining two Transcendent Bravehearts.

The focus of the eight finalists was still on the humans against the Transcendent Bravehearts.

But this time, it was different. The atmosphere was evidently much heavier. The remaining two Transcendent Bravehearts appeared as though they were going to risk their lives in battle.

Leonis's arrival and speech made the battle no longer simple. Failure meant the revoking of their status as Bravehearts. The remaining two Transcendent Bravehearts did not dare to slack at all.

However, the battles were destined to end in tragedy for the two Transcendent Bravehearts because their opponents were none other than Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu. And as the tournament's rule

was not an all-out fight, defeat would happen if they fell to the ground or fell out of the arena.

Hence, although the two Transcendent Bravehearts went all out, Pulp Farmer and Liu Yu's superb fighting techniques that were impossible for the Transcendent Bravehearts to understand caught them in a situation where they were unable to use the full brunt of their force.

The two Transcendent Bravehearts were defeated in a such a humbling manner that the audience sympathized with them.

However, the ruthless King Leonis did not have a shred of compassion. He immediately announced that both the Transcendent Bravehearts would be dismissed from their positions as Bravehearts!

After that, Feng Yuanlin easily defeated the leopard-headed man, while Moya trashed the lion-headed man.

It was worth mentioning that when Moya faced the lion-headed man, he said a sentence before the battle began, "The race of the Transcendents is the greatest race. The lowly lion-headed species is forever destined to be the lowliest existence."

This sentence seemed like a provocation on the lion-headed man, but what he was pertaining to was obvious to the audience. At that moment, everyone could sense the repressed anger and discontent from Moya.

Six of the eight Bravehearts were dismissed. Although this was a result of them being defeated by humans, it was closely related to Leonis's overbearing attitude.

This sentence was Moya's expression of his dissatisfaction and insubordination towards Leonis!

The lion-headed man was exceptionally angry, but his outcome was terrible. Moya gave him a ruthless punch, striking him unconscious as he spewed blood.

Leonis's eyes were cold, but he did not rage on the spot.

Moya smiled coldly and said, "Transcendents are the strongest race. Humans aren't much, and I will prove this point."

When the audience heard this, they came to a realization that the final four had been selected. This year's four finalists were Moya and the three humans?

...

# Chapter 358: Erroneous Plot

---

Before the semifinals

Pulp Farmer and company had successfully reached the semifinals. Out of the four Bravehearts remaining in the semifinals, three of them were human. This meant that regardless of the outcome, a human would reach the finals and this was clearly quite an impressive result. However, none of the three looked particularly jubilant. Instead, it appeared as if something was weighing their hearts down.

Shi Xiaobai asked curiously, “Why do all of you look so nervous?”

Liu Yu sighed and said, “It seems like our plot has turned erroneous. According to experience of previous trial-takers, Leonis would not appear today, much less forcefully revoking the status of the eight Bravehearts. It is not the first time we have three trial-takers entering the semifinals either. After all, other than Moya, the rest of the eight Bravehearts aren’t particularly strong. However, the plot that is presently happening is one that has never appeared before.”

Pulp Farmer said with a heavy tone, “I knew I had the strength to enter the seventh level, so I had repeatedly studied the plot of the seventh level and browsed through many articles on the Internet. I’m very certain that the plot with Leonis’s sudden appearance as well as the loss of decorum with the eight Bravehearts has never happened before. We might have unknowingly done something that was never done by the other trial-takers in the past, resulting in the plot to develop into something we have never seen before.

The plot that follows might result in quite a startling change.”

Feng Yuanlin said with a frown, “Strange, the three of us did not leave our residence after we came to Transcendence. As for posturing and smacking faces on the tournament, we are definitely not the first to do so. We are definitely not the ones that did it the best either. What could we have unknowingly done that resulted in the plot making such an unexpected turn?”

When Shi Xiaobai heard the trio’s words, he was initially confused, but after a thump in his heart, he immediately understood the confusion Pulp Farmer and company had.

The three of them had not done anything that would change the plot, but Shi Xiaobai had done so. He had secretly eaten the Transcendence Holy Tree’s fragrant fruit. It was definitely not an ordinary fruit, so the change in Leonis’s behavior and the plot was very likely a result of the fruit.

Shi Xiaobai coughed slightly and feeling guilty conscious, he asked, “The change in the plot would have little impact, right? The final goal should still be defeating Moya and then beating Leonis.”

Liu Yu shook his head and said, “No, the impact is huge. Moya’s strength is actually very exaggerated, but he has contempt for other races, so not taking his opponent seriously is his greatest weakness. Historically, the five trial-takers who defeated Moya had only done so with absolute strength. The other three had managed to make use of Moya’s belittlement of his opponent, defeating him before he transformed into his second or third form. Therefore, most strategies that have to do with the seventh level would focus

on Moya's tendency to take his opponent lightly when they introduce him. In fact, This Penniless Priest had already designed a plan on how to maximize Moya's tendency. But now, Moya has been enraged by Leonis. He might begin the battle in a serious state, and this means that the difficulty will increase by several orders of magnitude."

Shi Xiaobai was slightly alarmed as he said, "The green-skinned dwarf is that strong?"

Pulp Farmer said with a heavy voice, "Leonis's strength has been tweaked upwards, and as Leonis's opposing force, Moya's strength has been tweaked upwards as well. He should be roughly on par with a Level Lord. This is why only four humans have ever cleared the seventh level. Even by the simplest means of clearing the level it is already extremely difficult to obtain the right to challenge Leonis. And what's even more despairing is that the strength of Leonis far exceeds Moya. However, since we have come to this point, we have to try our best regardless of how it is."

Liu Yu said gravely and earnestly, "The rule of the finals is to fight till one side loses the ability to continue fighting. As for the Transcendents, their physiques are considered exceptional. Trying to completely defeat them is nearly impossible, so now, the semifinals is the last chance we have. We need to think of a way to make Moya fall to the ground and leave the arena. That is the only thing we can do."

Feng Yuanlin said in a reflective manner, "The drawing of lots for the semifinals is of utmost importance, but why do I feel like I don't wish that it would be me. Against an enraged Moya, I'm

afraid of being abused.”

The trio clearly understood the seventh level very well, so they had an objective understanding of Moya’s strength. There was more or less a tone of fear in their words, as though they were about to face an opponent they had little hope of defeating.

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. Although he did not understand how powerful Moya was, to be in such an apprehensive state was definitely taboo in any competition.

Shi Xiaobai said seriously, “Do not focus too much on the outcome. Regardless of the opponent or how strong he is, it is sufficient as long as you do your best, working hard to exceed your own limits.”

This has always been Shi Xiaobai’s *modus operandi*. Regardless of the opponent, unless it was an opponent he had to defeat, he would always put aside the outcome, and make exceeding himself the goal.

This kind of thinking could be said to be a chicken soup for the soul, but people who were able to accomplish such a state of ignoring the outcomes were rare.

The trio nodded to express their understanding, but it was unknown if they put it to heart.

Soon, the break time was over, and the outcome of the random



draw was out.

The first round of the semifinals was Feng Yuanlin against Moya!

...

...

In the stadium, Leonis was still sitting on the seat of the defending champion. He looked cold, and it was impossible to know what he was thinking.

The audience was eagerly waiting for the result. For there to be three humans and one of the eight Bravehearts left in the semifinals, this was something that was nearly impossible in previous tournaments. Furthermore, Leonis's declaration from before had pushed this matter to the peak of the conflict.

The Transcendents considered themselves the strongest race, but their Bravehearts had lost to a mysterious race they had never heard of. Didn't this mean that there was a "heaven beyond a heaven", and that the Transcendents were in fact not the most powerful race in the world?

Such an opinion was in direct conflict with the Transcendents' racial discrimination. In recent times, Leonis had revealed his intentions of eliminating racial discrimination, and this matter happened to give him brand new ammunition.

But in the minds of the Transcendents, a majority of them refused to accept that all was equal because their inherent concept of racial superiority was deeply rooted. It was just like a scion who was born with a silver spoon who would find it unacceptable if he had to suddenly lead the life of a commoner.

If not for Leonis being so powerful that left them in awe, there would have been a denouncing din.

However they did not dare to make a sound, afraid of incurring the wrath of Leonis.

Therefore, at this moment, there was only one person who could cry out what was in their hearts—The Transcendents have to be the strongest race in the world!

This person was none other than Moya!

“Moya has never disappointed us. He definitely will not do so this time!”

This was the inner voice within the Transcendents.

# Chapter 359: Humans Are Just This And Nothing More!

---

When Moya appeared, the cheers were deafening. It was nearly the highest form of treatment. It was apparent what status Moya enjoyed in the minds of the people. A cold beam flickered in Leonis's eyes. Such exaltation was something that he as a 'hybrid' had never experienced, even though he was sitting on the throne and known as the king of the country.

Moya walked into the arena with an extremely serious expression. Clearly, he was fully aware of the present situation he was in. Defeat meant being utterly discredited with his status as Braveheart revoked. All his ambitions would be ripped out to feed the dogs.

But if he were to succeed in defeating the humans, he would be able to prove the might of the Transcendents to the citizens once again. He would be labeled a national hero, then his reputation would reach unprecedented heights!

Therefore, regardless of his opponent, even if it were an ant, he would not underestimate them. He would face them in all seriousness so as to ensure absolute victory!

In front of Moya's cold gaze, Feng Yuanlin walked out from the other side of the stadium.

Moya said coldly, "Human, use your full strength or you will no doubt be defeated."

Moya's smack talk was immediately met with screams from the audience.

Feng Yuanlin definitely did not want to show a sign of weakness as he said with a sneer, "No offense, but you aren't enough to let me use my full strength!"

Who didn't know how to say something nasty?

However, just as Feng Yuanlin's words faded, the audience immediately booed at him.

This time, even the Transcendent bashers were standing on Moya's side. Bashers would disparage a person out of jealousy, but when faced with matters pertaining to their race's superiority, they would also have a so-called collective sense of honor.

The difference of a home ground would sometimes affect the contestants at times. Feng Yuanlin's expression turned slightly uglier.

At this moment, the referee gestured for the two to be ready as the duel was about to begin.

Moya sneered as his body suddenly swelled. He transformed from a short green-skinned dwarf into a three-meter-tall green-skinned gargantuan which was covered in muscles.

The first form of the Transcendents!

The Transcendents immediately cheered!

However, this was not even Moya's final form. The three-meter-tall Moya suddenly shrunk in size, reducing to about two meters in height. Furthermore, his muscles were also gradually vanishing, turning into smooth skin. The green skin gradually turned dark, finally becoming a dark green color that shimmered with a thin metallic luster!

“This is...”

“The second form!”

The Transcendents exclaimed aloud!

There were only a handful of Transcendents throughout history that could attain the second form. At least, Moya was the only person among the eight Bravehearts that could attain the second form. The second form was not just a difference in level from the first form, but a quantum leap that differed by several times!

Moya was using the second form from the very beginning!

Clearly, Moya did not plan for there to be any accidents in this duel!

Feng Yuanlin's face turned ashen.

At this moment, the referee announced the commencement of the battle!

Moya cracked his neck as he advanced towards Feng Yuanlin.

“Human, raise your shield!”

Moya's voice was colder than ice and snow.

Feng Yuanlin took a deep breath and calmed himself down. Now was not the moment to fear the enemy!

Feng Yuanlin raised his right hand as a golden shield appeared out of nowhere in his right hand. Feng Yuanlin said angrily, “Bastard, try shattering it in one punch if you dare!”

Just as Feng Yuanlin's words faded, Moya's arm had already stretched out!

It was a dark green hand and it had only held out an index finger that resembled a metallic pole!

The index finger slowly approached the golden shield before suddenly accelerating, thrusting straight at the shield like a spear!

“Clang!”

Moya’s index finger had stabbed the golden shield like a spear!

Feng Yuanlin sneered. Although he did not have the confidence in defeating Moya, he was very confident of his defensive strength. Trying to shatter his strongest shield with a finger prick?

“Dream on!”

Feng Yuanlin roared angrily as he raised the shield, in the hopes of launching a counter attack!

“Kacha!”

But at this moment, a shattering sound echoed.

Feng Yuanlin lowered his head in disbelief and saw a crack creeping across the golden shield and at that instant, it had shattered!

Moya had used only a finger to prick his strongest shield?

The Transcendents were astounded by this scene!

Mill had used fifty-six punches to crack a worn-out bronze shield, but Moya had used a finger to prick through a golden shield that

looked extremely solid?

“Moya! Moya! Moya!”

Moya’s name resounded in the stadium!

However, Moya apparently did not plan on holding back. He wanted to ensure that nothing unexpected would happen in the duel. Therefore, his finger had already thrust straight at Feng Yuanlin!

Feng Yuanlin snapped out of wallowing in his defeat. Immediately, he raised both of his arms as a gigantic silver shield appeared out of nowhere and protected him!

However, the outcome that left no suspense was already determined. The silver shield was instantly poked through by that finger!

Feng Yuanlin retreated hastily as the shield shattered. Even though the chances of victory were slim, he could not throw in the towel and would instead put up a stubborn fight!

However, Moya was determined not to give Feng Yuanlin any chances. Like a beast, he charged straight at Feng Yuanlin and used the simplest and crudest way to clinch victory!

Moya’s speed was astonishingly fast, so Feng Yuanlin naturally could not open up a gap!



Seeing the gleaming dark-green finger thrusting towards him like a spear, Feng Yuanlin clenched his fists and raised both his arms. Three golden shields appeared in an overlapped fashion in front of him!

This was his ace in the hole!

“Kacha!”

“Kacha!”

“Kacha!”

After three cracking sounds resounded, without any break in between, Moya’s fingers penetrated through three golden shields in a relentless manner!

How terrifying was his power?

How hard was his finger?

“Boom!”

Moya did not give Feng Yuanlin any chance. After penetrating three golden shields, his finger curled back into a fist as a terrifying wind that accompanied his fist sent Feng Yuanlin, who was struggling in retreat, to the ground!

“The battle is over, Moya wins!”

The referee was reeling in shock but he instinctively announced the outcome of the match!

This battle was a steamroll in every sense of the word!

From the beginning to the end, Feng Yuanlin did not even have an opportunity for respite. Furthermore, Moya had only used a finger to complete a ruthless steamroll!

The Transcendents knew that Moya was strong, but they never expected the battle would end without any suspense.

Then, what did this mean?

“Humans are just this and nothing more!”

Moya looked up and shouted to the audience, “Humans are just this and nothing more! We, the Transcendents, are the most powerful race in the world!”

At that moment, the Transcendents had hot tears streaming down their cheeks. It was unknown who was the instigator as a deafening slogan was repeated!

“Humans are just this and nothing more!”

“Humans are just this and nothing more!

“Humans...are just this and nothing more!”

# Chapter 360: You Have Successfully Infuriated This King

---

Humans are just this and nothing more!

Moya had used his own strength to end the battle quickly with him steamrolling his opponent. It was to prove this point to the Transcendent commoners! His popularity reached its peak at that moment.

In the audience stands, Shi Xiaobai and company's expressions immediately turned ashen.

In the mankind's history of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, the number of trial-takers that were able to force Moya into his second form was small to begin with. And the number who could defeat Moya could be counted with one hand. Therefore, it was not surprising that Feng Yuanlin would be defeated by Moya, who had used his second form immediately.

However, Moya's words had infuriated them.

Humans are just this and nothing more?

What a joke! There were numerous mighty human figures. Any paragon would easily steamroll Moya and Leonis!

But such discourse sounded lacking in strength. This was because

in the trial, they were the only humans. In Transcendence, they were indeed representing all of mankind.

Pulp Farmer looked at Liu Yu and said with a heavy voice, “Can you give me this opportunity?”

Liu Yu fell silent for a few moments before nodding his head seriously. “Alright!”

What opportunity?

During the second round during the semi-finals, Liu Yu chose to throw in the towel.

Pulp Farmer and Moya would meet in the qualifying finals!

...

Without waiting for too long, or it could be said that Pulp Farmer and Moya did not wish to waste any time waiting. They both had their own reasons for them to be eager to begin the battle.

As such, the finals officially began a minute after the end of the semi-finals.

The qualifying final match and the challenge against the champion was always the two most anticipated battles in the tournament. Unlike the other qualifying matches, the result of the

finals was determined if one side lost the ability to continue fighting or if they threw in the towel. The intensity and brutal nature of the match was something incomparable to the other qualifying matches.

The Transcendents looked forward to the beginning of the battle, and in the qualifying matches, Pulp Farmer had stood out from the three human participants. His incredible fighting techniques left people in awe.

However, this time, Pulp Farmer was holding a silver spear. It appeared as though he was planning on using his spear techniques to fight Moya.

When the referee gestured for both parties to get ready, Moya transformed once again. Just like when he faced Feng Yuanlin, Moya began in his second form from the beginning!

Moya said with a sneer, “I will let everyone see that there is an unbridgeable gap between humans and Transcendents from birth!”

Pulp Farmer had a cold expression and did not respond to Moya’s nonsense. When the referee announced the beginning of the match, Pulp Farmer had already rushed forward with spear in hand!

Pulp Farmer’s eyes were ice-cold. As he ran, he thrust the spear in his hand at Moya!

“Tyrant Spear!”

Pulp Farmer was majestic and had an imposing aura. As he thrust out, it was as though space was torn apart. Sunlight was distorted by the pierce as a gigantic spear image appeared, engulfing Moya like a gloomy cloud!

The terrifying scene caused the audience to exclaim aloud!

“Tricks!”

Moya sneered. Against the imposing strike, he did not dodge it. Instead, he lifted his chest to clash with the spear!

Was Moya mad?

Obviously not!

“Clang!”

A deafening metallic sound echoed. When Pulp Farmer’s spear tip stabbed into Moya’s chest, it came to an abrupt halt. The gigantic phantom spear dissipated!

The dark-green skin around Moya’s chest suffused a metallic luster. It was unscathed by the stab of the spear!

How terrifying was his physical defense?

Pulp Farmer's expression changed slightly as he retreated in a hurry so as to open up a distance.

This time, not only did Moya want to win, he wanted to win with sufficient posturing. He did not chase but instead stood in his spot. His composed appearance was as if he was waiting for Pulp Farmer to attack another time.

Moya's tendency to treat his opponent lightly had emerged again at this moment!

Pulp Farmer sneered. He raised his spear and bending his back with his right knee up, in a majestic pose, a domineering aura slowly stirred as though he was accumulating strength.

“Humans are much stronger than you can imagine.”

Pulp Farmer took a deep breath. He retracted his right arm and began gathering strength. A domineering aura surged as the light around him began distorting.

The audience held their breaths. This strike already appeared extremely powerful before it was even unleashed. This was probably the strongest attack the human had.

“Take on this strike of mine!”



Pulp Farmer angrily roared. The strike he had gathered strength for a long time finally thrust forward!

A cold beam first burst forward as a dragon-like spear accompanied it from behind!

When the spear thrust out, a gigantic phantom image of a dragon dashed straight at Moya!

The dragon roared while the world changed colors!

The audience stared confounded. Seeing the gigantic dragon phantom, they suddenly had the feeling of worshiping it!

However, Moya still did not bat an eyelid while facing this gigantic dragon phantom. He only raised his right arm!

“Boom!”

Moya’s right hand suddenly gripped!

The gigantic dragon phantom instantly dissipated!

The silver spear’s tip was grabbed by Moya!

“Look human. This is the gap between races!”

Moya sneered and suddenly jerked his right hand!

“Kacha! Kacha! Kacha!”

Cracking sounds were heard in succession as the spear in Pulp Farmer’s hands began to crack, like a glass shattering!

At that moment, there was complete silence, only the sound of the spear shattering was left!

This was Moya!

This was the Transcendents!

His terrifying physique allowed Moya to be unafraid of using his bare chest to take on Pulp Farmer’s spear. He used his bare hands to shatter the powerful spear dragon’s phantom image!

“The race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world! Humans are just this and nothing more!”

Moya shouted loudly!

The spear was broken apart but the ignited fury Pulp Farmer was experiencing did not cease. He had requested Liu Yu for an opportunity, so he could not let it go to waste!

Pulp Farmer took a step forward and punched at Moya!

Moya gave a mocking smile and similarly smashed his fist towards Pulp Farmer's fist!

When the fist collided with another fist, the sound of bones cracking was suddenly heard!

“Boom!”

Pulp Farmer was instantly sent flying as he flipped several times in mid-air. He flew out like a missile and slammed into the wall of the stadium before coming to a stop!

A loud crack echoed. The wall was filled with cracks as Pulp Farmer spewed blood from his mouth and slumped to the ground. His right arm was completely twisted. Clearly, the bones in his right arm had been severely fractured!

As for Moya, he was standing in his original spot. He slowly retracted his fist as though he had done something trivial.

A clash of fists and Pulp Farmer was completely defeated!

However, Pulp Farmer did not collapse. As blood gushed out from his mouth, he used his left hand to prop his upper body up. It was obvious how severely injured he was based on his extremely

pale face. He no longer had the ability to continue fighting!

This was a steamroll!

It was a steamroll that belonged to the Transcendents!

Moya lifted his arms high and said loudly, “Humans are just this and nothing more! Their naturally frail physique doom them to be a weak race! As for us, the Transcendents, we were born with powerful bodies, enough for us to become the strongest race in the world! Humans are not worth mentioning in front of the Transcendents!”

Moya’s declaration made the audience who held their breaths finally had a chance to erupt into the most passionate cheers!

“Moya! Moya! Moya!”

At that moment, Moya was the center of attention!

“Then, let me end this boring battle!”

Moya sneered. Suddenly, like a beast, he charged at Pulp Farmer, who was limp on the ground. His speed was astonishing fast. His eyes flickered with cold light as he suddenly kicked out towards Pulp Farmer like a spear!

The power of this kick exceeded Pulp Farmer’s dragon phantom

spear attack!

Winning this battle only required him to knock his opponent unconscious, but Moya's kick was clearly far more than that!

If this kick were to hit the severely injured Pulp Farmer directly, it would probably take his life!

“Go to hell, human!”

This human named Pulp Farmer had eliminated three of the eight Bravehearts. He had committed a hideous crime deserving the harshest punishment!

“Bang!”

A colliding sound resounded!

Moya's expression changed slightly. His kick had not hit Pulp Farmer, but instead felt like it had kicked into an iron plate. What was going on?

“Ah?”

The audience exclaimed!

It was unknown when a black-haired youth appeared in front of

Pulp Farmer.

The black-haired youth was grabbing Moya's foot with one hand, stopping Moya's kick!

On a closer look, there appeared to be a thin layer of a silver halo over the black-haired youth's hair. It was as though his black hair was about to turn silvery-white.

“You have succeeded in infuriating This King!”

...

# Chapter 361: The Physique Of Humans Is Bad?

---

“You have succeeded in infuriating This King!”

Moya’s kick with murderous intent had completely infuriated Shi Xiaobai.

The flames of anger nearly consumed Shi Xiaobai’s mind instantly, but a cool sensation suddenly infused into his mind that pervaded his body. Like cold water that doused him, it snapped Shi Xiaobai out of his impending rage.

His mind resounded with the exhortation from Kali before she left—Do not get angry easily!

The silvery-white luster above his head suddenly dissipated. However, a third of his black hair had turned silvery-white. His black-and-white mop of hair looked somewhat strange, but it gave him a mysterious and sinister air.

Shi Xiaobai felt a bloodlust that he found difficult to suppress rise up in him, but he was still able to contain his thoughts. And furthermore, he could intuitively sense that his body was filled with power!

Power!

Endless power seemed to surge through his body as it raised. It was as though it were flowing through him like blood, pulsing through his veins in a rhythm!

Shi Xiaobai had grabbed Moya's flying right kick with one hand. This caused all the audience to be shocked by the sudden appearance of the youth. This human was able to use his bare hand to withstand Moya's kick that possessed such terrifying power?

Moya was also extremely astonished, but he was even more incensed when he heard Shi Xiaobai's words.

"Foolish human, you are courting death!"

Moya's right foot was held, so he bent his left foot and like a missile's blast, he thrust it at Shi Xiaobai's head like a spear!

"Bang!"

A stifling impact sounded as the audience gasped!

They saw Shi Xiaobai use his left hand to grab the foot once again!

What was going on?

Was this human's hands made of steel?



At this moment in time, Shi Xiaobai was holding one of Moya's feet in each hand as he lifted Moya entirely!

Shi Xiaobai sneered and suddenly turned his feet and began spinning!

Moya, who was being suspended in mid-air, could only spin around with Shi Xiaobai. He felt alarmed as he realized that despite him using all his strength in his feet, the human appeared unaffected?

The audience was watching in a flabbergasted state. The seemingly invincible Moya from a moment ago was being suspended in mid-air by a human, spinning without any qualms?

“Scram!”

Shi Xiaobai roared angrily and stopped spinning. As though he was throwing a shot put, Shi Xiaobai threw Moya's entire person out!

After spinning so many rounds, the centrifugal force was immense. Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai currently had endless power in him. This throw was like the launch of a rocket. Moya's entire being flew out into the distance like a rocket!

“Boom!”

Moya flew several hundred meters in the sky before slamming

into the other side of the stadium wall. Immediately a deafening crash resounded.

The sound of rubble falling to the ground was heard immediately after this. A hole in the wall had been produced. The falling rubble had instantly buried Moya! The power of this throw was obvious!

There was immediate silence.

Leonis's pupils constricted slightly as he watched in disbelief of the scene in front of him.

Moya was defeated just like that?

“Impossible!”

As though it was in response to that spectator's cry, the rubble suddenly blasted outwards as a figure charged out of it like a raging tiger!

Moya obviously would not be defeated so easily. There was not even the slightest of wounds on his dark-green skin!

The Transcendents indeed had extraordinary physical strength!

Moya's eyes were burning with rage. The youth with black-and-white hair had caused him to end up in such a miserable state. He wanted the youth to die a horrible death!

Moya dashed forward at an alarming speed. In a few seconds, he traversed a distance of several hundred meters and appeared in front of Shi Xiaobai!

He had already gathered strength in his fist. Without stopping, he smashed his fist at Shi Xiaobai like a hammer!

“Go to hell, human!”

Moya let out a ferocious roar. His fist could shatter everything!

The audience jumped in fright at Moya’s crazy stance and terrifying punch, but even more astonishing was how the youth that stood in front of Pulp Farmer remained motionless, as though he was scared silly!

“Quickly dodge!”

Pulp Farmer hurriedly alerted Shi Xiaobai. At this moment, he had already struggled to climb up from the ground, but his body was so weak that he found it difficult to move. He knew deeply of the terror of Moya’s punch. His bones that were nearly completely fractured were the best proof of that.

Moya, in his second form, had fists harder than diamond. His strength was also exaggerated. With a human’s physique, it was impossible to withstand such a punch!

This was Moya's understanding, the Transcendents' understanding, as well as what Pulp Farmer currently knew!

However, this was not Shi Xiaobai's understanding!

The physique of humans could not match a Transcendent at the second form?

Of course not!

Shi Xiaobai sneered as he punched his clenched right fist at Moya's fist!

Again, it was a fist against fist. The outcome was revealed previously with Pulp Farmer, as Moya gave a ferocious grin. This arrogant human was courting death!

The Transcendents were also relieved. This human who did not participate in the tournament for some reason was indeed very powerful, but he was not smart. He wanted to engage in a fist against fist battle with Moya in his second form? You really have no idea of death!

Pulp Farmer sighed as well. He took a step forward with his teeth clenched while walking towards Shi Xiaobai's back in great difficulty. Shi Xiaobai had suddenly appeared to save him. If Shi Xiaobai was sent flying from that punch, he would use his body to break his fall!

At this moment, no one believed that Shi Xiaobai could withstand that punch!

Shi Xiaobai did not believe that he would clash head on with that fist because—

“Scram for This King once again!”

Shi Xiaobai angrily laughed!

“Boom!”

A large and small figure, with punches both possessing overbearing power met each other, as though two mountains were colliding!

All the Transcendents watched with bated breaths. They were waiting for the youth to be sent flying!

Moya was waiting as well, waiting for the reckless youth to scream out tragically!

Suddenly, Moya was shocked to discover that everything did not appear as he imagined.

His fist was extremely hard, but this time, it was as if it had touched a fist that was even harder than his!

Pain began to stab into his bone like needles. Instantly, it engulfed his entire body as Moya's face immediately twisted. The bones in his hand had shattered!

However, this was only the beginning. His strength had been instantly overpowered. A more overbearing power surged at him, like a mountain that came crashing down on him!

“How can this be possible!?”

Moya stared with widened eyes. The pain in his fist made him unable to enter a deadlock with this human even for another second.

“Boom!”

Moya was sent flying back as he once again smashed into the shattered wall.

Moya had been sent flying with a single punch!

The Transcendents stood up in unison and watched incredulously at the youth as though they had seen a ghost.

“The physique of humans is bad?”

Shi Xiaobai gradually retracted his fist as though he had done something trivial. A mocking smile suffused across his lips as he

said coldly, “Spicy Chicken, use your third form!”

# Chapter 362: But This King Won't Do So!

---

How hard was Shi Xiaobai's right fist was a question even Shi Xiaobai himself did not know.

After having eaten countless gigantic black scorpions and steel rhinoceroses over the desolate desert, his physique had been greatly enhanced. After that, he had eaten the Transcendence Holy Tree's mysterious fruit. After half a day of digestion, his physical strength had a significant and qualitative improvement.

And most importantly, Shi Xiaobai's right hand had previously been sealed as a result of the Absolute Choice's punishment. During the seal, 'This Turtle Is Hardest' was constantly activated. Therefore, after twelve hours, Shi Xiaobai's right hand was already so hard that it could withstand a 'Turtle-speed Divine Punch' that gathered power for thirty minutes.

With all three factors compounded with each other, Shi Xiaobai's right arm could really be called a Qilin's arm. His right fist was so hard that it was appalling.

If he were to use any other part of his body to clash head on, like using his head against another head, Shi Xiaobai might be inferior to Moya in his second form. But a right fist against a right fist?

Shi Xiaobai could only say, "Sorry, Spicy Chicken, you can scram now!"

The power that came from his rage pervaded his entire body. At



this moment, Shi Xiaobai's physical strength was unfathomable. It was a terrifying strength that let him to rip a Level Lord apart with his bare hands!

Therefore, this punch was a steamroll when it came to the hardness of his right fist. It was a a trashing based on pure power!

Moya, who had put a wonder performance of crushing his opponents, was now completely crushed!

Regardless of who witnessed this scene, be it King Leonis or the Transcendent citizens, they could not sit still and stood up in unison.

Just by looking at race alone, Leonis, who was a bastard child of a member of the Transcendent race and a lion-headed race, could not represent the Transcendents. And among purebred Transcendents, Moya was the strongest. He was the true representation of the Transcendents, but at this moment, Moya was sent flying by a single punch from a human. What did this mean?

Did it really mean that there was heavens beyond heavens, that the race of the Transcendents was not the strongest race in the world?

“No!”

“Stand up!”

“Moya, quickly stand up!”

“Stand up and defeat that human!”

The Transcendents shouted, unwilling to accept this reality.

Rubble buried Moya’s body, and there was three full seconds of silence.

“Boom!”

The rubble blasted as a black figure stood up from the rubble.

The figure was about one and a half meters tall. His skin was entirely black, and his squinted eyes were scarlet. A black horn had grown from his head, making him look like an evil demon!

This was Moya?

“This is the Transcendent’s third form!”

Pulp Farmer warned in a low voice, “Be careful, Moya in his third form has lost his mind and all reason. He only has devil-like instincts. Furthermore, his strength and speed is several times above that of his second form.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head slightly. He could feel a terrifying aura from Moya as well. It was an aura that made him extremely uncomfortable. It was as if there was a vague hint of darkness that permeated in him.

The eyes of the Transcendent citizens were transfixed. In the history of the Transcendents, it was extremely rare for a Transcendent to be able to touch the third form, even fewer could completely transform into the third form.

This was because completely transforming into the third form not only meant the loss of one's sanity, it would also reveal a fact the Transcendents refused to face!

The third form of the Transcendents looked too similar to the Infernals!

The Transcendents were even accused of being 'bastards of the Infernals'.

Unless necessary, no Transcendent who could attain the third form would take the initiative to enter the third form.

But this time, Moya had no choice but to do so because if he were to suffer an abject defeat in such a manner, a defeat from an alien race, his reputation, his ambition, everything that he possessed would become nothing!

Moya's scarlet eyeballs moved and finally locked onto the target

of their hatred. Crazy killing intent surged at that instant!

A hoarse voice sounded as Moya's figure suddenly vanished!

Shi Xiaobai felt his heart jump and immediately dashed forwards!

A black figure stretched out its dark hands from the ground in an attempt to capture the running Shi Xiaobai's feet!

Shi Xiaobai did not dare to push the boundaries as he hurriedly used Crab Steps and dodged the attack at an extremely fast speed!

A stygian sound of the wind suddenly howled at that moment!

A black bone claw grabbed Shi Xiaobai's back with a ripping sound!

In pain, Shi Xiaobai hurriedly jumped forward and used 'Unleaking Turtle Aura' to inhibit the pain. The clothes on his back had been torn, leaving behind five bloody marks. If not for his body having a quantum leap in toughness after consuming the holy tree's fruit, this strike would have ripped his body into two!

From beginning to end, all Shi Xiaobai could discern was a trace of a dark shadow!

Moya in his third form was this fast?

...

In the audience stands, Liu Yu and Feng Yuanlin were looking anxious.

Feng Yuanlin said nervously, "We're doomed. Boss Shi Xiaobai does not know the characteristics of Moya in his third form!"

Liu Yu said with a sigh, "Sigh, who would have thought that Benefactor Shi Xiaobai would personally engage in battle. Furthermore, he has forced Moya to use his third form? Transcendents in the third form do not have their strengths greatly enhanced from the second form, but their speed is increased in an exaggerated manner. Trying to defeat Moya in his third form, dodging is useless. He can only stand his ground in defense."

Feng Yuanlin said with a wry smile, "However, Moya's strength is no joke either. If one is not a psionite that focuses on defense, standing his ground in defense is only being a sitting duck."

Liu Yu shook his head and said, "Being a sitting duck is better than scurrying around like a rat. By standing your ground, you can at least determine where Moya is attacking from. If you are dodging, you don't even know where Moya is, where or when he will attack. And if you attempt to counterattack, the outcome will be terrible!"

Feng Yuanlin said in a heavy tone, "But do you think with Boss Shi Xiaobai's character, do you think he will be willing to be a

sitting duck even if he knows that standing his ground in defense is more hopeful?”

Liu Yu gaped before sighing once again.

Against overwhelming strength, you could dodge or use even stronger strength as a counter.

But against overwhelming speed, unless you had impeccable defense, you would be completely out of options.

This was the theory that all the martial arts in the world could not be defeated if one was fast enough!

...

The black shadows flashed around Shi Xiaobai like black strobing lights. Moya's third form was so fast that the naked eye could not capture.

After failing in his first strike, Moya appeared to have a bit more patience.

He instinctively knew that the prey in front of him was a tough nut. Therefore, he was waiting for the best opportunity, so as to deal a direct critical blow.

Shi Xiaobai came to a stop.

He did not need others to inform him, nor did he need to know about the summarized experiences from previous trial-takers. After being hit once, Shi Xiaobai's magnificent combat talent had already calculated the best way to face the battle.

Against an opponent that had overwhelming speed, running was the most foolish of options.

Shi Xiaobai gave a helpless smile.

He had previously used the speed and maneuverability of Crab Steps to crush several opponents. At this moment, he finally encountered an opponent that crushed him in speed.

Then at this moment in time, how should he choose?

Stand his ground in defense, and wait for the opportunity to launch a counteroffensive?

This would have been the best method at this moment in time.

But...

“But This King won't do so!”

Shi Xiaobai suddenly widened his eyes. He wanted to win this battle with a method that had the bearing of a king!

# Chapter 363: His Opponent Is Only Himself

---

What is a King?

A person capable of anything, daring of anything, not giving up because of an 'impossibility', and never using an 'impossibility' to back down.

This is what a King is!

Against Moya's third form, whose speed was extremely fast, Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu would definitely choose to stand their ground in defense. If it was Pulp Farmer, he might choose to defend and and seek an opportunity to launch a counter attack. If it were confident geniuses like Sunless or Speechless, they would choose to give up on defense and continuously use large area-of-effect attacks, so as to deluge Moya's movement range, preventing him from avoiding it.

Shi Xiaobai could do any of these, but he did not choose any of the three options.

This was because not only did a King want to win, a King had to win with sufficient dominance!

Shi Xiaobai grinned as he instantly activated his Sword Truth, Excalibur. Pale golden light enveloped his body and immediately following that, Shi Xiaobai dashed forward.



As such, in the constantly flashing black shadows, there was an addition of an extremely fast golden light!

Your speed is fast?

This King will become faster than you!

This is the style of a King!

With Sword Truth activated, Shi Xiaobai was expending a great deal of energy every second, but his speed was ever so faster than before. The moment he used Crab Steps at the Crest of Perfection realm, dazzling figures and extremely fast speed made him appear like shimmering golden light. The naked eye could no longer discern his features!

The audience was shocked. They never expected that the youth would use such a method to face his opponent. Was he being capricious? Or was it overconfidence?

The youth's speed was indeed extremely fast, but he was still inferior to Moya!

At this moment, ordinary people could no longer see what was going on in the battle. They could only see a golden light and a black figure darting everywhere, chasing one another. There were constantly clashing sounds, random rubble flying, and cracks in the ground.

This was an intense battle that could not be discerned because the two people's speed and movement techniques were too exaggerated!

But as the golden light and black figure embroiled in battle, it was clear that the black figure had the upper hand!

This was because the black figure nearly covered the entire arena, and was constantly engulfing wherever the golden light was. Clearly, the black figure was the hunter in this battle!

The Transcendents finally revealed looks of excitement.

“This human must be a fool to compete in speed with Moya's third form!”

“This human may be extraordinary fast, but Moya in his his third form can only be described as perverse!”

“Moya is about to win. The human won't be able to last much longer!”

“...”

Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu revealed looks of concern. They had guessed that Shi Xiaobai would not chose a sitting duck battle strategy of standing his ground in defense, but they never expected Shi Xiaobai to choose to clash head on with his speed!

What sort of youth was he?

Against Moya's second form, whose physical hardness and bodily strength was extremely extraordinary, the youth had chosen to use his fist to clash with his in a head on strike.

Against Moya's third form, whose speed was extraordinary, he chose to compete in speed!

How arrogant and uninhibited was his heart and what sort of wild confidence did his soul have to make such a seemingly 'foolish' choice?

But for what reason such a 'foolish' method sent ardor and zeal through the blood of everyone watching, giving them a shock?

"Shi Xiaobai, all the best!"

"All the best, Shi Xiaobai!"

Such a youth made others involuntarily want to follow in his footsteps, following closely behind him, so as to see the scenes of his future!

This was because such a youth had endless possibilities for his future!

However, he was soon going to suffer a painful setback because of his ‘refusal to do so’.

The golden light was gradually being devoured as the black shadows constantly spread out, as if stars were constantly vanishing during a dark night.

Shi Xiaobai was not faster than Motion, so the space he could move was limited and repressed. He was like a prey that was constantly on the run, but he was gradually being forced into a corner!

This battle would end soon!

Leonis sighed and found it unfortunate. That human was outstanding in strength, but he had made the biggest of mistakes.

Even for himself, he could only use an unassailable defense and absolute power to beat Moya in his third form. Attempting to beat Moya in terms of speed was simply fool’s talk!

It was unfortunate that the human could not win the duel. If not, after Moya’s downfall, he could finish the human, becoming the hero of the Transcendents. Then, his status as king would become unassailable!

“Eh?”

Suddenly, Leonis’s irises constricted slightly. He suddenly saw a

strange scene.

“What happened?”

Leonis stared with widened eyes as he watched the golden figure of light that no longer had anywhere to run.

Moments later, Leonis exclaimed, “How is it possible!? That human has become even faster!?”

This was not a doubting question, but a rhetorical question. Furthermore, this sentence was filled with an incredulous tone of shock!

This was because, the facts of the matter were unfolding in front of everyone else!

They saw the golden figure of light that had been pushed to a corner burst through the black haze, bursting a brand new dawn!

It was as though a dimmed star was ignited once again in the dark of the night.

No, there was not only one!

One after another, stars began to lit up in succession from a particular moment!

It became a brilliant star-filled sky!

That human had broken through his limits at the edge of despair. His speed was increasing, escaping the pursuit of the hunter!

No, from that moment forth, he was no longer the prey!

Everyone in the audience stood up once again as they watched incredulously with bated breaths.

The golden light and black figures embroiled once again, as the golden light slowly recaptured his domain, constantly devouring the black figure. It had been released from its narrow world, opening up a vast expanse of bright stars!

There were still colliding sounds thundering, and the scene of the ground cracking had numbed the senses of people. This battle that could not be discerned had already lasted for several minutes. The golden light had slowly went from an absolute disadvantage to one of neutrality, and from a particular moment, began to have an advantage!

There was only one explanation for this!

That human was becoming faster in battle, to the point of... becoming faster than Moya!

The Transcendents exclaimed aloud!

“What sort of race are humans?”

“Heavens, do humans have such tenacity?”

“What a terrifying human. How is he able to improve himself so quickly?”

Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu looked at each other as they saw the shock in each other’s eyes. They remembered the words Shi Xiaobai had said before the tournament—Regardless of the opponent or how strong he is, it is sufficient as long as you do your best, working hard to exceed your own limits.

That...was supposedly a clichéd chicken soup of the soul, but was a true belief that Shi Xiaobai stood by!

So the reason why Shi Xiaobai chose to use speed to clash with Moya was not because of arrogance, nor was it for the so-called posturing, but to...exceed his own limits!

Shi Xiaobai’s opponent has always been himself!

# Chapter 364: Fuck Tomorrow

---

Shi Xiaobai was a person who had a desire to win, but he was not one who could not withstand failure.

This sounded contradictory, but it was not.

Shi Xiaobai could accept any form of failure. He had his head blown up by Thomas more than a thousand times and beaten by Sunless' Beginner Sword a few hundred times. Such form of failure, be it form or quantity, was something unacceptable by most people.

However, Shi Xiaobai still enjoyed it because through his failure, Shi Xiaobai was constantly obtaining victory!

Was this contradictory?

Of course not. Shi Xiaobai might have lost to the entire world, but he was constantly defeating himself!

If not for Thomas blowing up his head more than a thousand times, his Crab Steps would not have been cultivated to such an exquisite form!

If not for him being crushed by Sunless' sword technique hundreds of times, his Sword Truth would not have been attained so quickly!



It was failure that accelerated Shi Xiaobai's growth!

Therefore, against Moya's speed, Shi Xiaobai chose to deal with him in what seemed like the most foolish of ways.

He only had one thing on his mind!

To be faster!

A little bit faster!

Although the available area for him to move in was constantly shrinking, leaving him no place to flee, and even though his speed was constantly repressed, the only thing on Shi Xiaobai's mind was not the outcome of his failure, much less the regret over his choice. At that moment, the only thought on his mind was to become a little faster!

As long as he pushed himself to the limits, he could go beyond his limits!

This obviously needed the talent of a genius, but there was an even greater need for a stubbornness of a fool and the courage of a madman!

The golden light that gradually forced the black shadow into a corner, Pulp Farmer's eyes glazed over as he muttered to himself, "That...is a true genius!"

The situation was reversed. This time, Moya was forced into a despairing situation, but Moya, who only had his killing instincts left, had no way to undergo growth in such an adverse situation. The only thing he could do was struggle and desperately fight back!

Gradually, amid colliding sounds and explosions, there were angry hisses and screams mixed in.

The Transcendents slowly sat down as their faces turned solemn. Their moods were heavy. The battle was still ongoing, but everyone could tell that up to this point, it was equivalent to it coming to an end.

Humans appeared to be a race that could create miracles.

However, the Transcendents were always a race that rejected the thought of miracles.

Therefore, for Moya, once he was surpassed, there was no more miracle!

“Boom!”

A final deafening explosion resounded like the blooming of fireworks. Dust filled the sky as the black shadow and golden figure finally came to a stop.

When the explosive sounds subsided, the sound of light breathing was the only thing left.

After the dust dissipated, one could see Moya having reverted to his original state. At this moment, he was an ugly green-skinned dwarf. His eyes were rolled back and his body was covered in injuries. He sprawled motionlessly on the ground, having already lost consciousness, losing all ability to continue doing battle.

And the youth standing beside Moya was silent. His clothes were somewhat disheveled, but he was nearly without any injury. His chest was slightly undulating as his light but slow breaths made it seem like he had just done a warm-up jog.

A human had won.

Furthermore, it was most ridiculous that after using all his strength while embroiled with a fight with Moya for about ten minutes, he was only slightly out of breath.

“Humans are monsters.”

At that moment, this thought materialized in the minds of the Transcendents.

At this moment, Shi Xiaobai raised his head and looked at his surroundings. A sneer suffused across his lips as he loudly proclaimed, “Transcendents are just this and nothing more!”

“Transcendents are just this and nothing more!”

“Transcendents are just this and nothing more!”

Shi Xiaobai repeated the important things thrice, and he shouted louder each time he said it!

Shi Xiaobai would not forget the scene of how the Transcendents had been shouting ‘Humans are just this and nothing more’ just a moment ago. He was not someone who would bear a grudge, but if he kept it in, it would be too slavish. Therefore, Shi Xiaobai would seek revenge on the spot if there were any!

At that moment, silence pervaded the stadium. The Transcendents were appalled!

That human was too arrogant and crazy!

“Whoever offends the mighty Transcendents, however strong, shall be destroyed!”

“Human, don’t be overly arrogant. Don’t forget where you are!”

“A tiny competition has been escalated to the magnificence of a race? Are all humans as dumb as pigs, like you?”

Shi Xiaobai sneered without a word. The Transcendents were indeed conceited. It was as though they had forgotten how they

had just been shouting ‘Humans are just this and nothing more’ and how the humans felt.

Sure enough, this race was one he hated regardless of anything.

At that moment, an authoritative voice thundered, overshadowing the din.

“Human, Moya does not represent the Transcendents. It wouldn’t be too late for you to say it only after you defeat This King!”

In the throne of the defending champion, King Leonis stood up. He was dressed in regal robes and had an air of dignity. He looked very domineering.

Leonis was overjoyed. The development of the situation was practically the heavens helping him. All eight Bravehearts were defeated in battle, with even Moya defeated as well. As such, the force that slightly threatened his position as king had collapsed.

And at this moment, with the human being so overbearing, the only person that could stand up for the Transcendents was him alone, the strongest Transcendent!

Next, all he needed to do was trash the human at the final match tomorrow and he would become a hero of the Transcendents. Any negative opinions of him being a bastard child of the lion-headed species and the Transcendents would be useless!

This was an opportunity the heavens had given him!

At this moment, the Transcendents realized it too.

That's right, they still had King Leonis, who was stronger than Moya!

Although Leonis was a hybrid child of the Transcendents and a member of the lion-headed species, he still could represent the Transcendents!

“Foolish human, defeat our king before you are so overbearing!”

“King Leonis, if you can trample that arrogant human beneath your feet, we will worship you as king for the rest of our lives!”

“The race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world!

“King Leonis completely trashes Moya. Human, you don't stand a chance winning against King Leonis!”

It was as if the Transcendents had found a ray of light while in a cave, pointing them in the same direction!

Leonis was very pleased with the present situation. He was laughing maniacally in his heart, but he said with a deadpan expression, “Human, although you did not sign up for the

Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament and by joining in the battle midway is not permissible by the rules, the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament welcomes all Bravehearts with sufficient strength. Since you were able to defeat Moya, you are the Braveheart most qualified to challenge This King! This King hereby allows you to fight This King in tomorrow's final! When the time comes, This King will let you know that the race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world!"

With this said, the Transcendents immediately began to chant Leonis's name.

Tomorrow, Leonis would prove that the race of the Transcendents was the strongest race in the world. Although they could not wait for it to happen, they had to wait for tomorrow patiently. After all, the human had just finished an intense battle. They did not wish for the human to use the depletion of his stamina as an excuse after suffering an abject defeat!

Hearing the yelling of the audience, Shi Xiaobai's face darkened.

In the first place, he had been strangely incensed because of Moya's fatal kick, thus his sudden appearance. He did not do it for the purpose of participating in the tournament.

Even though he could challenge Leonis, he would have chosen to give up because he did not want to gain the recognition of the assessment program by becoming 'tournament champion'. He wanted to create a fifth story that belonged to him!

But at this moment in time, Shi Xiaobai could not tolerate any further!

Transcendents, since all of you are so arrogant and defiant!

This King will let you know that no race in the world is the strongest!

At least, you, the Transcendents are definitely not!

Shi Xiaobai raised his head and took a deep breath. Using a voice that drowned out everyone's voice, he roared angrily, "Fuck tomorrow! Get your ass down here for This King right now!"

...



# Chapter 365: In Front Of The Door Of The Bravehearts, The Meeting Of Girls

---

The world of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower's seventh level was no ordinary world. It was a replication of the history of a world on a different plane of existence. The rules and civilization had once existed before. It was an imaginary world, but it was something real in the past.

And in this world, Bravehearts and Infernal King were two terms that were commonly mentioned.

The Infernal King lived in the Infernal domain. He seldom appeared nor did he have ambitions for world domination. However, the moment he appeared, it also meant misery to the world!

Although he did not have ambitions of destroying the world, he had to kill in order to satisfy his instinctive desires. It was just like how ordinary living creatures had to eat, the Infernal King needed to kill to satisfy himself.

Therefore, the world outside the Infernal domain was the Infernal King's farm. It reared countless creatures that was for him to slaughter at any time.

Intelligent life obviously could not tolerate the fear of being slaughtered at any moment, thus Bravehearts were born!

By entering the Infernal realm to kill the Infernal King, this was the reason behind the birth of Bravehearts and the meaning behind their existence!

But since time immemorial, countless Bravehearts that entered the Infernal domain never returned. The Infernal King continued the slaughter of other cities every month. Nothing changed for the Bravehearts failed to complete their mission!

And gradually there was a change in the nature of Bravehearts. They forgot the original goal of their birth—no Braveheart was willing to sacrifice their lives by stepping into the Infernal domain!

Bravehearts became more of an honorary title, a means of self-deception. The people of the world could only pray that when their tribe or city was chosen by the Infernal King as the target for slaughter, the Bravehearts would be able to step forward and stand up against all odds to defend them.

Even the Transcendents who acclaimed to be the strongest race no longer sent Bravehearts to the Infernal realm because it was simply sending them to their deaths!

Therefore, the sole entrance to the Infernal domain that was labeled the 'Door of the Bravehearts' was already deserted and run-down.

In the past, this narrow entrance would have countless Bravehearts as well as their guardians would live in this place. They would bid farewell to the Bravehearts before they entered the

Infernal domain. But now, no one stepped foot here. Only a few curious and bold tourists would visit this legendary and intriguing spot.

However, there was a person quietly sitting in a pavilion in front of the Door of the Bravehearts, as though the person was waiting for something.

The person was a beautiful azure-dressed girl. She had a silver sword by her waist, but she held a pure white sword in her right hand. She quietly sat in the desolate and bleak pavilion, adding a beautiful touch to the dilapidated scene.

The azure-dressed girl faced the world and remained expressionless. Her eyes looked somewhat dull.

The girl had been waiting in the pavilion for quite a long while, but she remained extremely patient. However, this narrow and dangerous path that wasn't far from the Infernal domain was a spot nearly no one would step into. Even a mosquito would not easily fly here.

In this silent and desolate place, to the point of the sound of winds appearing bleak, she waited alone, exuding a sense of loneliness.

However, the girl did not seem to feel lonely, or it could be said that she was accustomed to loneliness.

However, this quiet loneliness appeared to be destroyed very soon. Because far in the distance, a figure had suddenly appeared. The figure was slowly heading in her direction.

The azure-dressed girl looked up slowly, a glimmer of light in her glazed eyes, but she did not move forward or get up. She only waited patiently as the distant figure approached through the fuzzy fog, until she managed to discern the figure's appearance.

The person who came was a girl. She was petite and she wore a white school uniform and a black short skirt. She carried a cute pink-colored backpack, like she was a student from some school. She had silver hair and amber eyes. She wore a pair of black thick-framed glasses. Her skin was fair and she had delicate facial features.

She was a pure and lovely girl, but she was not the person the azure-dressed girl was waiting for.

The azure-dressed girl lowered her head once again.

The silver-haired girl also noticed the azure-dressed girl sitting in the pavilion. Her eyes lit up as she quickened her pace. Soon, she came to the pavilion and sat across the azure-dressed girl.

The silver-haired girl took out a board from her backpack and pulled out an oil-based pen from the board before writing on it. Her actions looked like she was well-practiced in this.

“Hello, Sis Sunless. I’ve always wanted to meet you. I’ve finally met you. I’m very happy. Hehe!”

The silver-haired girl’s eyes lit up as she rapped the stone table gently. She raised the board and those were the words written on the board. She even drew a cute emoticon at the end. However, the girl’s words were a messy scrawls and her drawing skill was not something worth complimenting.

Sunless looked up and nodded. She whispered, “Hello.”

She was extremely bad at communicating with strangers, but she easily guessed the identity of the silver-haired girl. Therefore, she responded with a greeting. As for her asking something or to tease the girl’s poor calligraphy and drawing, that was impossible.

However, the silver-haired girl appeared rather amiable. She was not affected by Sunless’ ‘loftiness’. She beamed and wiped the words from her board and wrote: “Sis Sunless, why are you here? I don’t think you were a person who would choose to kill the Infernal King!”

Sunless softly replied, “Waiting for someone.”

The reason why she was waiting here was naturally because of Shi Xiaobai. Back when she left the fifth level, Shi Xiaobai had previously asked her to wait for him at the seventh level. Sunless believed that Shi Xiaobai definitely had the ability to reach the seventh level to live up to his word.

And among the four methods to clear the seventh level, Sunless pondered over it and believed that with Shi Xiaobai's character, it was most likely that he would choose to kill the Infernal King. Therefore, she had waited by the Door of the Bravehearts.

As for whether this waiting that lacked a proper premise was a waste of time, or if it would affect her chances of clearing the level, Sunless did not put it to heart. None of these were considered important to her.

The silver-haired girl clearly had a gossipy heart as she immediately wrote, "Who are you waiting for!?"

Sunless fell silent and did not feel like answering this question. This was because she had already realized that if she answered this seemingly talkative girl, even more questions would certainly follow.

If that was the case, it was too troublesome.

"What about you?"

In a rare instance, Sunless responded with a question. Firstly, it was to change the subject and, secondly, she was also curious as to why the silver-haired girl came to the Door of the Bravehearts.

The silver-haired girl was a little silly, but she was no fool. She was aware that Sunless did not want to answer her, so she did not insist. Upon listening to Sunless' question, she immediately wrote

on the board with a smile.

...

# Chapter 366: Transforming Without A Word

---

The silver-haired girl's talkative vibe began revealing itself as she wrote and erased on the board several times. She used a relatively complicated way to describe why she had chosen to come to the Door of the Bravehearts.

“I was planning on trying to see if I could replicate what the Hero King did, but who knew I encountered an irritating fella on the way. From a young age, that irritating fella believes that he would be able to surpass the Hero King, so I benevolently gave him the chance.”

“As for the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament, that just sounds boring. Furthermore, previous trial-takers all claim that the Transcendents as a race are extremely disparaging, so I didn't plan on going to suffer.”

“Surviving a hundred days is too tiring, so after some thought, there's only the method of killing the Infernal King left. I never expected to meet Sis Sunless here. I'm really lucky!”

Sunless patiently read the silver-haired girl's words and confirmed the girl's identity. Obviously, she would not express any opinion or reveal any emotions to what the silver-haired girl depicted, as such, she only faced her in silence.

The conversation came to an abrupt end.



The silver-haired girl raised her spectacle frame. It was naturally easy for her to find a new topic of conversation, but seeing how Sunless apparently did not like to chat, she decided to write on the board: “I thought of something. I’m waiting for someone as well. I received his help in the second level, and haven’t even thanked him. With his strength, it wouldn’t be a problem reaching the seventh level. With his attitude, he would likely choose to kill the Infernal King. So, I’ll be waiting in the pavilion as well. Sis Sunless, you wouldn’t mind me, right? I promise that I wouldn’t bother you!”

Sunless nodded. She did not mind the silver-haired girl’s waiting in the pavilion.

The silver-haired girl smiled. Waiting for someone was naturally just an excuse. She only felt that waiting alone in the desolate pavilion was too lonely and planned on staying behind to accompany her. She also wanted to see who Sunless was waiting for.

The girl’s Soul of Gossip was still burning.

...

...

Transcendence, Martial Tournament Stadium

Shi Xiaobai's voice was still echoing.

“Fuck tomorrow! Get your ass down here for This King right now!”

With him saying that, every Transcendent was left dazed for a moment. They first suspected if they had heard wrongly before looking at each other to realize that they had not, immediately becoming appalled.

The arrogance this youth had was already undoubtable. But only at this point in time did they realize that they had far underestimated the youth's degree of arrogance!

Fuck tomorrow?

Although the youth was only slightly out of breath after defeating Moya, no one believed that he still had much stamina left after fighting full strength against Moya for more than ten minutes, breaking his limits in the process.

After the battle, it was already quite an impressive feat for the youth to stand there with his chest puffed up.

As for another battle, a battle that challenged Leonis, who was stronger than Moya, it was more than fool's talk!

Leonis's face sank as he said coldly, “You want to fight with This King in your present state? Aren't you thinking too highly of

yourself!?”

Shi Xiaobai shrugged his shoulders and said, “This King is now in excellent shape. As This King said, the Transcendents are just this and nothing more. Even your so-called second strongest, Moya, was unable to expend one percent of This King’s stamina. It probably will not take much more stamina to smack you, the number one, down. There’s no need to wait for tomorrow. This King doesn’t have the patience, so now, it’s time to make all of you shut your mouths!”

Shi Xiaobai’s words were somewhat trending on hyperbole, but the stamina expended was indeed not much with his present level of fitness. As he had been consuming large quantities of ‘food’ along the way, what he expended had just been energy stored in his body. Engaging in another battle would not be a problem at all.

The Transcendents obviously did not know this. They were appalled and infuriated by his extreme arrogance.

“Fuck, this human is being overly arrogant, isn’t he? He doesn’t even think the slightest of us the Transcendents!”

“King Leonis, go on and smack that human down with a single punch. Let him repent for his arrogance!”

“King Leonis, can you endure it? I can’t! We can’t!”

“ ... ”

There was mass outrage from the Transcendents. They were so incensed with the human's arrogance that they ground their teeth in anger. They wanted to personally go down and beat down the human, but after considering their own strength, they could only place their hopes on Leonis!

Regardless of how unfair the battle was, it was sufficient if the human could be taught a lesson!

Leonis looked sullen and he was silent. In his mind, only by trashing Shi Xiaobai at his best condition tomorrow would he be able to highlight his strength as king. If he were to fight now and won, the humans and some of the Transcendents who dismissed him would still be able to give such an excuse.

But with public outrage at this moment, he would be going against public opinion if he did not fight.

At this moment, as though Shi Xiaobai was not afraid that things weren't fiery enough, he fanned the flames by saying, "Hurry up and get the fuck down. This King is already getting impatient. Could it be that the strongest person of the Transcendents is actually a coward?"

Shi Xiaobai did not want to wait for tomorrow because his wrath gave him strength. If he were to delay it to tomorrow, his anger would subside with the passage of time.

At this moment, his anger meter could be said to be at 50%. Half

his hair had turned silvery white, but with his mind naturally turning calm, his silver hair was constantly restoring to its black color. His anger meter was also respectively decreasing.

Shi Xiaobai had already realized that it was not simple rage, but an extraordinary power. If he wanted to defeat Leonis, he needed to use that power!

No one knew that what seemed like an arrogant youth was actually meticulous and wise.

Shi Xiaobai chuckled once again, “So the strongest member of the Transcendents is such a wimp?”

Things seldom went past the number three. Against Shi Xiaobai’s third verbal taunting, Leonis finally could not repress the anger in his heart. With a forceful smack on the throne’s armrest, he suddenly stood up.

Although he was in the form of a dwarf, his stance was magnificent like a mountain!

“Human, you will pay a terrible price for your arrogance!”

Leonis angrily roared and suddenly leaped down from the audience stands which was more than ten meters high. He crashed into the arena like a meteor!

“Boom!”

The ground cracked and immediately, a deep pit burst open when he landed. It was obvious how powerful he was. This was Leonis in his normal state!

Leonis walked out of the pit and said with a sneer, “Human, it’s still not too late for you to kneel down and beg for mercy!”

This method of posturing immediately made the Transcendents extremely excited as they chanted Leonis’s name!

Leonis had accepted the pushing forward of the battle!

Liu Yu and Feng Yuanlin looked at each other with a wry smile. Although they were very impressed with Shi Xiaobai’s strength and courage, they were not optimistic about Shi Xiaobai’s chances. It was not easy defeating Moya, but now, he had to face a stronger Leonis without any rest. This was him raising his own difficulty.

Pulp Farmer sighed. Even during his most frivolous and rebellious stage, he would have never done such a thing. Shi Xiaobai, what sort of youth are you?

“Cut the crap, This King’s fist is unable to endure the thirst!”

Shi Xiaobai did not have the slightest feeling that he was courting death. What he wanted now was to make the foolish Transcendents shut up by using this victory!

Leonis's eyes were cold. With a low growl, his body suddenly began swelling!

Without a word, Leonis transformed!

Which form would he use?

...

# Chapter 367: Come On, Let's Clash Head On!

---

Leonis's body suddenly began swelling like a balloon, going from a meter tall dwarf to nearly two meters. His green skin was dyed black, and his eyes turned scarlet. The two fangs that resembled sickles on his ferocious lion head was raised upright, and a black-and-white eye appeared on his forehead. He looked like a terrifying demon that came out of hell!

At that moment, there was an uproar.

“The third form!”

“Wow, Leonis is using the third form at the onset!?”

“Leonis is furious. That human is doomed!”

Leonis had not only transformed, he had even gone straight to the third form that was the reason Transcendents had been accused of being ‘bastards of the Infernals’. It demonstrated the importance he attached to the battle, and it also implied that after watching Shi Xiaobai's battle with Moya, Leonis had decided to turn serious!

Leonis took a step forward as his terrifying strength seemed like a majestic mountain crushing down. His right foot took a step forward, causing the ground to quake!

“Make your move, foolish human!” Leonis roared!



In the audience stands, Liu Yu said with a heavy expression, “It’s as the legends go, Leonis’s strength indeed exceeds Moya. He can still maintain his consciousness even in his third form!”

Feng Yuanlin said with a heavy voice as well, “Only two trial-takers have ever forced Leonis to take on his third form. Now, Shi Xiaobai is the third. If I don’t remember wrongly, Leonis’s third form is completely different from Moya. What significantly increases is not speed, but...”

Liu Yu finished Feng Yuanlin’s sentence with a wry smile, “Strength and defense! This is truly tricky. The Transcendents are already gifted with strength and defense that far exceeds other races. Furthermore, Leonis is blessed by the gods, with his third form greatly enhancing his domain of expertise. Even if Shi Xiaobai’s speed is able to repress him, it would be difficult for him to tear through Leonis’s defense!”

Feng Yuanlin said with a sigh, “But speed is the only way to defeat Leonis. If Shi Xiaobai relies on Crab Steps, he might be able to find Leonis’s weakness and gain hope of winning!”

In the arena, Shi Xiaobai also sensed the terrifying aura from Leonis. He could deeply sense the immense power coming from Leonis from a hundred meters away. This power erected like a ice-cold mountain, like a volcano that would erupt at any moment. The boiling lava would devour his opponent.

Leonis did not attack first but sounded for Shi Xiaobai to make

his first move because he could use unassailable strength and defense to tackle any attack!

Shi Xiaobai realized this point, but he would not hesitate because of this. Even though Leonis was confident that his defense could withstand any attack, that meant that Shi Xiaobai would destroy whatever Leonis was most confident of!

Shi Xiaobai clenched his fists as he began running towards Leonis!

He did not use Crab Steps nor did he use his confusing footwork. All he did was an ordinary run, without any astonishing speed!

Maybe he could repress Leonis in this battle with his speed, but by doing so, it wouldn't be cool enough even if he won!

You can call it arrogance, but Shi Xiaobai was such a person!

Shi Xiaobai ran straight towards Leonis, and his tightly-clenched fist smashed straight at him!

This punch was nothing fancy nor were there any tricks to it!

This punch only had one meaning—come on, let's clash head on!

A look of surprise flashed in Leonis's eyes as he gave an angry laugh, "Presumptuous human, you are courting death!"

This human had previously clashed head on with a second-form Moya and sent him flying, but so what?

His strength and defense exceeded Moya's to begin with. At this point, his third form had greatly enhanced his strength and defense. His single punch could instantly kill Moya!

And this human did not choose to use his speed to flank him, instead, he was provoking him with such a straightforward punch?

He was doing nothing but courting death!

Leonis roared and facing Shi Xiaobai's fist, he punched it!

Human, your courage is commendable, but your foolishness nearly made This King laugh out loud!

Die, with this punch, you shall understand that the race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world!

At that instant the fists met, there was no demonstration of combat skills. At that moment, all Shi Xiaobai and Leonis relied on was their pure strength, and the toughness of their fists!

At that instant, everyone in the audience held their breaths!

“Boom!”

An explosive sound resounded as the clash of the fists came to an end at that instant!

The punches did not enter a stalemate because the difference in strength between the two parties was too great.

And an expected and unexpected scene happened at the same instant!

As expected, Shi Xiaobai flew backwards as expected by the audience, slamming heavily into the arena's walls like a missile.

But what was more astonishing that Leonis had to retreat five steps back to stabilize his body!

There was no deadlock in the clash of the fists, but it was not a steamroll!

Leonis's strength was better, but yet such a strange thing happened?

Leonis's eyes were somewhat filled with disbelief.

This was because after Shi Xiaobai was sent flying from the punch, he immediately stood up from the rubble. He looked like he was not injured at all.

Everyone's eyes looked at his right hand. It was a slender and fair hand, having the charm of a boy's and the delicateness of a girl's.

After clashing with Leonis, his right hand appeared completely fine. It did not even have any signs of redness or swelling!

What was going on?

There was no time for the audience to ponder over it, nor was there time for Leonis to be surprised, Shi Xiaobai, who had stood up, immediately ran towards Leonis once again!

“Again!”

Shi Xiaobai's eyes burned with flames of fighting spirit, as his right fist had smashed straight towards Leonis once again!

Just like before, there was nothing fancy about it, nor were there any tricks to it!

This punch was still as head on as before!

“Fool!”

Leonis roared. As a king, he naturally could not back down against such simple and crude provocation!

The human's strength had indeed taken him by surprise, to the point that the first clash had caused him to instinctively take a few steps back, but that was all to it and nothing more!

In a comparison of power, the human was still inferior!

Leonis aimed at Shi Xiaobai's fist and punched out as well!

“Boom!”

The outcome did not change.

Shi Xiaobai was still sent flying backwards without any resistance.

But this time, Leonis only took a tiny step back before coming to a halt. The impact of the force was still rather enormous, to the point of Leonis needing to retreat so as to dissipate some of the strength!

But in terms of sheer force, Leonis had won!

However, at the next moment, Shi Xiaobai, who had been sent flying, stood up again like nothing had happened!

The smart audience cast their eyes at Shi Xiaobai's right hand once again. Once again, the youth's hand was not twisted nor did it appear red from swelling!

The clash of fists was a skirmish of pure strength, but it also tested the toughness of their fists. If steel met rock, the stronger the impact, the more miserable the fragile side's outcome would be!

But why was the youth's fist unscathed after two brutal clashes!?

Could it be that the toughness of his fists was not much weaker than Leonis's?

“Again!”

Shi Xiaobai stood up once again and immediately rushed forward. His fist raised up once again and hurled straight at Leonis!

...

## Chapter 368: Always Waiting

---

Force was something that affected both parties. In a collision between two objects, regardless of which side was stronger, both sides would have to sustain a certain level of damage. Therefore, in a clash of fists, other than pure power, the toughness of a person's fist was also tested.

If any ordinary person were to forcefully receive Leonis's punch, the person's entire arm, or even the person's entire body might get twisted. A weaker person might have their body explode.

It was because of this reason that Shi Xiaobai chose to face him in a frontal clash. The Transcendents only found it laughable, while Pulp Farmer and company broke out into cold sweat for Shi Xiaobai. As for Leonis, he was extremely furious and full of contempt!

Leonis in his third form had strength that far exceeded Moya's. The toughness of his fist was something incomparable to Moya. The clash of the fists should have sent Shi Xiaobai flying, twisting and crippling his entire arm!

The former happened as expected. Although Shi Xiaobai's strength was impressive, there was still a great gap between his strength and Leonis's, so he was instantly sent flying!

However, the latter did not happen as people expected. Not only Shi Xiaobai's hand did not get mangled, it did not even swell at all!



The young and fair right hand appeared somewhat soft, yet it was so tough?

“That’s impossible!”

The Transcendents could not believe that such tender looking arms could match the invincible Leonis in a frontal competition in toughness!

And at this moment, Shi Xiaobai’s third punch was hurling towards Leonis!

It was still the same old punch, with no technique to boast about. It was straight, direct and honest!

Leonis roared angrily and punched out once again. The way things were developing prevented him from doing it any other way!

At this moment, whoever first bent was not a man!

“Boom!”

The outcome of this clash did not change. The person sent flying was still Shi Xiaobai!

Leonis took half a step back and roared. He did not appear happy at his victory, instead his face turned uglier!

And in the next moment, Shi Xiaobai, who had been sent flying, got up once again. He rushed at Leonis, and punched out a fourth time!

This scene was somewhat reminiscent of the past.

The Transcendents exclaimed, “Holy shit, is this human some cockroach that won’t die? He has been sent flying thrice, yet it’s like nothing happened?”

“Does he think that by attempting again and again would result in something different? The gap in strength between him and King Leonis is just too great. Even if this goes on a few more times, he will still be destined to fly away!”

“No, have all of you forgotten how the human attempted again and again while fighting Moya? Don’t forget at the speed at which this human improves!”

“Are you implying that the human wants to replicate the miracle of him defeating Moya?”

“Yes, the human is trying to repeat the show of him breaking through his limits. He wants to surpass himself through defeat!”

“Holy shit, from the looks of it, he can still go on for a very long while. Would he really succeed after trying so many times?”

“This human...is very shameless, but isn't he having fucking too much tenacity?”

The audience were in a flurry of discussion. Shi Xiaobai had previously demonstrated how he surpassed himself from a state of despair, and this time, it appeared as though he was accumulating his defeats to transform it into success.

But would he really succeed?

“Can Boss Shi Xiaobai really succeed?” Feng Yuanlin was feeling tensed as he could not help but ask Liu Yu, who was beside him.

Liu Yu frowned and said with a sigh, “It's difficult, really too difficult. The reason why Shi Xiaobai was able to break through his limits and defeat Moya was mainly because the difference in their speeds was not as large as one would imagine. He had improved by taking one big step from his defeats, allowing him to surpass Moya and clinch victory. But this time, the gap in strength between him and Leonis is just too big. Not only does he need one step, he needs ten, dozens, or even more than a hundred steps...”

Even if Shi Xiaobai could truly create another miracle, surpassing himself from defeat and allowing his strength to increase, the difference between him and Leonis was not just a single level. He needed multiple breakthroughs to do so, but that was simply impossible!

Feng Yuanlin immediately understood what Liu Yu was implying. After some careful contemplation, he realized that there

was no way to refute him. Immediately, he felt like a deflated balloon, and sighed.

Liu Yu comforted him by saying, “It’s already impressive for Shi Xiaobai to force Leonis into his third form. Don’t forget, no trial-taker has been able to defeat the enhanced Leonis in the tournament after Xu Taibai!”

...

Leonis’s strength was without a doubt. Moya was much weaker than him. In a clash of strength, Shi Xiaobai was no match for him at all!

One punch, two punches, three punches, ten punches, twenty punches!

Regardless of the number of punches, the outcome did not change at all. Shi Xiaobai was sent flying every single time!

However, he never stopped his actions. Like a mirror, it kept repeating. Every time, he would immediately stand up after falling to the ground, charging right at Leonis and hurling a straight punch.

The fighting spirit that was burning in his eyes did not lower in intensity, in fact, it was burning more intensely!

Even though he had been defeated dozens of times without any

suspense!

“This human is indeed a monster!”

“Regardless of how much a monster he is, it’s impossible for him to succeed. The difference is just too big!”

“From the looks of it, he might be able to endure more than ten thousand defeats. It’s terrifying. However, it seems like King Leonis is about to lose his patience!”

“Strange, why doesn’t King Leonis quickly end the battle? Why does he keep giving the human a chance?”

“To improve from his defeats, how terrifying is that ability! Quickly finish him, King Leonis!”

The Transcendents began to worry in a way that they found laughable.

Even though the human’s intent was so obvious, why was Leonis sillily allowing the human to attempt time and time again?

Such a simple victory would no longer give one any sense of achievement. What Leonis should do was to use his sufficient strength and absolute advantage to crush Shi Xiaobai, and not keep clashing with his fists in such an upright manner!

However, Leonis's face was clearly turning uglier, yet, he was continuously waiting for Shi Xiaobai's punch.

The way he looked was as though he was stubbornly trying to gain victory over something.

It was as though his dignity as a king was being challenged.

It was as though he would be defeated if he did not clash with that straight punch.

What was going on?

At that moment, the Transcendents finally managed to see something amiss.

Leonis's angry roars seemed to have the signs of pain mingled in them?

"That's impossible!"

Suddenly, after an unknown number of fist clashes, Leonis finally roared angrily.

He had switched from his right fist to his left fist!

Leonis switched hands?

At that moment, everyone was appalled and finally realized that the battle they were thinking of was not the true battle!

This human was sent flying again and again, yet his fighting spirit was even more intense.

It was because he was not waiting for the moment his strength made a breakthrough!

But because his fist was tougher. He had been waiting for the instant Leonis could not withstand the impact!

# Chapter 369: Heart Feeling Downtrodden, An Exhaustion That Comes From The Soul

---

In a clash of fists, what did it mean for Leonis to suddenly switch hands?

With Leonis's extremely arrogant character, it was impossible for him to shrink back or show mercy. There was only one reason why he would switch hands—he had no choice but to switch them!

What was the reason that made him have to switch?

The answer could not be any simpler.

Leonis's right hand couldn't withstand another impact. He had already realized that his right hand would be injured or it was already injured. He had no choice but to switch to his left hand!

Therefore, although Shi Xiaobai's strength was greatly inferior to Leonis's, his fist's hardness was higher. Every time the fists struck each other, the fist that was injured was Leonis's right fist!

This was the truth of the matter!

This was the reason why Leonis was constantly 'honestly' clashing with Shi Xiaobai!

It was because his dignity as a king prevented him from



conceding. His confidence as a mighty figure prevented him from believing that his fist was at the disadvantage!

But up to that very moment, to the point when he could no longer pay the price of the next punch that Leonis had no choice but to switch hands!

In a comparison of fists, he had lost!

And Shi Xiaobai, who had been sent flying on the surface, had always been at the advantage in the clash of the fists. He was the eventual victor!

Miracle?

There was no need for that!

Shamelessness?

It did not even exist!

The Transcendents who realized the truth were appalled.

“This is impossible. Isn’t King Leonis’s physical hardness unassailable in his third form? I remember that in the previous tournament, King Leonis was able to let Moya beat him for ten minutes! Why isn’t he harder than a human?”

“This human is strange. Other than the Transcendents, how can there be another race with such terrifying physical hardness? I seriously suspect that he is actually a bastard child of the Transcendents that went missing!”

“King Leonis, don’t hold back anymore. Quickly use your Lion King Punch. Use your absolute strength to crush that human, if not, you might fail miserably at an easy task!”

“Begging for the Lion King Punch. Stop using such honest punches!”

“Lion King Punch! Lion King Punch! Lion King Punch!”

“Lion King Punch!”

The Transcendents did not wish for Leonis to continue in this embroilment before failing due to an accident. They needed victory, as for winning beautifully, with sufficient posturing, that was less important!

The audience’s intent was very clear. Hey, stop trying to posture if you can’t. It’s not like your house is beside a posing ring!

Leonis’s livid face turned even uglier.

He wanted to roar. What do you bunch of back-seat warriors know?

The truth was slightly different from what everyone guessed.

Leonis did not believe that the hardness of his fist was wrecked. He only felt that when he hit the human, the human's fist was exaggeratedly hard, but it was still weaker than his.

However, as the amount of force from their clash was enormous, it resulted in his fist feeling some pain after they separated, resulting in the accumulation of injuries.

However, such an injury should have been afflicted onto the human as well!

Then, the fist that was weaker than his should reasonably not be able to last for long!

It did not make any sense. In the conflict that looked like he was competing in strength and hardness, he had actually lost at endurance!

It did not make sense!

It was impossible!

But such a thought made Leonis insist on clashing head on with Shi Xiaobai's fist because from his point of view, Shi Xiaobai was definitely enduring the pain from his fist. It had to be the case!

But he lost control of the situation. Leonis never expected that he would be the first to falter. He realized that if he punched out again, the injuries accumulated within his right fist would very likely instantly inflict serious injuries to him. It would be an inestimable cost!

Why was that human able to endure to this point in time?

Could it be that he was planning on having his right hand crippled to do battle?

This was the only reasonable explanation.

Leonis had no choice but to admire the human for his bravery and persistence, but he got a deeper understanding of the human's foolishness!

Since you don't want your right hand!

This King shall accede to your wishes!

Leonis did not comply with the requests of the audience to use his famous technique, Lion King Punch!

Instead, he continued using his left hand to clash with Shi Xiaobai!

This looked like a tragic stubbornness of a loser.

But in fact, he was only doing so to destroy Shi Xiaobai's right hand!

“Human, your endurance is amazing, so keep enduring it. Endure to the point till there is no way of turning back. When that happens, you will pay the most terrible of prices!”

Leonis sneered in his heart as he continued to use his left hand to clash with Shi Xiaobai. He did not believe that the endurance from both his hands could not withstand a human's right hand!

...

Just as Leonis expected, Shi Xiaobai was indeed enduring something.

However, he was not enduring pain, but trying to stop himself from laughing out loud!

That's right, although Leonis in his third form crushed him completely in terms of strength, and his body's toughness was indeed even harder than his Qilin arm's right hand.

However, Leonis never expected that Shi Xiaobai possessed a brazenly shameless endurance technique—Filthy Turtle Divine Technique!

The Filthy Turtle Divine Technique's power was being pushed to its full extent at this moment in time!

Unleaking Turtle Aura perfectly inhibited the pain coming from his fist, converting it into a slightly acidic liquid that flowed to his right arm. Not only wasn't it painful, it was extremely comfortable!

And the effects of This Turtle Is Hardest were even more perverse. It could convert damage into nourishment for the body, and was instead further enhancing his body's toughness!

In fact, This Turtle Is Hardest had several limitations that Shi Xiaobai had failed to put to perfect use.

This was because This Turtle Is Hardest would be useless if he was dealt damage that was too high that exceeded the limits of his physique.

However, when he bore damage that was very low, the physical toughness increased was hardly much. It was as though nothing was enhanced, so This Turtle Is Hardest was useless.

Therefore, This Turtle Is Hardest required damage that was in the middle of the two extremes, which was rather difficult to grasp.

However, Shi Xiaobai's luck was perfect. The damage caused by

his clash with Leonis happened to be very close to limits of which he could bear!

Hence, every punch would have This Turtle Is Hardest convert the damage in Shi Xiaobai's right hand into nourishment. Not only was his right hand not dealt much damage, it was instead gradually becoming harder!

Shi Xiaobai's right arm was labeled a Qilin arm, so it was an extremely difficult thing to further enhance it. But at this moment, every punch was a slight enhancement!

How could Shi Xiaobai pass up this golden opportunity!?

The poor Leonis did not even think that the endurance he believed Shi Xiaobai was undergoing did not even exist!

The ending he was looking forward to would never come!

Leonis's left fist clashed with Shi Xiaobai for more than ten strikes before he suddenly realized that his left fist apparently became frail compared to his opponent's right hand.

No, that's not right. The human's right fist was becoming even harder!

If this went on, his left fist would also undergo shock!

Seeing the youth charge at him once again, the youth did not appear exhausted or as though he was enduring pain at all, instead, he looked amused.

Leonis immediately regretted.

Fuck, what was he doing all this for?

Leonis finally silently lowered his left hand this time.

Sigh, his heart was feeling downtrodden, it was an exhaustion that came from the soul.

It's time to quickly end this farce!



# Chapter 370: None Of You Know Anything About Strength!

---

Leonis felt disheartened, while the audience was also exhausted from watching this.

The battle was supposed to have Leonis crush his opponent with his absolute strength, winning victory with a bang. This was the performance they were looking forward to.

But what had come out of it now?

The human had been sent flying time and time again, but he would climb back up to fight once more. However, Leonis had no choice but to switch his right fist to his left. And from the looks of it, his left fist was quickly unable to withstand the impacts any further.

Wasn't this the precursor to failing miserably at an easy task?

Amid the din, there were more and more members of the audience that began shouting "Lion King Punch". They only wished for Leonis to get out of his stupor, giving up an easy victory. After all, this battle had their Transcendents' dignity and glory at stake. He was not to be defeated!

As such, Leonis quietly lowered his left hand. The eyes of a large number of Transcendents lit up as they suddenly stood up!

Here it comes!

Here it finally comes!

Leonis finally wanted to end this farce!

“Human, you are not bad indeed, but you are just this and nothing more!”

Leonis sneered and no matter how much he went easy on his opponent, there was no way he would be defeated. Once he stopped giving his opponent an opportunity, his opponent would be left without any opportunities. This was the confidence that came from being strong!

Leonis lowered his left hand and stepped forward with his chest puffed up. He no longer used his fist to collide with Shi Xiaobai's fist, but used his chest instead!

By ending this farce of fist against fist, it was a form of retreat and concession that Leonis was reluctant about, but as long as he won the battle in an invincible-like manner, whatever happened before would be viewed as the foreplay before the climax!

“Boom!”

Shi Xiaobai's fist struck straight at Leonis's chest!

A loud impact sounded but Leonis did not even take a step back. Instead, the attacking Shi Xiaobai retreated several steps back in a pathetic manner!

This was the defensive power of Leonis!

For every action, there is an equal and opposite reaction. Therefore, during the collision of fists, Leonis was bearing the reaction from his own strength, resulting in his fist being injured. But now, he was only defending, and with Shi Xiaobai's strength alone, it did not even give him an itch!

An unassailable defense could lead any opponent into despair!

“Human, in front of This King, your strength is like a baby in a cradle!”

Leonis laughed out loud. At that moment, he needed to posture!

“Use your body to experience what is true strength!”

Leonis, who took on a punch, did so to demonstrate his unassailable defense. Of course, he would not waste time any further as his right fist punched out at the next moment!

“Lion King Punch!”

Leonis roared angrily as he punched out!

At that moment, it was as if the Transcendents had eaten stimulants. They raised their hands high and screamed at the top of their lungs!

Leonis was well known for his Lion King Punch. It was completely on a different level from the straight and honest punches from before!

This punch alone could shatter a mountain!

Shi Xiaobai's expression changed drastically as well. The swinging of the fist midway had given him a strong premonition that it was extremely dangerous. If he was hit straight on, he would probably be reduced to smithereens even if his physical strength was far superior to others!

Shi Xiaobai did not dare to push the boundaries as he used his fastest speed to retreat!

The ability to sense danger has always been one of the things Shi Xiaobai greatly relied on to be able to lead such a coquettish and high-spirited life!

Shi Xiaobai crazily took a few hundred steps back, and nearly reached the boundary of the arena. As for Leonis's punch, it finally reached out completely!

“Roar!”

A lion's angry roar resounded throughout the world!

The sound of wind, screams and all dms seemed to vanish at that moment!

A majestic force blasted out from Leonis's fist through the heavens and earth. Even sound was devoured!

As the winds and clouds stirred, the sky suddenly turned dark at that instant. A massive lion phantom appeared in the sky as it ran through the sky!

The lion phantom was truly massive and amazing. As it dashed forward, it felt like it was inundating the entire arena!

A lion's roar resounded through the skies!

Even the protective shields of the arena were shattered as the audience stands tore. A number of audience were affected by the fallout, exploding into pieces suddenly!

Shi Xiaobai could not avoid it!

This was absolute power. And it had been seven years since Leonis used the Lion King Punch, and at this moment, Leonis's power was far greater than before. It exceeded the imaginations of the Transcendents!

As the lion's roar gradually dissipated, the stirred clouds and wind gradually calmed down. However, the entire arena was left in ruins. There were piles of rubble as sand blew through the area like a bleak and desolate hell.

And on the arena, Shi Xiaobai's figure had already disappeared.

There were dozens of Transcendents in the audience stands that were reduced to smithereens as a result of the fallout. The human was probably completely destroyed!

The Transcendents were still reeling in shock, thankful that they were not hit by the fallout, but they also felt sad for the innocent victims of their kind.

"King Leonis is much stronger than seven years ago. The power of his one punch is unfathomable."

"Heavens, we have sacrificed dozens of our kind."

"King Leonis, don't use the Lion King Punch again!"

At that moment, the Transcendents were traumatized by Leonis's Lion King Punch.

Leonis laughed. It was rare for him to feel the joy of victory and the sense of achievement. It had to be said that the human was

truly formidable to give him such great pressure, forcing him to use his killer move, Lion King Punch.

However, even if the Transcendents pleaded for him to use the Lion King Punch again, he could no longer use it. This was because the cost of using such a killer move was tremendous. He needed to rest for at least half an hour before he could use it again. If he could continuously use it, he would have fulfilled his ambitions of conquering the world.

Furthermore, he did not need to use the Lion King Punch again.

Because the human was definitely dead!

Furthermore, it was definite that he had died a tragic death, turning to dust that filled the sky!

There would not be any surprises!

“Shi Xiaobai!”

“Boss Shi Xiaobai!”

“Benefactor Shi Xiaobai!”

Three voices sounded from the audience stands!

Pulp Farmer and company could not believe that Shi Xiaobai would die just like that!

It was impossible for Shi Xiaobai to die this easily!

At this moment, there was a commotion from a pile of rubble as a rock was sent flying into the air.

Shi Xiaobai obviously had not died!

“This King might die one day, but it would definitely not be today. And the person to finish This King will definitely not be you!”

A somewhat exhausted voice came out from the rubble.

A figure stood up from the desolate land.

He looked somewhat miserable. His black-and-white hair were disheveled like a bird's nest. His body was covered in dust, and his clothes were quite tattered. There were patches of blood flowing down his skin.

He was injured, but he was still alive!

Leonis's eyes constricted violently. This human had managed to withstand his Lion King Punch and could still manage to stand up?



Wasn't this a fucking unkillable cockroach?

Shi Xiaobai patted the dust from his body and said as if nothing had happened, "You have been naughty. This King is somewhat angry."

The audience stood up once again. This time, their faces were more solemn than ever before.

With the human having managed to withstand the punch, what needed to be done to keep the human down?

Such an indestructible cockroach was too shameless!

Leonis's face turned extremely ugly as well as his right fist needed to rest. If his Lion King Punch had failed to finish the human, what could he do next?

Suddenly, Leonis thought of something and sneered, "Human, your tenacity and endurance has indeed given This King a huge surprise, but what can you do? Even if This King stands here to let you beat me for a day and night, you would never win. Do you understand? This King has always been in an invincible state, as for you, you are just struggling. The next Lion King Punch will definitely finish you!"

Leonis's words made all the eyes of the Transcendents light up once again!

That's right. The human could not break through Leonis's defenses, so Leonis was always in an invincible state!

No matter what the human did, it would all be a meaningless struggle!

Leonis is undefeatable!

A derisive smile suffused from Shi Xiaobai's mouth as he surveyed the crowd and said with a sneer, "Foolish Transcendents, none of you know anything about strength!"

Undefeatable?

Such a word does not exist!

...

## Chapter 371: What Is He Trying To Do?

---

The power of the Lion King Punch was horrifying, but Shi Xiaobai possessed a keen sense of danger. Furthermore, he believed in his intuition greatly. With his Crab Steps at the Crest of Perfection having improved again, his opportune reaction and stunning speed allowed him to escape to the periphery of the Lion King Punch's damage area.

The periphery damage from the Lion King Punch was like the tail of a hurricane. It caused Shi Xiaobai to be injured, tearing his clothes, reducing him to a wretched state, but thankfully, his physical toughness was no longer like before. The punch had only inflicted him with minor injuries.

If any of the three points—the sense of danger, the speed at escaping and his physical toughness—was lacking, Shi Xiaobai would definitely have been killed there and then. If it were Pulp Farmer or any of the rest, they would have been instantly killed.

This was the terror of Leonis!

Of course, in the eyes of the Transcendents, Shi Xiaobai was the one who was truly terrifying. In the clash of fists, Leonis had been forced to stand down in humiliation. And he was able to survive Leonis's killer move, to the point of being able to stand there firmly.

This human had the tenacity of a cockroach. He felt unfathomable to the Transcendents, giving them doubtful

thoughts like “We’re doomed. Can King Leonis really smack down the human?”

However, Leonis remained optimistic with the present situation.

Although Leonis had to rest for half an hour after using the Lion King Punch in order to use it again, he was thankful that the human’s offensive strength was still highly disparate from Leonis’s even if he were very tenacious!

That human could not shake Leonis’s defense!

Leonis’s defense was unassailable. This made him invincible!

Therefore, Leonis’s victory was inevitable. It was only a matter of time!

The Transcendents had such thoughts in mind, while Leonis had the same confidence in himself. Even Pulp Farmer and company had grim looks on their faces. They were unable to avoid the unavoidable question.

The reason why no trial-taker was able to defeat the enhanced Leonis after Xu Taibai was because Leonis’s defence had been enhanced to a heaven-defying level!

However, Shi Xiaobai did not think so.

Undefeatable?

That did not exist!

Leonis said with a sneer, “Come on, human. You can still struggle for a while. Use your strongest move and see if you can make This King blink even once!”

As Leonis said, he crossed his arms across his chest, completely belittling Shi Xiaobai.

The Transcendents cheered for Leonis. Although Leonis was forced to use his defense to shamelessly achieve a win, the only thing that mattered was to win the battle. Now, they were united against an external force!

Shi Xiaobai shook his head with a laugh.

This bunch of idiots that were dominated by thoughts of racial superiority did not understand a thing about power.

He couldn't break through Leonis's defense?

There would be no surprise to this battle?

“This King never needs surprises, because This King will create miracles!”

Shi Xiaobai gradually clenched his right fist as wind began to howl. His body suddenly moved as he moved at a speed that left no time for one to cover one's ears!

Everyone stared with widened eyes, afraid that they would miss the next scene.

What was the human's limit?

The next move he used was probably his strongest move. Was it able to shake Leonis's defense?

The Transcendents felt their hearts tighten!

However, the next scene left them somewhat flabbergasted!

Because the extremely fast Shi Xiaobai charged straight in front of Leonis before suddenly winding away!

Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai did not stop. His body was as fast as lightning, as though he was traversing the entire arena!

The sound of wind whistled as constantly blinking figures dazzled everyone. However, every time it approached Leonis, it would suddenly change directions. He reached every corner of the arena but did not attack throughout this process, as though he did not plan on attacking at all.

“What is the human trying to do?”

“He probably knows he won’t be able to cause King Leonis to move, so he plans on running all around and suddenly sneak in an attack.”

“Fool, King Leonis’s physical defense is solely a result of his strong body. As long he stands there, he is like an unshakable mountain. Even if the human sneaks an attack, it will not cause any harm to King Leonis even if he were sleeping!”

“Haha, this human is really at the end of the rope!”

“Keep running, no matter how much you run, it will be useless. King Leonis can take a nap during this time!”

The Transcendents were delighted. Even though the human did not choose to attack straight on but instead darted randomly around the arena, it was enough proof that he did not have the confidence to tear through Leonis’s defenses. All he could do was a comical struggle!

Pulp Farmer and company did not think so because they understood Shi Xiaobai well. Shi Xiaobai was not a despicable person who would look for an opportunity to sneak an attack. He definitely had his reasons for his actions!

What was his intent?

Feng Yuanlin wondered out aloud, “What is Boss Shi Xiaobai up to? Can the two of you tell?”

Pulp Farmer shook his head and said, “No, I can’t, but it probably has nothing to do with a sneak attack. Leonis’s defense is pure physical defense. No matter how well timed the attack is, it will be useless. With Shi Xiaobai’s intelligence, he should know that.”

Liu Yu shrugged and said, “Don’t try guessing Benefactor Shi Xiaobai’s thoughts!”

The three could not figure out Shi Xiaobai’s intent.

Leonis was confident that he had seen through Shi Xiaobai’s intentions as he said with a sneer, “Foolish human, if you think that there would be any effect by attacking when This King is relaxed, keep struggling then. This King will sleep for a while.”

After Leonis said that, he closed his eyes!

In the previous tournament, Moya had once used the advantage of his speed to dart around the arena and grasp the moment when Leonis relaxed, hoping to succeed in his attack.

Such a common trick was something that did not surprise Leonis. After all, against his unassailable defense and invincible strength, the miserable weaklings could only grasp futilely at slim hopes!

But by doing so, what use was there?



Leonis sneered in his heart. It was just a foolish struggle!

Now, all he had to do was wait to see for how long the human would struggle!

Now, he had plenty of patience.

Shi Xiaobai was so fast that his figure could not be seen, but he was constantly darting through the arena, with no pattern to his whereabouts. It was completely erratic, but whenever he approached Leonis, he would deliberately avoid him, and did not linger around Leonis. This made the Transcendents begin to suspect if he really was thinking of sneaking in an attack.

When would this human's attack happen?

Three minutes later?

Five minutes later?

Ten minutes later?

The outcome left everyone extremely speechless. For thirty minutes, the human was scurrying around the entire arena!

What is he trying to do?

What is he waiting for?

For a half an hour, the audience only saw a dazzling figure constantly moving. It was so dazzling that it hurt the eyes.

Fuck, it was tiring just watching this, so how could the human that kept maintaining such a fast speed not be tired?

Leonis opened his eyes and to be honest, he was tired waiting as well.

He felt like he had been played for a fool.

This human apparently was out of tricks. He was simply buying time!

“Let This King end this struggle of a weakling!”

Leonis sneered as he gradually bent his right arm and clenched his fist!

Thirty minutes had passed.

Leonis could use his Lion King Punch a second time!

# Chapter 372: The Hard To Beat Leonis

---

From seeing the speedy figure that could not be discerned darting through the arena, they initially found it dazzling and cool, but after some time, it felt like watching a boring farce.

There were even some members of the audience who were worried that they would miss an interesting scene, resulting in them to stare for the entire thirty minutes. Their eyes were sore, with ten thousand fucks flying across their minds.

What was the human trying to do? He was at the end of the rope so all he could do was buy time?

The audience was already booing, urging Leonis to quickly finish the boring struggle.

Leonis had closed his eyes and pretended to nap for thirty minutes until the negative effects of the first Lion King Punch disappeared. Finally, he opened his eyes!

It was time to bring an end to the boring fight.

Against his unassailable defense, the arrogant human could only reflect over his powerlessness and put up meaningless struggle. How laughable it was!

Thirty minutes of his time had been wasted, so the human would have to pay for it with his life!

Leonis bent his right arm and clenched his fist, in preparation to punch out!

This punch was none other than the Lion King Punch!

When the Transcendents saw Leonis's actions, their eyes gradually lit up!

Most of the audience stood up at that moment as they raised their arms while cheering. It was an extremely lucky day to be able to watch Leonis's killer move twice in a single day.

Of course, there were a number of audience who jumped and fled in another direction because the spot where they were was where Leonis was punching towards!

Previously, the scene of Lion King Punch's aftermath having killed dozens of Transcendents was still fresh on their minds. Against mortal danger, these members of the audience naturally did not have any mood to marvel at the sight. All they could think of was to flee!

Leonis was in no hurry to punch out. He waited for the audience to retreat, and he was also waiting for the moment to punch out.

At this moment, the human was still darting around erratically, with no pattern at all. Even though he had already taken action to punch out, the human still dared to enter a region close to him.

The human was truly irritating and he was courting his own death!

Leonis observed for a moment and realized that the human dared to come within a hundred meters of him. Immediately, he could not help but sneer.

The audience were already chanting in unison.

“Lion King Punch! Lion King Punch! Lion King Punch!”

The thirty minutes of boring waiting had been for this moment!

It's time to punch, King Leonis!

Leonis still did not punch out. This time he was extremely patient, like a beast lying in wait. He was waiting for the best moment to pounce at his prey.

The human had been jumping for too long, so this punch needed to kill him!

As the audience sensed the terrifying killing intent from Leonis, they gradually fell silent and held their breaths.

The human was still darting around rampantly, as though he did not sense the killing intent and that he was facing grave danger. He

still dared to suddenly turn away in front of Leonis!

Leonis was waiting for that moment!

As for the human, he appeared to constantly provided opportunities for Leonis!

What was going on?

“No matter what tricks you are playing, in front of absolute strength, it’s all a waste of time!”

Leonis sneered in his heart as he became extremely concentrated.

The human’s speed was really very fast. Having maintained this speed for thirty minutes, the human had surprised him as well. However, if that was the only thing he was capable of, death was his final outcome after the thirty minutes!

“It’s now. Go to hell!”

Suddenly, Leonis opened his eyes wide and the strength that had gathered in his fist came smashing forward!

At that instant, Shi Xiaobai, who had been darting around randomly, appeared fifty meters in front of Leonis!

This was within the death zone. No matter how fast the human was, there was no way to escape the blow at that distance!

The punch was sure to kill!

“Roar!”

A deafening roar resounded through the world as a massive lion phantom that shrouded the entire arena appeared from Leonis's fist that punched at Shi Xiaobai!

The massive lion phantom charged in the sky, tearing through the clouds and wind, causing a layer of stone to lift off, sending rubble swirling in the sky!

Pulp Farmer and company anxiously shouted, “Quickly dodge!”

Dodging might be too late.

However, if he did not dodge, he would no doubt be killed!

Suddenly, Leonis's pupils constricted as though he had seen an incredulous scene.

Keen-eyed members of the audience revealed looks of shock!

They saw that the figure that was constantly darting around

randomly suddenly come to a stop when Leonis punched out. He stopped fifty meters in front of where Leonis was!

It was where the massive lion phantom's jaws were about to reach!

As for the human, his pose was somewhat odd. He had his fist clenched, and his right arm was nearly straightened, as though he has just finished a punch!

What was going on?

Was this human sending himself to death?

At that moment, Liu Yu's eyes suddenly lit up and shouted, "No, it's that move!"

That move?

Which move?

Liu Yu did not know what that move was called either, but the pose Shi Xiaobai was currently in was one he had previously seen before. Furthermore, he had a deep impression of it. It was impossible to forget it!

And at that moment, the massive lion phantom was right in front of Shi Xiaobai!



Leonis laughed maniacally, “It’s time to die in pieces!”

To be struck by the Lion King Punch head on?

The human was already a corpse!

The massive lion phantom’s jaws devoured Shi Xiaobai at that instant!

“Boom!”

A deafening explosion resounded!

At the instant the massive lion phantom touched Shi Xiaobai’s fist, it suddenly exploded like a pricked balloon!

The straight arm and fist looked like a spear at that instant!

Leonis was astonished for in the next second, he suddenly felt an immense amount of energy that he found irresistible surge at him, inundating him!

As he faced the immense power, his apprehensive instinct made him want to crazily dodge, but he could not move a step!

What was this power?

“Bang!”

At the instant the massive lion phantom shattered like ruptured bubbles, the sound of the impact resounded. Leonis, who had been standing in his spot motionless, suddenly was lifted up by an unknown power, as he flew obliquely towards the sky!

The speed at which Leonis flew out was as fast as lightning. The audience behind Leonis felt a gust of wind blow before they saw a figure flying past their heads into the sky, towards the far edge of the firmaments.

Did Leonis ascend into the heavens as an immortal?

No, Leonis...was sent flying!

“What had just happened?”

The Transcendents were dumbfounded. Even when Leonis’s figure flew to the ends of their vision, transforming into a sparkling point of light they were still not able to recover from their shock.

It should have been Leonis dealing a fatal blow.

Why did the Lion King Punch’s power suddenly shatter, causing Leonis to fly so far away that it was immeasurable.

The answer could only come from that human.

Having moved for thirty minutes, the human only came to stop when Leonis used his Lion King Punch. What did he do when he stretched his fist out?

What did Shi Xiaobai do?

The answer was obvious. He had used the Turtle-speed Divine Punch that had gathered strength for thirty minutes!

However, this punch was no ordinary Turtle-speed Divine Punch.

From a long time ago, Shi Xiaobai had never used the Turtle-speed Divine Punch in actual combat because the extreme slowness of the Turtle-speed Divine Punch made it too ‘rigid’!

However, Shi Xiaobai was not content with this. After pondering for a long time, he finally thought of a combat method that suited the Turtle-speed Divine Punch.

He could gather strength by moving around haphazardly and finally come to a stop when he could punch out!

This was the new move Shi Xiaobai had thought of.

It was named as the—Cranky Turtle Divine Punch!

Shi Xiaobai deliberately waited for Leonis to be able to use his second Lion King Punch before he punched out his Cranky Turtle Divine Punch!

The outcome did not surprise Shi Xiaobai!

Invincible strength?

Unassailable defense?

The irresistible Lion King Punch?

They were nothing in front of the Cranky Turtle Divine Punch that had gathered power for thirty minutes!

“This King previously said that none of you know anything about strength!”

Shi Xiaobai sneered once again.

This time, when he said this, there was total silence. No one dared to refute him.

The Transcendents muttered in disbelief, “He lost? King Leonis lost?”

Pulp Farmer and company were dumbfounded as well, “He won? Shi Xiaobai had defeated Leonis who has not been defeated for millennia?”

Leonis, who had disappeared at the ends of the sky like a shooting star, had probably lost. He should have lost his ability to continue fighting, right?

“Roar!”

At this moment, an angry roar resounded from very far away!

The roar was extremely terrifying as it pierced the heaven and earth. Even from afar, people could clearly sense the anger and killing intent from the roar.

A few elderly Transcendents were scared to death by the roar when their hearts stopped from the shock!

The Transcendents’ dull eyes lit up once again.

The voice was very familiar!

It was King Leonis’s roar!

King Leonis had yet to collapse!

Liu Yu and Feng Yuanlin looked at each other.

Pulp Farmer said with a wry smile, “Shi Xiaobai hasn’t won. Have the both of you forgotten? Leonis...still has a fourth form!”

...

# Chapter 373: Leonis Who Lost His Reason

---

The Turtle-speed Divine Punch which had gathered strength for half an hour, combined with the present toughness of Shi Xiaobai's right arm made the power of that single punch far exceed the one that had shattered the diamond monster back at Dragon Mountain Valley.

Back in Dragon Mountain Valley, the punch had not only shattered the diamond monster, it had even leveled a rather large mountain behind it. Therefore, the power of the present punch could only be described as horrifying.

However, when Shi Xiaobai produced the punch, he had deliberately aimed at an upwards angle, so it did not directly hit Leonis.

This was because if the power of his punch blasted straight forward, the audience stands in front of Shi Xiaobai would be reduced to ruins, and all the Transcendents sitting there would be killed!

Although Shi Xiaobai did not like the race who felt a sense of superiority, he did not want to go as far as killing the innocent and begin a massacre.

Therefore, Leonis only withstood the periphery blow of the punch. This was also the reason why Leonis was sent flying into the air. Furthermore, this punch had crushed the force that came from the Lion King Punch before hitting Leonis!

Nevertheless, Leonis was still sent flying far into the distance till he disappeared at the ends of the sky. It was obvious how powerful the punch was.

If Shi Xiaobai had used Cranky Turtle Divine Punch on Leonis before he used the Lion King Punch and in a head on strike, Leonis, who had a so-called 'unassailable' defense, would probably be instantly reduced to ash!

This was the power of the Cranky Turtle Divine Punch. Having gathered power for thirty minutes, its limitation was exaggerated, but its power was beyond imagination!

However, Shi Xiaobai still held back because he was different from Leonis. He would not sacrifice hundreds of innocent lives just for the victory of a duel.

Therefore, this punch did not completely defeat Leonis.

The angry roar from the distance had already illustrated this point.

Shi Xiaobai was not greatly surprised by this, nor was he regretting his 'benevolence'. He only cast his eyes into the distance as he calmly waited for the furious Leonis to return.

If he could send Leonis flying once, he definitely could send him flying a second time.



In the audience, Pulp Farmer and company were having heavy expressions.

This was because Pulp Farmer's words had given the rest a rude awakening.

“Leonis still has a fourth form!”

Pulp Farmer said with a sigh, “Leonis has always been hiding it from the Transcendents, using the fourth form as his final trump card. Even the information banks regarding Leonis does not detail his fourth form much. The reason being him only using his fourth form once historically, and it was against Xu Taibai! However, since the assessment program enhanced his strength, Leonis has never ever used his fourth form!”

Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu immediately recalled the brief sentence that summarized all the information—“Xu Taibai forced Leonis into his fourth form, and had no choice but to use all his strength to slay him!”

Few people knew about Leonis's fourth form because the only person who knew, Xu Taibai, did not detail Leonis's fourth form. And after Leonis had his strength enhanced, no trial-taker had managed to force Leonis into this fourth form!

But at this moment, Leonis had been sent flying in his third form. Then, the answer to what the angry him would do was already out!

A roar filled with killing intent resounded throughout the world. It came from afar and was extremely frightening. Many elderly Transcendents in the city were literally frightened to death from it, while children and babies cried out incessantly.

Suddenly, the ground began to shake violently!

“An earthquake?”

The ground was shaking, as if there was an earthquake!

At that moment, a loud rumbling bang was heard!

It sounded like a massive object was heavily pounding the ground!

The violent shaking the of the ground grew in intensity, as though it was trembling. The audience could no longer sit still as they began to depart amid screams.

At this moment, someone exclaimed.

“Quick, look there! What’s that?”

At the end of the horizon, there was a massive black shadow that looked like a black mountain.

On closer look, it was a humanoid figure, an incredibly massive gargantuan that was several hundred meters tall, as though it was a pillar that held up the skies!

The gargantuan was made of scarlet flesh, and there were blood vessels that were constantly squirming like pythons. Black gasses lingered around it, as though the figure was covered in a layer of black smoke!

And most striking of all, despite the gargantuan's head was made of flesh and blood, it did not have any eyes at all. There was a layer of black smoke around it, but from the contours, one could tell that it was the massive lion head!

“That is...King Leonis?”

At that moment, all the Transcendents remembered the massive gargantuan that guarded the city gate. He was brought by Leonis into the city from outside on a particular day.

The gargantuan looked terrifying, but he was very respectful to the Transcendents. He claimed to be a mixed child of the Transcendents and the Gargantuans, so he was treated with contempt and belittlement.

But at this moment, Leonis looked extremely similar to the gargantuan. They were both several hundred meters tall, and they were covered in bloody flesh. However, Leonis was covered in a layer of strange black gases, making him look terrifying!

At this moment, the massive Leonis raised his right foot and took a step forward onto the ground!

This step was as if an entire mountain had been lifted off the ground!

“Boom!”

Leonis’s foot landed as another loud rumble resounded. The ground shook violently once again!

So it was not an earthquake, but a footstep of Leonis!

And this single step instantly allowed him to traverse more than a kilometer. Without a doubt, Leonis was heading towards the arena!

“Ah!”

There were Transcendents in audience screaming because Leonis was walking into the city. With his footstep, he had instantly flattened a large building to rubble!

If there was anyone inside the building, the person would probably be flatten into a meat pancake!

“Roar!”

Leonis roared, and the closer the distance, the more one could sense the horrifying killing intent and boiling rage!

Leonis was proceeding forward, and the frequency at which he moved his feet was not fast, but every step he took traversed more than a kilometer. Every step he took caused the ground to quake, destroying a large zone of buildings, killing several innocent people.

However, Leonis remained indifferent, as though his rage had made him lose his reason.

The audience was already screaming for Leonis to stop, lamenting the fact that their houses had been crushed to rubble.

Leonis clearly would not stop. Instead, he was approaching the arena at a faster speed!

When Leonis came close, the squirming flesh on his body looked gross and terrifying. The black smoke that lingered around him was the nasty smell of rotting corpses!

Leonis's speed was too fast. From the distant horizon to the arena, he used less than ten seconds. A lot of the buildings in the city had been destroyed. There were screams and cries that filled the city.

And when Leonis's massive body was just one step away from the

arena, everyone finally realized a serious problem.

Leonis's goal was clearly Shi Xiaobai, who was in the arena.

But at this moment, how was he to enter the arena with his massive body?

No, it should be said, with Leonis having lost his reason, how would he enter the arena?

“Quick, quickly run!”

“Leonis has gone mad. Quickly run!”

“No, don't!”

The audience in the audience seats that were closest to Leonis had drastic changes in expression as they fled in panic while screaming!

This was because at that moment, Leonis's mountain-like foot was lifted in mid-air, and about to crush down on the audience!

The distance between them and death was just a step away!

...

# Chapter 374: The Story Behind The Sword

---

When Moya entered his third form, he would lose his reason, leaving behind only his killing instinct. He could only use his anger and hatred to support his basic movements. As for Leonis, he was stronger, so he was able to maintain his consciousness in his third form.

However, after Leonis entered his fourth form, he clearly was not able to maintain his reason. His eyes were only filled with killing intent and rage. He only had one enemy in mind, and everything else was an existence that apparently did not matter to him.

At that moment, he was not the king of the Transcendents, but an angered avenger.

All the obstacles to his revenge would be destroyed, be it the ice-cold buildings or the warm lives. There was no difference to them being alien foreigners or familiar people of the same race!

It was the same with the wall and the audience stands connected to it that separated him from the wretched human!

Leonis lifted his foot and was prepared to land it, regardless of the number of lives screaming underneath it.

The northern wing of the audience stands looked up and saw a gigantic shadow filling the sky. The black smoke that lingered emitted a repugnant stench, and the flesh beneath the foot was squirming. Boils bulged from the skin, their outlines resembling

featureless faces.

Gross and terror, but most people felt fear. Because at that moment, the gigantic black shadow was about to crush down over them, it was like a mountain falling from the sky!

Death was just a footstep away from them. The Transcendents found it unbelievable that their king would disregard their lives as they were his subjects, but the reality of death approaching made them squeeze as they attempted to flee!

However, there were only two entrances to the audience stands. There were still people who failed to escape.

“No, my liege, open your eyes and look at your people beneath your foot!”

“It’s useless. King Leonis has gone mad. All he wants now is to kill that human. In his eyes, we are just ants crawling on the ground!”

“If this goes on, before the human dies, Transcendence would first be destroyed by King Leonis!”

“Heavens, who can stop him? Bravehearts? Where are our Bravehearts!?”

At that moment, the Transcendents suddenly were reminded of their Bravehearts. Weren’t Bravehearts the ones to step up and



protect the city in times of danger, existences that protected their people?

However, when they cast their pleading eyes at the Bravehearts, it was depressing to realize that Moya was already unconscious, while the remaining seven Bravehearts were slumped on the other side of the audience stands in shock.

Fairy tales were just a lie. Bravehearts would not stand up at the moment of danger because compared to the lives of others, the Bravehearts cared more about their own lives!

At that moment, other than frantically running away, as well as praying that Leonis would come to his senses at the final moment, there was no other option.

Despair did not mean that there wasn't any hope, but the hope was so slim that you no longer had the courage to believe in it. Then, it was as despairing as well.

At this moment, the sky was shrouded in such a despair.

But, at that instant, a golden beam of light suddenly shot up into the sky, penetrating the gloomy cloud of despair.

“What’s that?”

The Transcendents, who were definitely unable to evacuate in time, were hugging their heads waiting for their deaths opened

their eyes in shock.

In the other three sides of the audience stands, they could only helplessly stare with widened eyes at the foot that was about to land.

That beautiful golden light rose up from the ground, like a gigantic golden sword that tore through more than a kilometer!

The golden sword's blade stabbed into the gigantic flesh foot that was about to land on the audience stands!

And on the other end of the golden sword's hilt, it was that young human with black and silver hair!

The youth was holding a normal-sized black sword with both his hands. His body was shrouded in a golden light, as though he was a god that descended to the mortal world.

The black sword in the youth's hands was the hilt to the gigantic golden sword!

The youth who had been using his fists in his fighting was actually a swordsman?

What was this sword with the golden sword projection that penetrated the heavens and earth?

Why did he suddenly use such an attack at this moment. Was he saving them who belittled humans all this while?

At that moment, the Transcendents had all kinds of questions in their minds.

But the answer they wanted to know the most was whether the sword attack was able to block Leonis's foot.

“Boom!”

An explosive blast sounded as an incredulous scene happened before everyone's eyes.

The gigantic golden sword projection tore right through Leonis's right foot. As Leonis roared in pain, his massive body fell backwards. It was like a wall hundreds of meter tall was collapsing!

“Bang!”

A deafening boom from the impact echoed as Leonis crashed to the ground. Countless buildings were crushed as tremors were felt through the land. It was as if the audience stands bounced up as several people fell to the ground after not being able to get their footing. However, they stood as fast as possible while turning their heads in disbelief.

The black smoke in the sky had already vanished. Replacing it was a resplendent golden glow, glowing alongside the sun's

beaming rays.

The sword attack had managed to send the gigantic Leonis to the ground!

The sword attack had saved the Transcendents that were about to die under the foot of Leonis!

“Roar!”

An angry roar resounded!

Everyone’s faces changed drastically.

Leonis, in his fourth form, obviously would not be so easily defeated. The angry roar nearly tore through the eardrums of everyone!

The ground trembled once again, at an intensity higher than before.

The fallen Leonis was about to stand up once again!

“Head towards the south.”

A calm voice suddenly resounded, like a clock that sounded in the dead of the night.

The youth who had spoken suddenly walked towards the north with sword in hand.

The spectators in the audience stands were dazed for a moment before finally understanding the meaning of his sentence.

The fallen Leonis was about to stand up again. The northern side where Leonis was was a death zone like hell.

The youth who was at the greatest risk should have fled to the south, but at this moment, he was heading to the north with sword in hand.

It was because, he was leaving the safest spot to them!

“Why?”

Why was the one that nearly brought death was not the notorious Infernal King, but King Leonis they thought of as king?

Why was the person standing forward to save them not one of their Bravehearts, but the human that they had been treating with contempt?

The world's greatest irony could not be any better than this.

However, against death, the arrogant Transcendents did not

make any snide remarks about the irony. Instead, they noisily escaped.

The sword attack had managed to buy them enough time to escape!

But at this moment, the sword-wielding youth, who was walking outside of the arena, stumbled. He nearly fell to the ground but managed to stabilize his body with his sword!

Upon seeing this scene, the Transcendents focused their eyes and saw that the youth's face was extremely pale!

They suddenly realized something.

Every form of the Transcendents enhanced the strength of the previous form by several times. Leonis, in his third form, was already extremely powerful, so it was obvious how terrifyingly mighty his fourth form was.

Then, how was the human able to use a single sword attack to send Leonis to the ground?

The sword attack he used must have made him pay a certain price!

# Chapter 375: Even A Fly Wanted To Bite A Piece Of Meat From A Lion

---

For Shi Xiaobai to be able to strike down Leonis in his fourth form, it was obvious that he did not use any ordinary sword technique. It was a fake Excalibur sword technique that Shi Xiaobai created.

This technique used the Turtle-speed Divine Punch's method of compressing power as well as the idea of how all the energy is used at an instant from One Second Shura. Together with the power of his Sword Truth, Excalibur, it resulted in the creation of this technique.

Shi Xiaobai had previously used it against Heartless in the fourth level as well as when the black-robed blood figure attacked Sunless in the fifth level. Both times, he was emptied of all his energy.

Therefore, this sword technique could be called 'One Sword Shura'. The destructive power of the technique was extremely powerful, but the price was very high. It was a single strike that placed everything at stake for victory!

During the crisis, Shi Xiaobai did not hesitate. He immediately used such a technique to prevent Leonis from crushing to death hundreds of spectators.

He had succeeded. Leonis's right foot was penetrated, causing his massive body to crush to the ground.

However, he had failed as well. This was because his technique had failed to win him victory. Leonis's roars were still constantly resounding and he would soon get back up!

Even after using his most explosive technique, Shi Xiaobai had still failed to defeat Leonis in his fourth form!

And having his energy emptied caused his vision to go into a blur.

The consecutive battles with the use of this technique finally depleted Shi Xiaobai of his stamina!

But even in such an abject state!

Even when the present enemy was so powerful!

Shi Xiaobai still refused to flee towards the south. Instead, he with absolute determination headed towards the north where Leonis was!

It was not his foolish kindness or sense of justice that made him have to save the Transcendents who had once mocked and despised humans.

But it was his responsibility and the role he had played that made Shi Xiaobai make such a choice.



How tragic was it for subjects to die under the foot of their king?

How pitiful and hateful was it for a king to trample his subjects to death?

It was impossible for Shi Xiaobai to ignore such a tragedy from happening.

Especially when the tragedy was partly due to his actions.

“A devil created by This King shall be finished personally by This King.”

With this thought in mind, Shi Xiaobai approached Leonis with sword in hand.

However, the energy depletion made his mind temporarily dizzy. While walking, he stumbled and nearly fell!

Shi Xiaobai hurriedly used his sword to support his body.

But at that moment, the angry roar from Leonis resounded in his ears once again.

The angry roar was in close proximity from the sky.

Leonis had stood back up again!

Shi Xiaobai looked up with great difficulty as his vision was somewhat blurry.

Now, he needed to rest.

But the cold reality would not give him any time!

Leonis's furious and hateful eyes were like two pairs of burning suns glaring down at Shi Xiaobai, as though it would consume him in their flames.

But at this moment, the audience in the northern wing had already been evacuated. Shi Xiaobai's attack had managed to buy them enough time to escape. It was equivalent to having saved their lives.

The audience in the other three wings did not dare to stay behind as they quickly evacuated.

The noisy din of people escaping bustled, as they headed towards the south, which was the farthest point from Leonis.

However, there were a small group of Transcendents that stopped when Shi Xiaobai stumbled.

Shouts like these resounded from the stands.

“Run, human! The lofty Transcendents do not need your saving!”

“I admit, we admit, humans are a great race! Run, run to the east or west. Run out of Transcendence! There’s no need to buy us any more time!”

“Not for anything else, but just from that single strike of yours, you are the Braveheart in my heart! Human, you must live on. In this world, there is no lack of people who live hypocritically, but there is a lack of kind and courageous Bravehearts like you!”

“ ... ”

At that moment, people were moved.

Regardless of the race or nationality, there was no lack of brainless flammers, but there was definitely a lack of normal people with the correct values.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised as a smile suffused across his lips.

At that moment, three figures appeared beside Shi Xiaobai.

“With your character, it’s impossible for you to run. But your present situation is too terrible. You are in need of rest.”

Pulp Farmer said softly, “So, Shi Xiaobai, rest for a moment. The three of us will buy you enough time.”

Shi Xiaobai dazed over slightly. He shook his head and said, “There’s no need. Go first. Leonis is presently very dangerous.”

Feng Yuanlin shrugged his shoulders and said, “Boss Shi Xiaobai, the three of us can’t even beat Moya in his second form, but buying you a bit of time is still possible for us. Don’t forget that we still have the exit command as a way to ensure our survival. For us to reach the seventh level and meet the figures the legends tell of the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament, we are already very satisfied. So even if we exit now, we would not feel any sense of regret. There’s no need to worry about our safety.”

Liu Yu shook his whisk and said, “Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, it is an unspeakable dream for so many trial-takers to fight Leonis, so this isn’t for you, but for ourselves. Speak no further, just silently wait here!”

After Liu Yu said this, Leonis’s angry roar resounded once again. This time, Leonis did not raise his foot again. Instead, he reached out both his hands to grab the walls of the stadium. He was planning on ripping them out!

“Shi Xiaobai, these Transcendents are just virtual existences. Next month, they will reappear during the refresh. I believe you should know this point.”

Pulp Farmer said in a serious voice, “But you still insist on using

all your strength to stop Leonis's foot. Regardless of the reason, or if others would think that what you did was very foolish, you are the person I respect most from this very moment. Shi Xiaobai, you are indeed a remarkable person.”

After Pulp Farmer said this, he raised his spear and charged forward. His right arm had been severely injured, so he could only use his left arm to carry his spear.

He was not a ‘monster’ like Shi Xiaobai, who could adapt to the unfamiliar usage of his left hand, but he even so, he would not step back at this very moment!

Pulp Farmer and company charged towards Leonis!

Shi Xiaobai sighed as a resolute look appeared in his eyes.

He could not stop Pulp Farmer and company. The only thing he could do was quickly recover his stamina!

“Boom!”

A loud tearing sound resounded as the wall of the audience stands was ripped apart by Leonis with his bare hands. It was obvious how terrifying his strength was!

Rubble fell like pouring rain!

Leonis raised his left foot slightly and took a step into the arena!

Pulp Farmer and company charged at Leonis while facing the rubble.

They had no way of persuading Shi Xiaobai to escape, but they could buy him time to rest, even if it were just a second.

Pulp Farmer raised his spear with his left hand. His actions were stiff, but still the strike was extremely domineering!

“Tyrant Spear!”

A cold beam appeared as the spear thrust out like a dragon. Pulp Farmer leaped high into the sky as he stabbed into Leonis’s abdomen!

Feng Yuanlin’s hands each held a gigantic shield as he crashed into Leonis’s shin!

Liu Yu waved his whisk as hundreds of paper charms formed a Dao array, as they wrapped around Leonis’s thigh!

Compared to the massive Leonis, they were as small as flies!

But the Transcendents that had yet to leave and Shi Xiaobai could see how they were doing their best!

Even a fly wanted to bite a piece of meat from a lion!

What sort of race were humans?

# Chapter 376: No Next Second

---

“Roar!”

Leonis, who was attacked, roared. The three fly bites only added greater intensity to his anger!

Leonis suddenly flicked his left foot as his terrifying power immediately shattered all the charms that were clinging onto his thigh. Liu Yu suffered a backlash from the power as he spat out a mouthful of blood while taking several steps back.

Feng Yuanlin raised his shields and slammed into Leonis's shin, but felt like he had slammed into a wall. With Leonis's action, Feng Yuanlin felt like a mountain was slamming towards him!

Feng Yuanlin had no choice but to proceed as he was already in mid-air. He bit the bullet and proceeded to slam ahead, but he immediately felt the difference in strength between him and Leonis. The shin looked soft as it was made of flesh, but it was harder than divine metal upon contact!

Feng Yuanlin's eyes rolled over as he cursed. Like a rocket, he flew several kilometers back.

With spear in hand, Pulp Farmer, who had leaped by stepping on rocks, looked magnificent, but his expression changed drastically when he stabbed into Leonis's abdomen.



With a sonorous clang, the reverberations from the impact prevented him from holding the spear properly with his unfamiliar left hand. The spear plummeted to the ground.

Leonis roared as he brushed his hand towards his abdomen!

Pulp Farmer hurriedly closed his legs to accelerate his fall. Despite him dodging the brush, he failed to dodge the periphery of the force. Just the force from Leonis's palm and the collision with his abdomen resulted in a strong typhoon.

Pulp Farmer twirled in in the energy storm, and the sound of a smack in close proximity thundered. It hurt his eardrums as he flew backwards, having nearly lost his consciousness in mid-air!

To Pulp Farmer and company, they were facing an unassailable force.

But in the eyes of others, Leonis had only raised his left foot and brushed his abdomen. It was like a simple act of chasing away mosquitoes after being bitten.

But just these simple movements were not something commoners could withstand!

Pulp Farmer and company were sent flying in less than three seconds. As for Leonis, he did not even turn serious to use a single ounce of his strength.

This was Leonis in his fourth form!

“No wonder no trial-taker has been able to defeat Leonis for millennia. How can a trial-taker at the Psionic Mortal Realm be able to defeat an existence this terrifying?”

Liu Yu looked weak. At this moment, Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin had nearly lost consciousness. He was the only one who could barely stand, but even standing was extremely demanding on him, so how could he still be able to obstruct Leonis, who had managed to instantly defeat the three of them?

Liu Yu turned to look at Shi Xiaobai and gave a bitter smile. “Sorry, the three of us are too weak. We only managed to buy you three seconds. Although I hate to say this, Shi Xiaobai, it’s best you run. Or maybe you should use the exit command. That monster is not something any of us can withstand!”

“Roar!”

A deafening roar drowned Liu Yu’s words. Leonis had already taken a step into the arena. His other foot suddenly raised as he was about to crush Shi Xiaobai!

“Run!”

Liu Yu yelled.

The Transcendents in the audience stands that had not left

shouted as well.

At this moment, Leonis was impossible to defeat. Shi Xiaobai's desperate blow had only dealt a tiny damage to him, while Pulp Farmer and company failed to even buy him three seconds. Against such a terrifying existence, especially an existence that existed only to kill you, what other alternative was there other than running?

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai faced Liu Yu and revealed a warm smile that resembled the sun.

“Thank you to all of you for buying This King three seconds. The three seconds are enough.”

Liu Yu was slightly stunned as he said with a wry smile, “Why do you need to put on a front and console us. Quickly run. It will be the greatest comfort for us if nothing bad happens to you.”

Shi Xiaobai shook his head slowly.

Putting on a front?

Consoling?

He would not do such a thing. Three seconds was a very short period of time, but it was enough to determine the outcome of the battle.

In fact, buying him even one second was enough.

Because this second was enough for Shi Xiaobai to do something that would absolutely turn the tables!

Shi Xiaobai crushed the golden pill that he had just placed in his mouth!

Yes, at that moment when Leonis's foot came crashing down from above, Shi Xiaobai had doped!

The pill was named 'One Second Shura'. He was awarded three by the Absolute Choice. Previously, Shi Xiaobai had used two of them, once during the battle exchange between Gaia and Zeus, allowing him to one-shot Heartless. The second time was when he used it to protect Sunless, reducing the black-robed bloody figure into a pool of blood.

And this time, against Leonis in his fourth form, Shi Xiaobai, who had nearly expended all his energy after using Excalibur, finally consumed the last 'One Second Shura' pill.

Nearly all his little remaining energy was compressed like a sponge, squeezing out a drop of water.

It was this energy that was as tiny as a drop of water that allowed Shi Xiaobai to do an absolute counterattack!

He still had one second!

Shi Xiaobai charged forward like a beam of light and instantly jumped onto Leonis's left foot. Moving up along Leonis's left leg, he had a stunning speed that was as fast as lightning.

Killing intent gathered in Shi Xiaobai's eyes. As he ran, his eyes constantly swept the squirming flesh.

He needed to find the red line!

Finding a redness in a sea of scarlet was an extremely difficult matter.

However, Shi Xiaobai saw it. In the massive body, under the shrouding of the black smoke, in a crack of the squirming flesh, there was a very, very short red line that was about the size of a dot!

Shi Xiaobai did not hesitate as he rushed to the red line's location. He only had a short second.

Leonis realized that the target of his hatred had jumped onto his body through his left leg and was immediately even more enraged. He reached out his right hand to smack down on his enemy!

In the next second, the hateful human would be smashed into meat pulp!

But there was no next second!

In this second, Shi Xiaobai was a Shura, and also Death!

A psionic knife appeared in Shi Xiaobai's hand!

“This King hates the rich aura of darkness on your body!”

Shi Xiaobai raised his knife and stabbed at the red line that was nearly the size of a point!

This knife was called Pig Slaughtering Knife!

It was specially to kill swines that were filled with an aura of darkness!

His knife slashed downwards!

As though there was nothing obstructing it, the knife instantly sank into Leonis's flesh!

Leonis's right arm was stuck in mid-air!

“Roar!”

A loud scream filled with indignation resounded through the world!

Countless pieces of flesh and blood rained down from the sky.

As Shi Xiaobai plummeted, another figure was falling with him. It was a green-skinned dwarf with a lion head.

...

# Chapter 377: Never Took A Step Back

---

As blood rained down, the black smoke dissipated amid the sun's rays, while two figures fell from the sky.

One of them was naturally Shi Xiaobai, while the other one was surprisingly Leonis in his ordinary form. The lion-headed green-skinned dwarf did not look domineering in any way. His eyes were close, his outcome unknown.

In a second, in just one second, the entire situation changed dramatically.

A second ago, Leonis in his fourth form appeared invincible, with no one capable of stopping him.

But after one second, Leonis had been defeated!

Leonis had been defeated! It was incredulous how he had been defeated. No one saw what exactly had happened, nor could they understand what had happened!

All that was seen was the youth charging onto Leonis's body in a split second. He was seemingly holding onto a short knife, and very simply stabbed it into Leonis's body.

When comparing that tiny blade with Leonis's hundred meter tall body, it was like a tiny star in the vast night. And that lone star was sufficient to illuminate the entire night sky!



A one-shot of Leonis in his fourth form?

This unimaginable matter had really happened at that moment.

There were still Transcendents in the audience stands who were left dumbfounded. People were rendered speechless and they even forgot to breathe.

Liu Yu, who was weak, but still conscious had a face full of surprise. After a long moment of silence, he muttered to himself, “Shi Xiaobai, who are you really? By defeating Leonis, the fifth legend of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower has been born. Do you know what that signifies? Humans have never lacked geniuses, but it has lacked monsters like you. The four legendary stories happen to coincide with four ages of humanity. Does this mean that the fifth age of humanity has finally arrived? It looked like I need my master to infer on the Dao!”

After Liu Yu said this, he rested for a few seconds before heading to where Shi Xiaobai had landed. At that moment, Shi Xiaobai had fallen unconscious. From the looks of it, for him to one-shot Leonis, he must have paid an extremely high price.

And on the other side, the Transcendents that were still around came to the arena, immediately heading for Leonis.

“He’s still breathing!”

“He’s alive, King Leonis is still alive!”

“Quick, quickly get a doctor!”

Even though Leonis was a mixed child of the Transcendents and the lion-headed race, and even if he had just lost his reason and destroyed most of the city, nearly trampling to death hundreds if not thousands of Transcendents, he was still their king. It was where they placed their pride in, and the source of their confidence.

Compared to those who only enjoyed a reputation unwarranted to their worth, like the seven of the eight Bravehearts who ran faster than anyone in times of danger, King Leonis was worthy of the trust and respect.

The Transcendents naturally did not wish for King Leonis to die in battle. Thankfully, although Leonis was extremely weak, he was still breathing just barely. King Leonis was still alive!

Soon, the Transcendents, who had fled, saw the rain of blood as well as the sudden disappearance of Leonis’s massive body and realized that the crisis was over. They carefully returned to the arena.

The news of Leonis being defeated proliferated Transcendence like wildfire.

And any Transcendent that witnessed the shocking scene found

it impossible to exactly describe the truth of the matter. They could only vaguely tell everyone that—Leonis was one-shot.

This fact that sounded absurd naturally was not believed by most people, but the Transcendents, who were present were unanimous in their description, causing no one to doubt them.

But the story today was destined to become an exaggerated legend. It would also leave behind a thick stroke in the history of the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament.

A human that suddenly appeared managed to send Moya in his second form flying with a punch. He managed to break through his limits, crushing Moya in his third form with absolute speed.

Following that, he took the advantage against Leonis in his third form during a clash of punches. He even used an unimaginable punch to destroy the Lion King Punch, sending Leonis miles away.

Of course, the most exaggerated story was the scene missed by most Transcendents. The human had saved thousands of Transcendents with a single sword strike, before one-shotting Leonis in his fourth form!

Although this human did not enroll to participate in the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament, no Transcendent refuted this matter—this year's Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament champion title did not belong to the Transcendents, but it belonged to an unfamiliar and mysterious race known as humans!

Furthermore, with Shi Xiaobai saving hundreds if not thousands of Transcendents with his sword strike, he had won their respect and welcome despite speaking and acting extremely arrogantly before their eyes.

The strong were worthy of respect, and Bravehearts were welcomed. As Shi Xiaobai's strength and courage was one that they had a strong impression of.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai, Pulp Farmer, and Feng Yuanlin, who were all unconscious, were quickly given the most luxurious of rooms. Liu Yu watched them by the side.

Leonis was brought back to his palace for treatment.

The Transcendents began working hard to repair the city.

The Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament came to an end.

...

...

In the night.

The sound of midnight chimes sounded. The Transcendence Holy Tree's leaves burst out colorful lights that tore through the sky, illuminating the city and making the skyline iridescent.

Shi Xiaobai woke up at that moment.

Before he opened his eyes, he heard a rather familiar voice:

“Impossible! Although Boss Shi Xiaobai is very strong, so strong that I can’t understand at all, it’s too unscientific for him to be able to one-shot a monster like Leonis.”

Immediately, another voice sounded:

“I don’t believe it either. Being able to defeat Leonis in his fourth form is already extremely unbelievable. One-shoting is way too absurd. However, Liu Yu has no need to make such a lie that can be easily exposed. Are we just too ignorant? Shi Xiaobai’s strength has already far exceeded our imaginations?”

The two voices were respectively Feng Yuanlin and Pulp Farmer, and from the looks of it, they had just awoken. Liu Yu had been telling them what had happened.

Shi Xiaobai gradually opened his eyes as a helpless smile suffused across his lips.

He had indeed one-shot Leonis in his fourth form, but it did not mean that his strength had reached the point of being able to one-shot Leonis.

On the contrary, he was still too weak. He had used the sword technique, Excalibur, a destructive strength that was only second only to the Turtle-speed Divine Punch, but all he did was deal a tiny bit of damage to Leonis. If not for Leonis being filled with the rich aura of darkness, and the Pig Slaughtering Knife being extremely effective against beings of darkness, he would have been left with no options.

Compared to the four legendary figures, he was still somewhat lacking.

“There’s no point speaking any further. Since Benefactor Shi Xiaobai has awoken, why don’t you ask him yourself if you don’t believe!”

At this moment, Liu Yu happened to notice Shi Xiaobai opening his eyes, so he said so.

Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin turned their heads. Since Shi Xiaobai was awake, wouldn’t he have heard their doubting words?

The two of them immediately became a little embarrassed.

Shi Xiaobai grinned and said, “Thank you for buying This King three seconds. It doesn’t matter if This King managed to defeat Leonis, nor does it matter if it was a one-shot. Most importantly, we never took a step back.”

## Chapter 378: This King Has Been Targeted!

---

“Thank you for buying This King three seconds. It doesn’t matter if This King managed to defeat Leonis, nor does it matter if it was a one-shot. Most importantly, we never took a step back.”

When the three people heard this, they smiled and felt their hearts turn slightly warm.

Liu Yu said with a laugh, “Congratulations for defeating Leonis and becoming the champion of the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament. You have become the fifth trial-taker that managed to clear the seventh level in the history of mankind!”

Pulp Farmer said with a praise, “Shi Xiaobai, I am not even won over by Speechless Li, but today, you have won me over. No wonder Sunless likes you to even ignore her own way of the sword. You are indeed very excellent.”

Feng Yuanlin said, “Boss Shi Xiaobai, regardless of the case, I’m definitely viewing you as my boss. Please take me in as a cheap lackey! Haha, to one-shot Leonis in his fourth form. Regardless if it’s true or not, it will definitely become the fifth legendary story once it spreads out of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. Furthermore, you have done so many deeds in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. Your reputation among the rookies must have exceeded Speechless. Hehe, you could definitely even become a celebrity hero in the future. When the time comes, I’ll be a lackey of a celebrity hero. That would be sweet!”

The three looked rather excited. A land of trials at the Psionic Mortal Realm was nothing much, but the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower was different. This land of trials was related to the four famous legendary figures, and happened to tie in with the four ages of humanity.

Overlord Ji Feng began the warring ages. There were frequent wars, with skirmishes between countless countries, all because of Overlord Ji Feng.

And later, Sword Immortal Xu Taibai began the age of the sword. Wars were no longer fought between armies. Because of his appearance, it became a fight between the strong. The strongest person of a country would spar, directly deciding the allocation and distribution of land and resources!

As for the Conquest King's appearance, he ended the ages of the sword and warring ages. This was because the Conquest King had nearly conquered the entire world. A massive country was established, putting an end to war. Weak countries could only tremble in fear. At that time, there was a temporary peace.

And after the Conquest King became the Original Sin of Calamity, the world fell back into chaos. As time went by, there were more and more alien species and biological creatures from other worlds that invaded humanity. It resulted in the theme to become—survival!

Only after the Hero King's appearance, with him single-handedly establishing the hero system, creating the strongest age of humanity that was struggling to survive that lasted for thousands



of years. As such, it was currently the Age of Heroes!

These four legendary figures had legendary stories could not even be described using several thick compendiums. However, they all had a common point. They had cleared the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower's seventh level at the Psionic Mortal Realm. Furthermore, only the four of them had managed to clear it!

It was apparent that the four legendary figures had already revealed talent and strength that exceeded their peers when they were at their weakest stage in life.

As a result, the worth of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower might have been a coincidence, but it made it different!

As people were good at finding patterns, there was talk that when the fifth trial-taker that cleared the seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower would appear, humanity's fifth age would not be far!

By placing the glorious term 'age' on a rookie sounded forced regardless of how one looked at it, but the stories of the four legendary figures left behind such a possibility, allowing people to choose to believe in it.

No one had managed to do it for thousands of years.

But Shi Xiaobai had managed to do it!

If it were anyone else, they would be extremely thrilled because it meant limitless bright future. It would bring attention from the entire country, or even the entire world, but Shi Xiaobai clearly did not know the meaning behind this. Even if he knew, he would not be overly excited.

Compared to the excitement Pulp Farmer and company were feeling, Shi Xiaobai was much calmer. His eyes even revealed a hint of sadness.

Liu Yu asked curiously, “Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, you don’t look especially happy?”

Shi Xiaobai gave a helpless smile. He obviously could not feel happy. He did not plan on participating in the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament, and defeating Leonis to become champion was never in his plans.

Shi Xiaobai sighed and said, “There’s something that This King needs to ask of you. This King and Sunless had arranged to meet in the seventh level, but from the looks of it, This King will probably have to go first. If you were to meet her later, please explain the situation for This King. Remember to tell her not to force herself to reach the eighth level. We shall meet outside the trial.”

Shi Xiaobai was a person who thought extremely highly of his promises. Furthermore, he understood Sunless’ personality. If she did not meet him in the seventh level, Sunless would keep waiting. Although it was unknown how long she could last in the land of

the trials, she would definitely stay till the final moment.

Sunless was a sword fanatic as well as a path fanatic. She would walk a single path and never make any turns.

Pulp Farmer and company nodded their heads solemnly. Shi Xiaobai had protected Sunless in the fifth level and all three of them were present. They knew the reason why Shi Xiaobai made such a promise back then, and knew the effects of such a promise.

At this moment, Feng Yuanlin suddenly thought of a strange question and asked, “Eh? Didn’t Boss Shi Xiaobai defeat Leonis? Why hasn’t he been sent to the eighth level?”

With this said, the rest were lost.

Liu Yu thought for a moment and said, “Maybe becoming the tournament’s champion is the true trigger condition? The tournament’s organizing committee has yet to officially announce that Benefactor Shi Xiaobai is the champion of the tournament. In the morning tomorrow, it will be announced and with Benefactor Shi Xiaobai’s status as champion decided, only then would everything be set in stone.”

This explanation sounded like the most reasonable explanation at that moment.

A few people found it suspicious but did not put it to heart. In fact, defeating Leonis should have been considered clearing the

level. Now, it was probably just following the necessary process.

...

The next morning, the announcement of the tournament's champion was made. A few Transcendent officials personally brought the champion trophy to Shi Xiaobai and company's resting place.

But after a few hours, Shi Xiaobai was still not sent to the eighth level.

Liu Yu frowned. "What happened? Benefactor Shi Xiaobai has defeated Leonis. It was witnessed by This Penniless Priest. His status as champion has been confirmed, but why hasn't he cleared the level?"

Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin frowned deeply as well, unable to comprehend the situation.

However, Shi Xiaobai gave a relieved smile. Last night, he already had a guess, and now, the situation was confirming his guess!

Shi Xiaobai whispered, "The reason is simple. The condition to clearing the level is to gain the approval of the assessment program. If This King isn't wrong, This King has been targeted by the assessment program!"

# Chapter 379: The Sudden Appearance Of The Choices

---

When Shi Xiaobai made the remark, Pulp Farmer and company were dumbfounded and found it incomprehensible. One of them asked, “You have been targeted by the assessment program? What does that mean?”

Shi Xiaobai gave a nod in silence.

The condition to clearing the seventh level was supposedly to gain the approval of the assessment program. Logically speaking, defeating the enhanced Leonis and becoming the champion of the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament was more impressive than the accomplishment Xu Taibai did back in the day. He should have gained the approval of the assessment program.

But after succeeding, Shi Xiaobai did not clear the level. The root cause being that he did not gain the approval of the assessment program!

Although Shi Xiaobai had defeated Leonis using the Pig Slaughtering Knife that was extremely effective against beings of darkness, it was still a part of his strength. Shi Xiaobai had used his strength to win the final battle after all, so there was no reason for the assessment program to not give its approval.

Continuing on along this line of thought, there was only one explanation. The assessment program had deliberately not given him its approval!

This hypothesis sounded ridiculous, but there were early signs.

This was because Shi Xiaobai did not know how he arrived in the seventh level. He was also not informed of the rules of the seventh level by the assessment program. He had met Speechless, and with him filling in the details for him, he got to learn the rules of the seventh level.

Back then, Shi Xiaobai had joked saying that he had been targeted by the assessment program.

But from the looks of it, it was very likely the truth!

The assessment program did not inform him of the rules and did not give him its approval after he defeated Leonis. This was clearly specialized treatment, of him...being targeted!

Shi Xiaobai explained what was on his mind to Pulp Farmer and company.

Finally, he sighed and said helplessly, “Let it be. This King is already used to being targeted!”

Pulp Farmer and company were left dumbfounded, feeling that the matter did not make sense.

At that moment, Liu Yu said, “Actually, This Penniless Priest has

always been wondering how Benefactor Shi Xiaobai managed to appear in the seventh level. Who knew that you didn't even know as well... Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, there has been a matter that the three of us haven't brought up all this while, but it seems there's no need to conceal it... In fact, This Penniless Priest was the seventh Braveheart who slew the dragon. Feng Yuanlin is the sixth...and from what we learned, the fifth Braveheart to slay the dragon on the sixth level has the name...Mu Yuesheng."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he was slightly surprised. He never expected Mu Yuesheng to be able to take the fifth dragon for her own despite there being so many excellent rookies. It was apparent that Mu Yuesheng had greatly improved in strength by rising to the tenth level of the Psionic Mortal Realm.

Following that, he understood the meaning behind Liu Yu's words. Shi Xiaobai said in surprise, "Then wouldn't This King be the eighth Braveheart?"

The first four Bravehearts were determined by the time Shi Xiaobai arrived in the sixth level. They were Speechless, Mu Lengxi, Sunless and Pulp Farmer. Then, according to Liu Yu's depiction of the events, the fifth Braveheart was Mu Yuesheng, followed by Feng Yuanlin and Liu Yu. Wouldn't that make him the eighth?

At that moment, Pulp Farmer spoke up as well, "Actually I have always had a presumptuous question that I wanted to ask you. Shi Xiaobai, why did you kill the first, second, fifth and sixth Level Lords, and how did you do so?"

“Ah?”

Shi Xiaobai was shocked when he heard this and asked in surprise, “When did This King kill the four Level Lords?”

Shi Xiaobai had a deep understanding of the Level Lords’ power. Back in the third level, he had faced the Thousand Eye Demon Sovereign, and back then, he was powerless against it. He could only rely on Mu Yuesheng’s superpower to flee. If not for the Absolute Choice’s prize, the Master Conquest Ball, he might have been eliminated at the third level.

Killed four Level Lords? Shi Xiaobai had no impression of that. Furthermore, he did not seem to have a reason for doing so!

After reveling in a moment of shock, Shi Xiaobai quickly figured it out.

All the mysteries could only be a result after he lost his consciousness when he siphoned Kali of her power of corruption.

And the matter clearly had to do with Kali.

Shi Xiaobai thought for a moment before he stopped delving too much on it.

Since it had something to do with Kali, there was nothing much to think about because Kali would never harm him.



Seeing Pulp Farmer and company giving him questioning looks, Shi Xiaobai said with a laugh, “All of you might have heard of a fake Shi Xiaobai. Anyway, This King has no impression of that matter, nor does he know how he arrived in the seventh level. It probably is related to why the assessment program is targeting This King. But it’s fine. It suits This King’s wishes. It would be too meaningless to clear the seventh level so simply!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes shimmered with a light of joy and excitement.

If it were any ordinary person who faced such a situation, they would definitely feel extremely suspicious, eager to understand the truth of the situation. They would also feel annoyed that they did not clear the level despite defeating Leonis, silently cursing the assessment program for being so shameless in its targeting.

But Shi Xiaobai would not do so, and in fact, he was even more excited. Fighting spirit burned more intensely in him!

This was the main reason why Shi Xiaobai was different from others.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai’s body seemed to exude a halo in Pulp Farmer and company’s eyes. The three looked each other in the eyes and only shook their heads and gave a deprecating smile. They found Shi Xiaobai even more impressing.

Feng Yuanlin asked, “Boss Shi Xiaobai, where do you plan on going next?”

If he was truly targeted by the assessment program, where else could Shi Xiaobai go now? What could he do?

In fact, Shi Xiaobai was unsure himself.

Shi Xiaobai could only ask them, “What about all of you?”

Feng Yuanlin answered, “According to what most trial-takers previously did, if they failed at challenging the tournament, those in good condition would head to the Infernal domain to challenge the Infernal King. After all, surviving a hundred days and what the Hero King accomplished are just too difficult, so we might as well challenge the Infernal King. Therefore, the three of us will likely head to the Infernal domain to challenge the Infernal King. Boss Shi Xiaobai, do you want to join us?”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his eyes lit up slightly. Challenging the Infernal King was something that interested him greatly. In fact, if he did not believe that Sunless was in Transcendence, he would have headed to the Infernal realm to kill the Infernal King immediately.

However, Shi Xiaobai hesitated and finally shook his head. He said, “I think it’s best I don’t. If This King is really targeted by the assessment program, killing the Infernal King would be of no use. Furthermore, This King wants to carve his own path and make his own journey. Therefore, This King will not be heading to the Infernal domain.”

Since defeating Leonis was useless against clearing the level, it was unlikely there would be any changes even if he killed the Infernal King.

Although Shi Xiaobai did not know what he should embark on next, he believed that matters would straighten themselves out with time. The seventh level was supposedly created from a real plane of existence, so there was definitely no lack of interesting matters in this world.

So why shouldn't he take advantage of this rare opportunity to take a look around.

However, he was still curious as to what the so-called Hero King had managed and the reason why his deeds were considered the most legendary.

Just as Shi Xiaobai was about to inquire, the world suddenly fell silent. Time came to a standstill at that moment.

A fiery voice resounded in his mind.

“Make your choice, youth!”

Several lines of black text appeared in that fixed frame.

[ Choice 1: Complete the King's Mandate (B-level reward) ]

[ Choice 2: End the Age of Bravehearts (B-level reward) ]

[ Choice 3: Leave the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower  
(No reward) ]

“Make your choice, youth!”

...

# Chapter 380: End The Age Of Bravehearts

---

[ Choice 1: Complete the King's Mandate (B-level reward) ]

[ Choice 2: End the Age of Bravehearts (B-level reward) ]

[ Choice 3: Leave the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower (No reward) ]

“Make your choice, youth!”

The familiar fiery voice resounded in his mind as the scene before his eyes had turned completely still. The Absolute Choice had appeared once again!

However, Shi Xiaobai did not behave like in the past by looking at the three lines of black text immediately. Instead, he attempted to converse with the fiery voice.

“Where is This King's A-level reward?”

Shi Xiaobai was feeling rather stumped. He had clearly completed the Absolute Choice, ‘Push down the raging Ka Xiaozi’, but he did not receive the corresponding A-level reward. Shi Xiaobai had guessed that it was possibly because he lost consciousness rather quickly back then, and the reward was given out when he lost consciousness. Therefore, he did not know what he had received.

Now, with the Absolute Choice having finally appeared, Shi Xiaobai naturally wanted to seize the opportunity to clarify his doubts. It was an A-level reward! Shi Xiaobai, who had enjoyed the sweetness of countless rewards from the Absolute Choice, was fatally attracted to A-level rewards.

However, when the Absolute Choice appeared, time was completely still. Shi Xiaobai was also unable to move. He could not open his mouth, and he could only repeat his questions in his mind, in an attempt to converse with the fiery voice. After all, he made his choices with his thoughts.

However, despite how much Shi Xiaobai inquired, the fiery voice only had a single response.

“Make your choice, youth!”

The constant tone and the constant volume seemed like it was a recording on replay in his mind.

Shi Xiaobai attempted to ask several times, but the Absolute Choice failed to give him any answer, so he could only helplessly give up.

Shi Xiaobai could only cast his gaze on the three lines of black text.

The first thing he did was cast his eyes at the bottom.

“There is no gentle reminder.”

Shi Xiaobai sighed. This kind of Absolute Choice without a gentle reminder and with three choices was the one he felt the most aversion to.

After carefully reading the three choices, Shi Xiaobai's mood immediately turned worse.

The third choice was very clear. The completion difficulty was extremely simple. He just needed to leave the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, but there was no reward to this choice, so Shi Xiaobai immediately eliminated it.

The remaining two choices were headache-inducing because they were too vague.

Complete the King's Mandate?

End the Age of Bravehearts?

What did they mean?

Shi Xiaobai was left scratching his head, but he knew that both choices each had their inherent meanings. The truth contained within them was currently a mystery, but it would eventually be revealed.

The last Absolute Choice of preventing Ka Xiaozi from raging as well as pushing down the raging Ka Xiaozi were likely similar to the two choices this time. However, these two choices were even more confusing. Shi Xiaobai was completely without clues at the moment.

However, he still needed to make a choice and he could only make a random choice based on his intuition!

Of course, Shi Xiaobai, who had little immunity against the word ‘King’, did not hesitate and chose the first choice—Complete the King’s Mandate!

...

...

What was the King’s Mandate?

To Shi Xiaobai, there were too many possible answers, so many that there was no way to even filter them. Therefore, he could only temporarily put it at the back of his mind.

Time began to run once again. Shi Xiaobai’s original line of thought had been interrupted. He had suddenly lost interest despite having wanted to inquire about the fourth story of the Hero King.



Shi Xiaobai tried to probe the three and asked a question, “What do all of you think is required to end the Age of Bravehearts?”

This question sounded somewhat baffling, but they were presently in a world on the seventh level which was the Age of the Bravehearts and Infernal King. The Age of Bravehearts likely meant the era of this world.

Pulp Farmer and company, who had studied the seventh level ahead of time, probably knew a thing or two.

Although Shi Xiaobai did not choose the second choice, it was best to ask in the event he failed the first choice. It was definitely important to save for a rainy day.

Sure enough, Pulp Farmer and company were left dumbfounded for a moment, but they did not question Shi Xiaobai for his inquiry. Instead, they began to fall deep into thought.

Moments later, Liu Yu was the first to speak. “The era of the world on this level is called the ‘Age of Bravehearts’. Just like how our human world is currently in the ‘Age of Heroes’, it’s because heroes have become a main theme of the era. Therefore, as long as the main theme of the era is replaced, it will result in the change of an age. However, Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, you are asking about ending the Age of the Bravehearts. If it’s just ending it and not replacing it, it means to gradually let the main theme of Bravehearts disappear. In other words, it can be accomplished as long as Bravehearts are no longer the main theme of this era!”

With Liu Yu saying this, Shi Xiaobai understood some of it but Feng Yuanlin was confused by it. He asked in a baffled manner, “What does it mean? Make Bravehearts no longer the main theme of the era? Does it mean to kill all Bravehearts? Or is it about finding a method to repeal the titles of Bravehearts?”

Liu Yu rolled his eyes and said, “Feng Yuanlin, use your pig brain and ponder over it. Why was there an emergence of Bravehearts? What is the reason for Bravehearts to be born?”

Feng Yuanlin scratched his head and after a moment of thought, he said, “If I remember correctly, the title of Braveheart emerged for those who enter the Infernal domain to kill the Infernal King? But what has this got to do with ending the Age of Bravehearts?”

“Stupid!”

Liu Yu said in a speechless manner, “You can’t even figure out such a simple thing? Since the Bravehearts emerge in order to kill the Infernal King, wouldn’t the existence of the Bravehearts vanish if the Infernal King is killed? If This Penniless Priest isn’t wrong, the Age of Bravehearts would come to an end if the Infernal King is dead!”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his eyes lit up. Liu Yu’s logic sounded extremely reasonable. Since Bravehearts were the main theme of the era, the world’s age was termed the Age of the Bravehearts. Then, diluting this main theme was equivalent to ending the Age of Bravehearts!

And since Bravehearts existed to kill the Infernal King, the meaning behind the existence of the Bravehearts would vanish once the Infernal King died!

To sum it up... One could end the Age of Bravehearts by killing the Infernal King!

At that moment, Pulp Farmer suddenly spoke up, "It's probably not that simple. The end of an era needs a catalyst and time to pass. The death of the Infernal King should provide the catalyst to end the Age of Bravehearts, but it will need a lot of time to diminish the main theme of an era. That is still an open question. Ending the Age of Bravehearts is considered quite an impressive feat, and by being able to accomplish it, one should be able to gain the assessment program's approval, but the amount of time required probably far exceeds one's imagination."

Pulp Farmer and company believed that Shi Xiaobai had asked such a question in order to find another way to obtain the assessment program's approval.

And it had to be said that ending an era sounded rather cool and bombastic.

# Chapter 381: Do You Know What You Have Eaten

---

Shi Xiaobai smiled slightly and did not give any additional explanations.

At this moment, he pondered.

If ending the Age of Bravehearts meant killing the Infernal King, then what was the King's mandate?

These two choices likely had something to do with the seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment and considered probing the three beside him. Maybe the King's Mandate had a specific meaning in a particular story in the world of the seventh level?

Just as Shi Xiaobai wanted to inquire, there was a sudden knock on the door.

“Knock, knock...”

The knocking was done very rhythmically, and appeared very mannered.

Pulp Farmer happened to be sitting closest to the door, so he immediately got up to open the door.

Respectfully standing outside the door was a green-skinned dwarf.

“Is there something?”

Pulp Farmer asked in a tone that did not sound particularly welcoming. As this green-skinned dwarf had been met by the three of them when they first came to Transcendence. The green-skinned dwarf was a servant specially meant to serve the foreign races, but back then, his tone and actions exuded a strong sense of racial discrimination as well as the superiority complex of the Transcendents, irking them greatly.

However, the dwarf appeared extremely humble. He had his head bowed very low as he respectfully said, “My apologies for disturbing your rest! King Leonis finally woke up early this morning and he wants to meet the outstanding human Bravehearts. This lowly one is here to warmly invite you to the royal palace as guests!”

The dwarf had his head bowed from beginning to end, and his choice of words and tone was especially careful. Clearly, after experiencing the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament yesterday, the humans as a race had gained a newfound respect by the Transcendents, and were even looked up to.

When Shi Xiaobai and company heard this, they looked each other in the eyes and were a little surprised.

In his fourth form, Leonis had nearly become a tyrant spurned by everyone. It was ultimately forced by Shi Xiaobai, and worst of all, he had still been defeated after paying such a heavy price. Leonis should have been severely discredited.

Logically speaking, Leonis should hate them, but why did he politely invite them as guests after waking up?

Could it be a treacherous plot?

Shi Xiaobai did not mind it. Honestly speaking, his expectations had been exceeded with Leonis not dying on the spot and for him to regain consciousness so early. After all, based on the circumstances, Shi Xiaobai had no chance at holding back. He had aimed the Pig Slaughtering Knife straight at Leonis's red line and it was a ruthless deathblow.

This was also evidence of Leonis's terrifying physical strength.

However, no matter how exaggerated Leonis's recovery ability was, he was definitely in an extremely weak state. Even if he wanted to slaughter them after his invitation, he would not have the ability to do so.

Shi Xiaobai said to the trio, "Let's go. There's nothing to worry about."

Pulp Farmer and company were not especially worried. If they were afraid that the Transcendents would seek revenge, they

would have left Transcendence overnight. After all, this was the territory of the Transcendents.

Pulp Farmer said with a nod, “Let’s go and meet Leonis before we leave Transcendence.”

Liu Yu nodded. Turning his head to the dwarf, he said, “Lead the way.”

...

...

Shi Xiaobai and company were currently located in the palace, so they were not very far from where Leonis was resting.

Along the way, they met several Transcendent palace maids and bodyguards. They were also casting curious and awed glances at Shi Xiaobai and company.

Shi Xiaobai’s deeds from yesterday’s tournament had proliferated Transcendence over the night. It was already unbelievable that he was able to defeat Moya and Leonis, and the way Shi Xiaobai won only left them with shock.

If not for their racial superiority holding them back, they would have become worshippers of Shi Xiaobai.

After all, in the world of Bravehearts, Bravehearts and the strong were existences worthy of respect. And Shi Xiaobai was the strongest among the Bravehearts.

Leonis's chamber was naturally opulent and extremely luxurious. There were rows of guards guarding the front of Leonis's chamber.

When Shi Xiaobai and company entered the chamber, they saw Leonis covered in a blanket and sitting in bed. He looked extremely weak with his sleepy look.

Upon seeing Shi Xiaobai and company walk in, Leonis slowly looked up and opened his eyes.

“You came.”

A deep voice and a calm tone that sounded as though he was talking to close friends.

Shi Xiaobai asked, “What did you invite us here for?”

Leonis coughed and said, “This King invited you here to give my thanks.”

Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows pricked up slightly and asked, “Thanks?”

Leonis laughed, revealing his weakness and exhaustion. He said softly, “This King should hate you, and it was you who caused This



King to be in his present state. However, This King only wants to say a word of thanks to you. Human, you fulfilled the dream of This King.”

Shi Xiaobai was even more perplexed. “What do you mean?”

Leonis coughed once again. His turbid eyes had a look of reminiscence as he said, “This King is not a pureblood Transcendent. From a young age, This King has been treated with contempt because of the existence of another bloodline. Back then, This King had a dream that one day the appearance of a foreign race could defeat the strongest Transcendent, letting every Transcendent realize an important thing—all races in the world are equal. However, when This King gradually became stronger, This King gradually forgot this dream. After becoming the strongest Transcendent and their king, This King went contrary to this dream. Human, you defeated This King and most ironic of all, This King is currently the strongest Transcendent. Therefore, you realized the dream that This King had buried by himself. Also, it appears that you prevented This King from committing genocide on his own people. So, regardless of the matter, This King has to thank you!”

Shi Xiaobai could tell the seriousness in Leonis’s expression, and it did not seem fake. His eyes softened a little as he said, “There’s no need to thank me. Your dream would have been realized sooner or later. Even if it wasn’t done by This King, a foreign race that could defeat the Transcendents’ strongest warrior would have appeared sooner or later, because the race of the Transcendents isn’t the strongest race in the world. Furthermore, your dream has only be partially realized. Whether the Transcendents are able to realize that races are equal in this world or if they can let go of

their nasty superior complex depends on your future actions. The change of racial attitudes needs a catalyst, but in greater need is a leader that promotes the new mindset! King Leonis, a true king has to lead his subjects down the right path!”

Shi Xiaobai’s words made Leonis ruminate over it. After a long moment of silence, he said with a sigh, “What you said makes a lot of sense, but...”

Leonis’s words suddenly took a turn as his turbid eyes suddenly focused, shimmering with a cold light. It was as though a sleeping lion had suddenly bared its vicious fangs.

“But would a real king shamelessly steal the most treasured sacred item of another country? Human, do you know how important an existence the fruit that you ate from the Transcendence Holy Tree is to This King, the Transcendents, and to this world!?”

## Chapter 382: King's Mandate

---

Shi Xiaobai was surprised. He had never expected Leonis to realize that he had eaten the fruit!

Shi Xiaobai immediately felt guilty. It was indeed not a good thing to secretly eat something that belonged to others, but he had really failed to resist the tempting fragrance of the holy tree. Also, he had done it because of the rage from the Transcendents' contempt. On this matter, he was guilty!

It was also possible that Leonis was not sure who had eaten it, and had only raised the issue as a bluff. At this moment, the best action was to feign ignorance or angrily accuse Leonis of maligning him.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not like to do such a thing. He sighed and said, "Eating that fruit was a rash decision of This King. Go ahead, what does the fruit mean to you, the Transcendents, and to this world? If This King can make up for it, he will definitely do his best."

Having been caught doing something wrong, it was best to admit the truth, even if it did not seem wrong from one's point of view. A fault was a fault, trying to use subjective arguments would not change the objective facts.

Now, with Shi Xiaobai pondering carefully over it, he realized that he had been acting on an impulse when he ate the Transcendence Holy Tree's fruit. After all, the fruit's effects were

stunning, so it was likely extremely precious. By eating a precious treasure of the Transcendents as revenge for their contempt and arrogance was truly an underhanded tactic.

Leonis said with a sneer, “It was indeed you who ate it!”

Shi Xiaobai nodded calmly and said, “The fruit was eaten by This King.”

Indeed, Leonis was just bluffing, but Shi Xiaobai openly admitted it.

Pulp Farmer and company looked each other in the eyes. They were also curious as to what Shi Xiaobai had eaten. They had never heard anything about the fruit of the Transcendence Holy Tree. However, ever since they entered Leonis’s chamber, they had automatically fallen silent.

This was because they knew that this meeting was meant to be a conversation between Leonis and Shi Xiaobai. The three of them were just here out of convenience.

And when Leonis heard how Shi Xiaobai bluntly admitted to his ‘crime’, his expression turned extremely ugly, like a cold stone sinking down in silence.

The mood immediately turned awkward.

Shi Xiaobai coughed once and asked again, “What exactly does

that fruit signify? This King is never an overbearing and unreasonable person. If the fruit will really affect the entire world as you said, This King will think of a method to shoulder the responsibility for eating the fruit!”

When Leonis heard this, his eyes flickered for a moment before his stiff body gradually slumped. He let out a deep sigh and said with a deep voice, “Forget it, this might be fate. Maybe you are more qualified than This King to eat that fruit. But human, you will definitely have to pay an enormous price for eating that fruit, because the real name of the fruit you ate is...Devil Fruit!”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyebrows pricked up as he said in surprise, “Devil Fruit? Why would a fruit born from a holy tree have such an ominous name?”

Leonis said with a sneer, “The Transcendence Holy Tree is just a name, but in fact, it’s not a holy tree, but a demonic tree! Do you know why there is an air of darkness around Moya in his third form and when This King is in his fourth form after we lose our reason? That’s because the Transcendents...are descendants of devils!”

With this said, Shi Xiaobai and company were astonished. Shi Xiaobai said with a deep tone, “You are telling us the secret just like that? Aren’t you afraid that we would leak this out?”

Leonis said, “The Transcendents have long been accused as bastards of the Infernals, but people think that it’s just rumors and accusations. This is because the Transcendents have always been the main force that resist the Infernal King and the Infernals. Even

if you spread the news, it would be treated as another joke or rumor. And the reason why you are informed of this matter is to tell you that ever since you ate the Infernal Fruit, you have already signed an agreement with the God of the Devils. Now, the present you is no longer a pure human, but...a half-devil!”

Devils had different definitions in different worlds and planes of existence. Shi Xiaobai did not know what the definition of an Infernal was in this world, but it definitely did not mean something good. However, Shi Xiaobai did not feel like any strange changes had happened to him after eating the fruit. Other than his strength increasing several levels, there was no other effect.

Shi Xiaobai asked, “What are devils? What effect does This King have on you, the Transcendents as well as this world for eating the Devil Fruit?”

Leonis fell silent for a few moments before saying, “Devils are naturally devils. The Infernal King in the Infernal domain as well as his Infernal army are a kind of devil. However, the devil bloodline of us, the Transcendents, is different from the devil bloodline of the Infernal King. Furthermore, we are archnemeses! It can be said that our race’s devil bloodline was born to destroy the Infernal domain! And the fruit you ate was meant for the king of our race, which also means This King, so as to complete a King’s mandate!”

When Shi Xiaobai heard the last few words, he immediately said in astonishment, “What did you say? King’s Mandate?”

Leonis’s eyebrows pricked up, unsure of the reason for Shi

Xiaobai's sudden excitement. He could not be bothered to probe and just said coldly, "The Transcendents and the Infernal domain's Infernal King and Infernals are archnemeses. Therefore, the kings of the Transcendents have always shouldered an inescapable mandate of a King, which is to...kill the Infernal King and destroy the Infernal domain! The king of the Transcendents should have always been the strongest Braveheart in the world! And the Transcendence Holy Tree's Devil Fruit is the strongest means to allow the king to complete his mandate!"

"This King is also the king of the Transcendents, and only knew of the matter after accepting the title of king. I signed a contract with the God of the Devils, and paid a price that far exceeds your imagination, but the strength I gained is also extremely terrifying. Originally, This King just needed to eat another Devil Fruit to possess the power to kill the Infernal King, because This King accidentally ate one in his youth. Although eating two Devil Fruits will greatly reduce This King's lifespan, This King would die without regret as long as the King's Mandate could be fulfilled!"

"Human, you ate that Devil Fruit, and even beat This King into such a state. This means that the only chance of killing the Infernal King has been extinguished by you. To This King, the Transcendents and to the whole world, you are the greatest villain!"

Leonis's voice became louder as his tone turned harsher, like he was denouncing Shi Xiaobai.

However, Shi Xiaobai laughed. He said with a laugh, "So that's the case. After saying so much, you just wish that This King, who

ate the Devil Fruit, can help you complete the so-called mandate of a King. That couldn't possibly be any easier. Isn't it just killing the Infernal King and destroying the Infernal domain? This King never fears anything!"

Shi Xiaobai never expected that the riddle that he had been vexing over would be resolved so quickly.

From the looks of it, the King's mandate meant the mandate of the King of the Transcendents!

Although it was somewhat coincidental, there was no explanation that could be any more plausible than that.

As for the Devil Fruit, or being a half devil, who cares!?

Ultimately, it only meant four words—kill the Infernal King!

However, this appeared to create a strange contradiction.

Judging from the present situation, killing the Infernal King could complete the King's Mandate, completing Choice 1.

And in a discussion not long ago, killing the Infernal King would end the Age of Bravehearts, completing Choice 2.

In that case, the condition to completing Choices 1 and 2 was to kill the Infernal King, then why would there be a need for a



choice?

A choice should of course lead to forks in the road, but why would they lead to the same path?

Could it be that one of the inferences was wrong?

Forget it. Regardless which inference was right or wrong, killing the Infernal King is definitely not a mistake!

Shi Xiaobai grinned and looked at Pulp Farmer and company in high spirits. He said, “Let’s go, off to the Infernal domain to kill the Infernal King!”

...

# Chapter 383: This King Is Immune To Poison

---

Leonis summoned Shi Xiaobai and company to his chamber and engaged in a tirade that seemed like he was blaming Shi Xiaobai for secretly eating the holy tree's fruit, but in fact, the truth could easily be guessed. Leonis wanted Shi Xiaobai to head to the Infernal domain to kill the Infernal King.

Although it was unknown what benefits Leonis would gain if the Infernal King was killed, it was not something that mattered to Shi Xiaobai.

On the contrary, he was rather grateful to Leonis for giving him some idea what was the puzzling "King's Mandate" that the Absolute Choice had referred to.

Although ending the Age of Bravehearts and the King's Mandate both pointed to 'killing the Infernal King', resulting in a contradiction, heading to the Infernal domain to kill the Infernal King was still the best choice.

Shi Xiaobai and company did not stay for long. After leaving King Leonis's palace, they prepared to leave Transcendence, and journeyed together to the Infernal domain.

It could be said that Shi Xiaobai left in a glorious fashion. Along the way, several Transcendents watched from afar, eyes filled with an ephemeral awe.

However, when they reached the city gate, the gargantuan that

guarded the city remained arrogant. Shi Xiaobai could still sense the strong animosity and killing intent from the gargantuan.

After Shi Xiaobai and company walked out the city gate, the gargantuan peeked his head out from inside the city gate and said coldly, “The race of the Transcendents is the strongest race. You will soon realize this point.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyebrows pricked up slightly. The gargantuan’s sentence sounded like a downtrodden dog’s crazy barking, but it sounded premonitory as though there was some special meaning behind it. This was because the gargantuan said the sentence filled with confidence and ruthlessness.

Was he so foolish that he could not extricate himself from the superiority of the Transcendents, therefore just lying to himself?

Or did the gargantuan hide a particular secret?

Shi Xiaobai smiled slightly and did not respond. He turned around and left the gargantuan the sight of his back, as though he didn’t care.

He did not believe that the race of the Transcendents was the strongest race in the world. Similarly, he did not believe that humans were that much mighty and glorious. As for how all races were equal in the world, Shi Xiaobai was not naive enough to believe that it could truly be attained.

However, there was one thing for certain. Lives were equal. Regardless if life ended up in eventual lowliness or prominence, or how the present made it dirty like a beggar's life, or noble like an aristocrat, there was no life that should be treated with contempt. There was also no life that immediately was above others the moment they were born.

The Transcendents did have a natural advantage at birth, but how could a lowly Transcendent beggar that was awaiting death be on a higher status than a Braveheart from other races?

The worth of a life was not because of one's race, but whether you could become such an existence.

...

...

In the desolate desert, there was only unending sand and sprawling rocks. It was dead silent, with no sign of life.

“This piece of land is called the Silent Desolate Lands. The Infernal domain is located to the west of the Silent Desolate Lands. As for Transcendence, it is located on the east. In fact, Transcendence is the city closest to the Infernal domain, with only the Silent Desolate Lands separating them. But strangely, the Infernal King has never attacked Transcendence over thousands of years.”

Shi Xiaobai and company proceeded on the desolate lands at a speed that wasn't too slow, but neither was it too fast. The main reason was that Feng Yuanlin, who wasn't adept at movement techniques, had slowed them down. During this boring period, Liu Yu nicely gave Shi Xiaobai more information regarding the world in the seventh level.

Liu Yu continued, "Thousands of years ago, the Transcendents could only be considered above average among the various races. However, after the appearance of the Infernal King, nearly every race's city or tribe would be attacked by the Infernal King, resulting in Transcendence being the only unharmed location. And it was because of this that the strength of other races gradually weakened from the constant destruction from the Infernal King. As for the Transcendents, they were constantly getting stronger, eventually becoming the strongest race. For this matter, there are said to be two reasons. Some people say that the Infernal King is afraid of the Transcendence Holy Tree's divine might, so he does not dare to attack Transcendence. However, there are others who say that Transcendents are bastard children of the Infernals, so the Infernal King spares them."

"This Penniless Priest originally believed that the second rationale is more believable because Moya and Leonis's final form exude a strange and sinister aura. That look of theirs made them resemble the Infernals. However, Leonis just mentioned that the Transcendents are descendants of devils, and are a different kind of devil that is the nemesis of the Infernal King. This makes it somewhat odd. If the Transcendents are really devils that rival the Infernal King, why would the Infernal King spare Transcendence, which is closest to the Infernal domain, every time he leaves the Infernal domain? Could it be that the Infernal King is really afraid of that Transcendence Holy Tree that will reveal its might when

Transcendence is about to be destroyed?”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment and said, “It’s probably hard to know if the Infernal King is afraid of the Transcendence Holy Tree. However, Leonis must have been lying. To be precise, what Leonis said must be a half-truth. It is not to be fully believed. Whether the Transcendents are really descendants of the devils or if they are archnemeses with the Infernal King requires observation.”

Liu Yu nodded and after a moment of hesitation, he asked, “Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, what was the Devil Fruit that Leonis mentioned? To be honest, This Penniless Priest is rather curious as This Penniless Priest has read up on a lot of information regarding the seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower before coming, but This Penniless Priest has never seen any description regarding the holy tree’s fruit. Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, if you don’t mind, can you give a simple explanation?”

When Pulp Farmer and Feng Yuanlin heard this, they cast their gazes at Shi Xiaobai. Clearly, they were very curious as well.

However, it did not seem proper to ask about such secretive matters so directly.

Shi Xiaobai did not mind, but the matter was still rather difficult to put into words. Shi Xiaobai considered for a moment his words before saying, “The attitude of the Transcendents made This King rather angry, so angry that he became enraged. In a fit of impulse, This King secretly climbed up the holy tree and planned to eat all the tree leaves of the holy tree. Later on, This King accidentally

discovered a fruit hidden in the tree's crown before eating it. After eating the fruit, This King's physique did experience a significant improvement, but there was no strange changes. It is probably a lie when Leonis called the fruit a Devil Fruit."

What Shi Xiaobai said was basically the truth, but it did sound somewhat odd. Pulp Farmer and company looked each other in the eyes. Shi Xiaobai said that he got hungry from being mad and ran up the holy tree to eat leaves. Was that a joke or was he saying something witty?

Liu Yu frowned and said, "If This Penniless Priest did not remember wrongly, the surface of the Transcendence Holy Tree's trunk and branches are filled with a poison that can seep into the pores of a person's body. As for the holy tree's leaves, they are even more poisonous. Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, are you pulling our leg?"

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said calmly, "It's obviously not a joke. What This King said is the truth. That holy tree is indeed laced with poison, and it is indeed more apt to call it a devil's tree or poisonous tree, but unfortunately, This King is immune to poison. Just that bit of poison did not cause any harm to This King, instead, it benefitted This King."

## Chapter 384: 139?

---

Pulp Farmer and company exchanged looks once again. Shi Xiaobai could always surprise them, astonish them, to the point of leaving them aghast. Therefore, when Shi Xiaobai said that he was immune to poison, there was nothing much left for their hearts to be stirred. However, they still found it unbelievable. It was really odd to have a reason of eating tree leaves because of hunger caused by anger.

However, Pulp Farmer and company did not harp on this topic. Regardless if it were true or false, it would be impolite to probe further.

Liu Yu immediately changed topics by saying, “The encounters of Benefactor Shi Xiaobai are truly enviable. If This Penniless Priest didn’t guess wrongly, the holy tree’s fruit should be one of the heritage items in this land of trials. It is something like the Level Lords that cannot be replicated. It was left behind as opportunities for future generations by the creator of the trials. The Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower’s heritage is relatively rare compared to other trials, but each of them is extremely valuable, or even priceless. Over the millennia, most of the heritage has been discovered by our predecessors, so the ones left behind are extremely well-hidden, or the way to obtain them is inexplicable. To be honest, the greatest goal This Penniless Priest had when joining this trial was to obtain one of the holy heritage items of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower, but unfortunately to no avail.”

Shi Xiaobai laughed for he found his luck pretty good. In fact, he had previously used ten thousand points to exchange for Holy



Radiance back on the second level. That sword was currently lent to Sunless, and it was apparently one of the holy items of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower.

Shi Xiaobai and company trudged through the Silent Desolate Lands for a long period of time. The road ahead was long and monotonous, while the scenery was repetitive, with yellow sand and gray rocks, a bleak and desolate scene. Thankfully, Liu Yu was quite a talkative person. He was always capable of finding a topic to defuse the boring situation.

Along the way, Liu Yu mentioned a lot of the background stories of the world in the seventh level. The world was very large, with the Infernal domain and Transcendence only taking up a tiny part of the world map. There were many trial-takers throughout history that teamed up to tour and explore the world. They shared the culture and origins of this world with the human world at a later date.

After all, this world was a replica of a real plane of existence. Although it was an ancient era, and its level of civilization was not high, the splendid culture was still worth studying and learning from.

Shi Xiaobai liked to hear a wide variety of stories from a young age. Regardless if they were epic legends or simple and naive fairy tales, Shi Xiaobai was always able to imagine the scenes of the story, immersing himself in the story and experience its ups and downs.

Shi Xiaobai believed that even if he managed to kill the Infernal

King and completed the mission from the Absolute Choice, he would still fail to obtain the approval of the assessment program. It would be even better in that case. In that case, he could explore the world with his own feet like many other people.

After trudging through the Silent Desolate Lands for an unknown period of time, even the burning sun gradually turned warm and soft.

Pulp Farmer suddenly stopped at some point in time.

He said, "It's about time. Let's finish it here."

Liu Yu and Feng Yuanlin stopped as well, and nodded at Pulp Farmer.

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat puzzled by Pulp Farmer's sentence. He asked curiously, "What do you mean?"

Only then did Pulp Farmer recall that he had a 'noob' beside him that did not know anything about the seventh level. He said helplessly, "In the seventh level, trial-takers would experience a calamity every three days. We call this 'Surviving the Calamity'. Overlord Ji Feng managed to survive a hundred days, undergoing thirty-four calamities before finally obtaining the approval of the assessment program. As for me, my first calamity was three days ago at approximately this time. So, my second calamity is coming very soon! The second calamity is still rather easy, so I'll settle it myself."

Shi Xiaobai immediately remembered how he and Speechless had encountered the assault of gigantic black scorpions, the steel rhinoceroses and the stone dragons. That was probably the calamity Pulp Farmer was referring to?

It was unknown whose calamity it was the other time, his or Speechless's.

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head to express his understanding. Therefore, he stood quietly by the side, waiting for Pulp Farmer's second calamity to befall him.

A minute later, there was a rumble from the west.

Black figures began to appear along the horizon.

Upon focusing, Shi Xiaobai was somewhat surprised. Aren't those the gigantic black scorpions?

The gigantic black scorpions crawled towards them from afar in a dense crowd. There were approximately more than a hundred of them.

"The second calamity, a hundred and thirty-nine black poisonous scorpions. It seems the assessment program has quite a good evaluation of me."

The corners of Pulp Farmer's mouth suffused a smile as he walked forward with spear in hand. He said in high spirits, "Wait

for me here. I'll be right back. I'll settle this calamity myself!"

Pulp Farmer charged towards the black scorpions that rolled towards him like a wave. As he thrust his spear forward in a magnificent manner, he began engaging in an intense massacre.

Shi Xiaobai surveyed his surroundings and was even more flabbergasted.

Why were there only the gigantic black scorpions? What happened to the steel rhinoceroses and the stone dragons?

At this moment, Liu Yu said with mixed feelings, "The assessment program will come up with a judgment based on the trial-taker's performance. And the difficulty of the first calamity is decided according to the judgment. With the second calamity at 139 black scorpions, Pulp Farmer is already considered above average compared to all past trial-takers. His future is limitless!"

Upon hearing Liu Yu's words, Shi Xiaobai fell silent.

He and Speechless had been engaged in a pincer attack by the gigantic black scorpions, steel rhinoceroses and stone dragons. Just the number of black scorpions numbered above ten thousand.

If 139 black scorpions was considered above average, what was the standard of the calamity he and Speechless encountered?

It was unknown if that calamity was his first or if it was

Speechless's second or third calamity.

Pulp Farmer and the hundred odd scorpions fought in an intense battle for more than ten minutes. Pulp Farmer was not immune to poison like Shi Xiaobai, so he needed to be constantly wary against the scorpions' poisons. Therefore, he fought very meticulously and spent quite a bit of time. However, Pulp Farmer was rather strong, so it was just a matter of time for him to defeat the black scorpions.

Shi Xiaobai suddenly thought of a problem and asked Liu Yu, "If we are currently in Transcendence, how would the black scorpions appear?"

Liu Yu said with a laugh, "The scorpions will appear outside Transcendence before attacking Transcendence. In fact, many trial-takers will choose to hide in Transcendence or other places to avoid the calamity. In the beginning, it would be effective, but with the difficulty of the calamity increasing every round, no country will be able to protect the trial-taker later on. Furthermore, no country will choose to protect the trial-taker. Legends say that the thirty-fourth calamity can easily destroy Transcendence, with no one being able to protect it. Therefore, no one else dares to attempt what Overlord Ji Feng did back in the day."

Shi Xiaobai nodded and immediately understood the difficulty involved in this matter. If the thirty-fourth calamity could easily destroy Transcendence, it meant that Leonis could not withstand it at all. Therefore, the difficulty was obviously hard.

At this moment, Pulp Farmer finally finished the last scorpion

and slowly walked over.

“Sorry for keeping you waiting. Let’s go, the Door of the Bravehearts is already not far from here!”

# Chapter 385: Darling, You Finally Came Back?

---

In front of the Door of the Bravehearts, the pavilion that was overgrown with grass despite once sending off countless Bravehearts was rundown and deserted. However, there were two figures sitting in the pavilion. They added a beauty to the bleakness of the area.

They were two beautiful girls.

One of them was wearing an azure-colored dress. She was sitting silently with her eyes slightly dazed. Her back was facing the Infernal domain, while her gaze was cast onto the desolate plains, as though she was waiting for something.

The other girl was dressed in a school uniform with a short skirt. She had silver hair and exquisite facial features. She wore black-rimmed glasses and had the liveliness of her youth, but also seemed elegant and graceful. She was reading a book that was in her hand.

However, the silver-haired girl would occasionally look up from her books and glance at Sunless, with a hesitant look.

In this pavilion, the silver-haired girl had accompanied Sunless for an entire night and an entire day. Although she could kill time by reading books, it was still too boring.

The silver-haired girl hesitated for a moment before finally taking out her writing board and wrote a line of text before gently rapping the table.

Sunless slowly turned her head and read the words on the board with all seriousness.

It was written:

“Sis Sunless, the person you are waiting for... If the person chose another method or was eliminated at the other levels because of bad luck, what would you do?”

This was a rather realistic problem. The silver-haired girl did not know who Sunless was waiting for, nor did she know the reason why Sunless was waiting. However, the silver-haired girl knew that there were too many possibilities for her to keep waiting like this.

The person Sunless was waiting for might not necessarily come to the Infernal domain. In that case, Sunless would be wasting her precious time by waiting. With the passage of time, more and more difficult calamities would befall Sunless, eventually forcing her to use the exit command.

The silver-haired girl was somewhat worried that Sunless would not meet the person she was waiting for.

Sunless said with a deadpan expression, “Will come.”



Her tone was as pure as spring water, but there was no way to tell if the mood was extremely confident or not.

The silver-haired girl paused for a moment before writing: “I see, so did you agree on meeting at the Door of the Bravehearts?”

Sunless shook her head. “No.”

The silver-haired girl was somewhat at a loss whether to laugh or to cry as she quickly wrote: “Then how are you so sure that the person you are waiting for will come!? Did he (she) mention it earlier?”

The silver-haired girl could not be sure if the person Sunless was waiting for was male or female, so when she wrote ‘he’, she added an additional ‘she’.

Sunless shook her head once again. With some hesitation, she whispered, “Not coming is also fine.”

The silver-haired girl was somewhat dumbfounded, but she could sense a resolute tone in the emotionless voice.

Sunless waited without caring if she could manage to wait for him. All she wanted was to wait, and that she had to wait.

The person she was waiting for was too, too important to her.

She had to wait for him, and it did not matter if he would come!

The silver-haired girl slowly figured this out as her eyes lit up slightly. Her Soul of Gossip burned intensely as she giggled and wrote: “Is the person Sis Sunless is waiting for someone she likes?”

Sunless’ dull eyes immediately turned dazed before they turned deep.

At this moment, silence was equivalent to acquiescence, with silence beating speech.

The silver-haired girl was immediately left more curious. She did not want to disturb Sunless any further, but her thoughts of accompanying Sunless in her waiting became firmer. She was in no hurry to enter the Infernal domain and she had plenty of time left. She believed that she could clear the first thirty calamities.

What she was eager to know was the person Sunless was waiting for. Who was it? It was unknown if she knew the person or if she had seen the person before!

Suddenly, the silver-haired girl felt an extremely dangerous aura as her hair stood up. Immediately, she turned around!

Sunless had also simultaneously felt the same sense of danger as she turned.

They were looking in the direction of the Door of the

Bravehearts.

Out of the narrow intersection, a graceful figure slowly walked out.

On closer look, it was something that made one involuntarily hold one's breath.

This was because the person who walked out was an extremely beautiful woman dressed in rainbow-colored robes. Her skin was as white as snow, and her beauty was peerless. It was enough to topple kingdoms. Her body was excellent with a voluptuous chest and slender hips. She was a stunner.

However, each strand of hair the beautiful woman had was in the shape of a thin snake!

The snake-haired woman walked out of the Infernal domain and floated towards the pavilion!

Upon seeing her face, Sunless immediately grabbed Holy Radiance, which was on the table.

The silver-haired girl also raised the book in her hand in a battle pose. Her other hand quickly wrote three words on the writing board.

“Infernal Queen Medusa!”

Medusa was the name of the beautiful lady walking slowly in front of them.

She was the only wife of the Infernal King, the mistress of the Infernal domain!

Her strength was equally terrifying; it was just slightly weaker than the Infernal King's!

Why did Infernal Queen Medusa suddenly appear outside the Infernal domain!?

Sunless and the silver-haired girl immediately turned cautious.

The Infernal Queen slowly walked over and soon reached the pavilion. She revealed a beautiful smile that could overwhelm all men and said, "Don't worry, This Queen will not attack you."

The Infernal Queen's voice was pleasing to the ears, but Sunless and the silver-haired girl did not dare to relax.

The Infernal Queen shook her head and laughed. She sat at a stone table a distance away from Sunless and softly said, "This Door of the Bravehearts is already in such a run down state. This Queen hasn't seen Bravehearts dare to stay around here for countless years. Don't worry, This Queen never kills Bravehearts, because every time they appear, This Queen can admire the Darling Husband's magnificence. To This Queen, it is a form of

enjoyment.”

The Darling Husband the Infernal Queen was referring to was naturally the Infernal King.

Sunless and the silver-haired girl remained alert in silence. Although they could not sense any killing intent from the Infernal Queen, they were not naive to believe that the beautiful snake-haired woman was a harmless herbivore.

The Infernal Queen moved her lips slightly once again as she softly said, “It seems both of you are waiting for someone? This Queen’s Darling Husband who makes one lovesick is about to return. You wouldn’t mind This Queen from waiting in this pavilion for a while, right?”

Upon hearing this, Sunless and the silver-haired girl exchanged looks. Both of them were astonished.

What the Infernal Queen meant was that the Infernal King was not in the Infernal domain. Furthermore, the Infernal King was about to return?

Sunless and the silver-haired girl exchanged looks once again, but they managed to calm down.

They sat back down at the stone table.

The method of killing the Infernal King to clear the seventh level

was something she would attempt sooner or later. Since the Infernal King was about to return, it just meant the pushing forward of an intense battle.

Sunless sighed. She did not have much confidence in defeating the Infernal King. She did not care about winning or losing, nor did she care about clearing the seventh level. All she wanted was to wait for Shi Xiaobai!

The heavens seemed to hear her inner thoughts at that moment.

Suddenly, across the barren land, four figures appeared!

Sunless immediately saw an extremely familiar figure among them!

Wasn't that black-haired youth Shi Xiaobai?

Shi Xiaobai had indeed come!

Sunless immediately stood up from her seat.

The silver-haired girl also noticed the four figures walking from the horizon. Similarly, she first noticed Shi Xiaobai from the group.

She had encountered Shi Xiaobai back in the second level when they were protecting the city. Back then, Shi Xiaobai had given up

the honor of being first to clear the level by selflessly using 500 of his points to heal the city's tree. It had shocked and touched her.

Brother Xiaobai, we have finally met again!

The silver-haired girl stood up with a smile as well.

Sunless and the silver-haired girl stood up spontaneously as they walked out of the pavilion.

But there was a figure that was even faster than them, and it felt more urgent than them!

The Infernal Queen was walking in front of them.

At the same time, a coquettish and mesmerizing voice resounded in front of the two girls.

“Darling, you finally came back?”

...

# Chapter 386: Did I Make A Mistake

---

“Darling, you finally came back?”

The Infernal Queen had a sultry voice that sounded like lingering piano music. Her tone was filled with the coquetry and melancholy of a woman that felt lovesick. It was pleasant to the ears and moving. It caused one to feel distraught.

The Infernal Queen took light steps with an elegant posture. Under her gorgeous dress was a voluptuous and curvy figure. Her beauty was stifling.

When Sunless and the silver-haired girl saw the four figures walking from the horizon, they immediately recognized the familiar black-haired youth. They had spontaneously headed forward, but the Infernal Queen was faster than them.

Upon hearing the Infernal Queen say such words with a petty pout, Sunless and the silver-haired girl felt a jolt through their minds. They could not help but come to a stop as they cast their gazes at the Infernal Queen.

The only person that could be so intimately addressed by the Infernal Queen as ‘Darling’ was the Infernal domain’s Infernal King!

And at that moment, the Infernal Queen had apparently said those words to the Infernal King.



The Infernal King was back?

Sunless and the silver-haired girl looked over warily, but the direction the Infernal Queen was heading in was where the four figures were coming from.

Where was the Infernal King?

When Shi Xiaobai came from a distance away, he similarly saw Sunless and the silver-haired girl in the pavilion. However, he soon saw an extremely beautiful snake-haired woman heading towards him.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes could not help but automatically land onto the snake-haired woman's eyes because he could sense the beautiful eyes staring at him.

As their eyes met, Shi Xiaobai immediately felt a certain set of emotions emitting from the crystal-like eyes.

Such a look and emotions were something Shi Xiaobai had previously seen before.

Kali frequently used to look at him in such a manner. As for the snake-haired girl, the emotions in her eyes were even more intense.

However, the trio beside Shi Xiaobai came to a stop with drastic changes to their expressions. They turned their heads to survey their surroundings as they became nervous.

The beautiful snake-haired woman in front of them was too prominent. The trio immediately recognized her with a glance.

Infernal Queen Medusa. Any trial-taker that previously went to the Infernal domain and was lucky to meet the Infernal Queen Medusa would leave behind a description of her—beauty that topples countries, unfathomable, world's greatest beauty, second strongest person in the Infernal domain!

The trio immediately understood the Infernal Queen's charm, but had no mood to enjoy it because they could clearly sense a formless threat with every step the Infernal Queen took.

Dangerous!

Very dangerous!

Extremely dangerous!

This was the first feeling the Infernal Queen gave to the trio.

And the words the Infernal Queen said made them immediately turn wary!

The person the Infernal Queen referred to could only be the Infernal King.

And the meaning of the sentence was... The Infernal King had returned?

Pulp Farmer and company immediately surveyed their surroundings nervously, hoping to catch sight of the Infernal King.

Noticing the trio beside him stopping, Shi Xiaobai immediately turned his eyes away from the snake-haired woman. He slowly came to a halt and turned back curiously. “What’s the matter?”

Liu Yu was snapped out of his daze and remembered that Shi Xiaobai did not know of Medusa’s identity. He immediately warned him with a whisper, “Be careful. This snake-haired woman is the wife of the Infernal King, Infernal Queen Medusa!”“

Shi Xiaobai was surprised as he turned to look at the graceful snake-haired woman who was still walking over. The woman suddenly appeared three meters from him when she was a few hundred meters away just an instant ago.

Shi Xiaobai’s heart jumped slightly, but he did not sense any hostility from the woman. As such, he did not make much of a reaction.

As for Pulp Farmer and company, they jumped out of their skin as they took on a battle stance!

But at this moment, the Infernal Queen swept her eyes across the trio.

The trio immediately turned their heads away, to the point of even turning their entire bodies.

Legends said that the Infernal Queen Medusa's stare could petrify enemies that looked into her eyes. The trio did not dare to risk it and immediately chose to avert their gazes.

“Darling, are these three people your...friends?”

The Infernal Queen's sultry voice sounded as the trio turned their heads in surprise.

What was the meaning of those words?

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised because when the Infernal Queen was saying that, she was clearly looking at him. He said with a frown, “Are you talking to This King?”

A look of consternation appeared on the Infernal Queen's face. She asked curiously, “What does Darling mean? Would I call anyone else Darling?”

With that said, everyone was stunned.

Pulp Farmer and company widened their eyes while the silver-haired girl gaped. Even Sunless could not help but utter an 'Ah'.

The Infernal Queen actually addressed Shi Xiaobai as 'Darling'!

Heavens, what the hell is going on!?

As the party in question, Shi Xiaobai appeared rather calm. He looked at her and said calmly, "This King has never seen you before, so how can he be your husband?"

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she frowned slightly and said sadly, "Darling, what's the meaning of this? You have been away from home for several days, making me long for you. And the moment you come back, you pretend not to know me?"

Shi Xiaobai said helplessly, "Think again carefully. This King is really not your husband!"

The Infernal Queen said with scoff, "Darling, are you testing me? You change guises every time when out in the external world, but I have accompanied you by your side for such a long period of time. Even if you disguise yourself as a wizened old man, I would be able to recognize you with a glance, much less you being a youth! Darling, stop pulling my leg!"

After the Infernal Queen said this, she took a step towards Shi Xiaobai.

As a knee-jerk reaction, Shi Xiaobai immediately took a step backwards as he said with a deep voice, “You are truly mistaken. This King is not your husband.”

The Infernal Queen came to a stop as she gaped slightly before lowering her head. She said softly, “Did I do something wrong?”

The look of her who was about to cry was one that made anyone that saw her to love and pity her.

Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly. The snake-haired woman’s expression and demeanor did not look fake. It did not look anything like acting.

But this was really the first time he was seeing the snake-haired woman, so he was obviously not the woman’s husband.

Furthermore, Liu Yu had just warned him that the woman was the Infernal Queen, the wife of the Infernal King.

If the Infernal Queen addressed him as her husband, wouldn’t that make him the Infernal King?

Shi Xiaobai was rendered speechless. He was clearly here to kill the Infernal King, so how did he suddenly become the Infernal King?

Mistaken identity?

Or was it a conspiracy?

But with the Infernal Queen's identity, how could she use the term 'Darling' as part of a plot?

"He isn't."

A cold voice echoed at that moment.

Sunless walked from afar and calmly walked past the Infernal Queen, coming beside Shi Xiaobai.

Then, she turned around and looked straight into the Infernal Queen's eyes, saying with absolute certainty, "He is not the Infernal King."

The Infernal Queen turned her melancholic gaze from Shi Xiaobai and gave Sunless a serious look. She softly said, "The person you have been waiting for in front of the Door of the Bravehearts is my husband?"

Sunless nodded before shaking her head. She said seriously, "It's him, but he's not your husband."

Sunless, who was always a person of few words, revealed a rare desire to obtain victory in this dispute.

Pulp Farmer and company also snapped out of their daze. However, they did not know what to say. They obviously did not believe that Shi Xiaobai was the Infernal King, but they similarly did not think that the Infernal Queen would use the Infernal King's name for 'acting'.

What the hell was the situation?

Shi Xiaobai sighed and looked at the Infernal Queen before saying, "You must have been mistaken for some reason. This King isn't the Infernal King, nor does This King know you."

The Infernal Queen sighed similarly and said faintly, "Shi Xiaobai, you have a red mole beneath your right armpit, and a birthmark on the left side of your chest. Try explaining, did I make a mistake?"

...



# Chapter 387: I Know Every Inch Of Your Body!

---

“Shi Xiaobai, you have a red mole at the bottom of your right armpit, and a birthmark on your left chest. Try explaining, did I make a mistake?”

The Infernal Queen’s words were like a bolt of lightning out of the blue, startling everyone present. Even Shi Xiaobai was momentarily left stunned.

The few of them had never mentioned the name Shi Xiaobai, but the Infernal Queen was able to naturally call it out. But of course, if the Infernal Queen wanted to obtain Shi Xiaobai’s name, it would probably not be difficult.

However, how did the Infernal Queen know about the birthmark on the left side of his chest?

Shi Xiaobai was stunned. He really had a birthmark on his left chest, but ever since he crossed worlds, he had never mentioned this to anyone. How did the Infernal Queen know of the birthmark on the left side of his chest?

And even more crazy was the Infernal Queen mentioning the red mole underneath his right armpit.

Was there a red mole underneath Shi Xiaobai’s right armpit?

Even Shi Xiaobai himself did not know. After all, he did not have a fetish of using a mirror to look at his armpit.

How did the Infernal Queen know of something that even he did not know?

But by providing three pieces of information in such a certain manner, with two of them already correct, there was no reason for the third piece of information to be baloney.

However, this third piece of information that Shi Xiaobai could not judge its veracity was something only a person extremely close to him could learn of. In Shi Xiaobai's memory, there probably wasn't a chance for others to peep at his right armpit.

Then, how did the Infernal Queen learn of this information?

Did his right armpit really have a red mole?

Obviously, Shi Xiaobai could not take off his clothes on the spot to test its veracity. He could only look suspiciously at the Infernal Queen and ask with a serious tone, "How do you know of this?"

With this said, everyone looked incredulously at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai's words implied that the Infernal Queen was not speaking nonsense.

How did the Infernal Queen know that there was a birthmark on Shi Xiaobai's left chest and that he had a red mole underneath his armpit?

Could it be...

Pulp Farmer and company thought of a particular possibility as they drew a gasp.

The pure Sunless and the silver-haired girl naturally did not connect the dots. Their minds were similarly filled with questions. They obviously did not believe that Shi Xiaobai was the Infernal King, so they were puzzling how the Infernal Queen had gained knowledge of the three pieces of information.

The answer came out of the Infernal Queen's lips with a coy tone in her voice.

"Darling, why do you knowingly ask such a question? I know obviously because I've seen it with my own eyes."

What sounded like a sentence that could be taken for granted immediately widened the eyes of everyone.

Seen with her own eyes?

Wouldn't that mean...

Pulp Farmer and company shook their heads immediately. They told themselves to stop wildly guessing certain impossibilities!

Shi Xiaobai said in surprise, “This is clearly the first time This King is meeting you, how did you see it with your own eyes? When did you see it? Where did you see it?”

The Infernal Queen’s tone of certainty and the seemingly flawless explanation quickly made Shi Xiaobai question if he had remembered wrongly, or if he had forgotten something.

Shi Xiaobai’s confidence weakened. After all, he had lost consciousness for a period of time at the sixth level and he did not even know how he had reached the seventh level.

Could it be that he had met the Infernal Queen when he lost unconsciousness, to the point of being half naked in front of her?

No, even so, he shouldn’t have become the Infernal King for no good reason!

Shi Xiaobai felt that he needed to figure out the matter.

And when the Infernal Queen heard Shi Xiaobai’s question, she fell into a daze as her eyes shimmered. She bit her lips as though she was angry. After a few moments she sighed and said, “Are you trying to make it difficult for me?”

Shi Xiaobai pricked up his eyebrows slightly, “Making it

difficult?”

The Infernal Queen lowered her head slightly and whispered, “Do you really want me to say when and where I saw it?”

Shi Xiaobai said with a nod, “Could it be that you actually don’t have an answer?”

At this moment, Feng Yuanlin interjected, “Boss Shi Xiaobai, it’s best to not continue asking, right?”

Shi Xiaobai turned his head and wondered out aloud, “Why not?”

The Infernal Queen looked up and gave Shi Xiaobai a serious look. Her fair skin blushed with a faint pinkness. As she bit her lower lip slightly, her eyes flashed with a struggling look before she sighed sadly. As though she was giving her everything, she suddenly turned her head sideways and said something that was nearly inaudible.

“Where else could I see it? Of course it was on the...bed.”

With this said, the atmosphere turned silent.

Feng Yuanlin turned his head over and muttered, “I already said to not ask any further...”

Shi Xiaobai was stunned for a moment before reacting. He was

not dumb enough to not understand what the sentence meant.

A close relationship between a couple was already the answer.

But Shi Xiaobai was not the Infernal King!

How could he have been in bed with the Infernal Queen before!?

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a moment and looked at the Infernal Queen before seriously saying, “In the end, all this is because you mistook This King for your husband, and that This King is the Infernal King. But there must be a certain misunderstanding in this matter. Although the birthmark on the left chest is true, it might all be a coincidence. As for the red mole beneath the armpit, This King is not sure either, but there is no need to verify it. Because to tell you the truth, This King is not only not the Infernal King, but a Braveheart here to kill the Infernal King!”

If the Infernal Queen was not acting, then the only possibility was it being a misunderstanding. Since there was no way to resolve the misunderstanding, Shi Xiaobai did not plan on resolving it!

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she covered her mouth and said with a laugh, “Which Infernal King will call himself a Braveheart? To kill himself? Darling, you really are playful. I finally understand. You don’t want to reveal your identity in front of these outsiders. It was my mistake, and I’m sorry. But when it’s already done, can you stop denying it? I know every inch of your body, must I reveal them?”

With this said, before Shi Xiaobai reacted, Pulp Farmer and company could not help but give Shi Xiaobai incredulous looks.

Was this fucking true?

They were afraid of taking additional glances at Infernal Queen's beauty, so they could not help but imagine certain things when such bold words were said.

But the Infernal Queen suddenly said in a melancholic manner, "After all, Darling's clothes and shoes were sewn personally by me."

Pulp Farmer and company looked at each other.

Fuck, so that's what she meant. They nearly had their thoughts run wild.

However, what was strange was that after the Infernal Queen said those words, Shi Xiaobai suddenly turned silent. His eyebrows were knitted together, as though he was contemplating something.

There was a strange silence once again.

The Infernal Queen looked quietly at Shi Xiaobai.

Pulp Farmer and company looked at each other.

Why was Shi Xiaobai so silent at the moment?

Could it be...

Liu Yu suddenly said, “There are only seven Bravehearts that can reach the seventh level. This Penniless Priest is the seventh, and in the six people before me, there wasn’t Shi Xiaobai.”

Feng Yuanlin stared with widened eyes and exclaimed, “That can’t be?”

Pulp Farmer turned his head towards Liu Yu and said in disbelief, “Are you telling me that this could be a fake Shi Xiaobai?”

There were only seven Bravehearts, but this Shi Xiaobai that suddenly appeared claimed to be the eighth Braveheart, while the Infernal Queen insisted that Shi Xiaobai was the Infernal King.

Then there was only one explanation.

The Shi Xiaobai in front of them was not the real Shi Xiaobai, but a disguise of the Infernal King!

Against such doubts, Shi Xiaobai remained silent. It was an eerie silence.

“Real one.”



Sunless, who had been silent for a long period of time, suddenly spoke, “You are the real Shi Xiaobai. Aura cannot be faked.”

Sunless looked at Shi Xiaobai quietly. The sword aura from Shi Xiaobai that she liked a lot could not be faked. He had to be the real Shi Xiaobai.

Pulp Farmer added on at that moment, “Back in Transcendence, Shi Xiaobai had saved my life. The Infernal King would not have done that. He’s not the Infernal King!”

Feng Yuanlin nodded and said, “Boss Shi Xiaobai’s performance at Transcendence is something I’ll remember for life. I absolutely cannot believe that he is the Infernal King! Certainly not!”

Liu Yu frowned, “This Penniless Priest does not believe it either! This Penniless Priest believes that the Infernal King can one-shot Leonis in his fourth form, but This Penniless Priest has to question if Benefactor Shi Xiaobai is capable of doing so. Furthermore, Shi Xiaobai why aren’t you speaking?”

Everyone could not help but look at Shi Xiaobai.

That’s right. Shi Xiaobai, why are you suddenly silent?

Could it be...

The Infernal Queen shook her head and said apologetically, “Darling, sorry. I put you in the spot. I never expected you to value

these people so highly to the point of refusing to expose your identity in front of them. It was my fault. I should have realized that earlier.”

“It’s okay. You are not to be blamed.”

Shi Xiaobai, who had been silent for a long while, suddenly spoke.

The few words caused everyone to gasp.

They looked unbelievably at Shi Xiaobai.

“Shi Xiaobai” gave everyone a helpless look and said, “Sorry everyone. This King is indeed the Infernal King!”

...

# Chapter 388: Proving His Identity

---

“Sorry everyone. This King is indeed the Infernal King!”

Shi Xiaobai said helplessly, “But This King is the real Shi Xiaobai as well.”

When everyone heard this, they were startled, but thankfully, Shi Xiaobai quickly clarified with another sentence. But even so, the two sentences also immediately made them feel dumbfounded.

What did the words that sounded full of contradiction mean?

He was indeed the Infernal King?

But the real Shi Xiaobai as well?

Then the words meant that...the Infernal King and Shi Xiaobai were the same person?

“That’s impossible!”

Liu Yu frowned and said, “Don’t forget, we are trial...”

Shi Xiaobai stretched his hand out to interrupt what Liu Yu wanted to say. In fact, what Liu Yu wanted to express was something everyone present knew except the Infernal Queen. Shi Xiaobai was still a trial-taker from the human world. As for the

Infernal King, he was a fake existence created by the assessment program. Although the Infernal King formerly existed as a true history on another plane of existence, the present Infernal King was fake. Every month, he would return with a refresh of the assessment program.

Shi Xiaobai was real but the Infernal King was fake. How could the two be the same existence?

But regardless if Shi Xiaobai was the Infernal King or not, if he did not have a persuasive argument, it was impossible for him to say such a ridiculous statement.

Everyone looked at Shi Xiaobai and waited for his explanation.

However, Shi Xiaobai did not immediately explain. Instead, he turned to look at the Infernal Queen and softly said, “Go back first. When This King explains to these friends, This King will return to the Infernal domain.”

The subtext of his words clearly indicated that Shi Xiaobai did not wish for the Infernal Queen to hear his explanation.

The Infernal Queen bit her lower lip and felt somewhat aggrieved. What was there to explain?

However, Shi Xiaobai had already indicated that these people were his friends, and the Infernal Queen could sense that Shi Xiaobai attached a high value to them, so she did not act

capriciously.

“Then, I’ll return first.”

The Infernal Queen said dejectedly as she turned to head towards the Infernal domain. She turned her head back with every step, but with her graceful pose and elegant footsteps, she disappeared into the Door of the Bravehearts in three steps.

After the Infernal Queen left, the area fell into a strange silence.

No one took the initiative to break the silence.

As there were too many questions they wanted to ask, they did not know which to ask first. They only looked quietly at Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai fell silent for a moment and pondered over his words. With a cough, he said, “Before This King explains the situation, it seems that This King needs to prove that he is really Shi Xiaobai. Let’s do it this way, all of you should ask a question only Shi Xiaobai can answer, but something that the Infernal King can’t. Looks can be disguised while actions can be feigned, but memories can’t be copied, right?”

Although Shi Xiaobai felt that the reason why he had become the Infernal King amusing, it had to be said that there were several pieces of evidence pointing to the possibility of him being the Infernal King. If he wasn’t the person in question, he might have

the same doubts as well.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai felt that before ‘explaining’, he needed to prove his identity first.

Shi Xiaobai turned to look at Liu Yu. As the proponent of the hypothesis, Liu Yu was probably the person who had the greatest doubts.

Liu Yu bashfully smiled and said, “Why does it seem like This Penniless Priest is a wretched person with sinister thoughts? First things first, This Penniless Priest believes that you are Shi Xiaobai, but there are too many suspicious points regarding this matter. For example, how did you become the eighth Braveheart to clear the level, despite the rules saying that only seven trial-takers can clear the sixth level?”

“In the second, fifth and sixth level, This Penniless Priest had been watching you all along. Back then, although you had outstanding strength, it was not as terrifying as when you were in Transcendence. You possess a body that can rival Moya and Leonis’s bodies, making it rather unbelievable. How long has it been? This exaggerated rate of improvement is completely unscientific.”

“Furthermore, it’s well known that the Infernal Queen deeply loves the Infernal King. She is extremely faithful, so it’s impossible for her to destroy her reputation to address another person as her husband. The reason why she would do so is because she is absolutely certain that you are the Infernal King.”

“Also, your knowledge regarding the seventh world is severely lacking. Furthermore, you did not immediately clear the level after defeating Leonis, which goes against common logic. You being targeted by the assessment program is rather far-fetched as well.”

“There are too many suspicious points, so many that This Penniless Priest can’t help but feel suspicious, even if your character, habits, and looks are all identical to the Shi Xiaobai This Penniless Priest knows. However, This Penniless Priest hasn’t known you for long, so it’s impossible to be absolutely certain.”

“Therefore, even if such suspicion is rather unfriendly, This Penniless Priest has no choice but to play the devil’s advocate. Shi Xiaobai, can you tell This Penniless Priest what were the first words of This Penniless Priest on our first meeting?”

Liu Yu apparently did not wish to spark off any bad feelings with Shi Xiaobai by giving a series of explanations.

Shi Xiaobai was obviously not a petty person. And indeed, there were many suspicious points regarding this matter that even he was unable to explain clearly.

Shi Xiaobai pondered for a moment, and quickly recalled the first words Liu Yu said to him on their first meeting. The main reason was that it left quite a deep impression on Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai imitated Liu Yu’s posture back then and stretched out his right hand. He pointed his index and middle finger at Liu Yu

and said, “Benefactor! This Penniless Priest notices that your glabella seems dark, that’s an ominous portent!”

Shi Xiaobai imitated him wonderfully, as though he was a professional con man.

Liu Yu gave an embarrassed smile and nodded his head. He said, “That’s right, completely ad verbatim.”

Shi Xiaobai said with a laugh, “Then, next person.”

Feng Yuanlin immediately lifted his hand and asked, “Me. I’ll do the asking. Boss Shi Xiaobai, what’s my name?”

This question made Liu Yu involuntarily roll his eyes.

Shi Xiaobai was rather pleased with Feng Yuanlin’s performance back in Transcendence, so he naturally knew his name. He immediately answered, “Feng Yuanlin.”

Feng Yuanlin, who received the answer, immediately laughed heartily and said, “Haha, Boss Shi Xiaobai remembers my name. Sweet!”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but smile in his heart. This lackey was not bad after all, and he was worth taking in.

Following that, Shi Xiaobai turned his head to look at Pulp



Farmer.

Pulp Farmer was startled before he reacted. After pondering for a moment, he said, "I don't have anything to ask. Regardless if you are Shi Xiaobai or the Infernal King, you have once saved my life. Of course, I would prefer to believe that you are Shi Xiaobai."

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head and turned to look at the silver-haired girl that was standing beside Sunless.

The silver-haired girl was already prepared. She immediately raised the writing board in her hands and on it were the words: "Brother Xiaobai, do you remember me?"

Shi Xiaobai said with a nod, "Of course!"

Although he had only interacted with the silver-haired girl who wore black-rimmed glasses for a few waves of demonic beasts, Shi Xiaobai had a deep and favorable impression of her.

Back then, he had vaguely guessed that her strength was formidable because she was the second rookie to reach City #1. The speed at which she cleared the first level far exceeded the other rookies, at a speed much faster than Liu Yu. Furthermore, the speed at which she cleared the demonic beasts that came from her city gate was no slower than his.

And at this moment, Shi Xiaobai was not overly astonished meeting the silver-haired girl again on the seventh level.

However, Shi Xiaobai clearly remembered that this girl who could not speak was a very talkative person. Back when he met her the first time, she had bombarded him with questions. Her liveliness and cuteness was lovable.

Shi Xiaobai immediately prepared himself mentally for receiving the cute and talkative girl's bombardment of questions.

# Chapter 389: The Infernal King Is Also A King

---

However, unlike what Shi Xiaobai imagined, the silver-haired girl only asked a question that bordered on a greeting before putting her writing board away. She squinted her eyes as she beamed at him.

Shi Xiaobai was slightly surprised and felt slightly warm in the heart.

Although he was not very familiar with her considering how he had only met her once, they never had the feeling of being unacquainted since the moment they met. They had a feeling that they could be friends upon meeting each other.

From the looks of it, that feeling wasn't wrong.

Shi Xiaobai finally turned his head towards Sunless.

She was the only person who had not asked a question, but Shi Xiaobai knew that she would not ask, nor would it be possible for her to ask.

“Your sword.”

Sunless obviously did not ask. Instead, she handed over Holy Radiance that she had been carrying closely by her side to Shi

Xiaobai. Back at the fifth level, she had suffered internal injuries because of Sen Senyuan's sneak attack. Shi Xiaobai had handed Holy Radiance that came equipped with healing properties to her. He had selflessly lent her his sword.

Therefore, from the beginning, even if the azure companion sword Sunless had cracked, she would not tolerate letting Holy Radiance suffer even a scratch.

At this moment, Sunless finally managed to return the precious holy sword.

However, this act of returning the sword was actually not simple. It implied that she absolutely believed that the Shi Xiaobai in front of her was the real Shi Xiaobai.

Shi Xiaobai felt a little touched as he stretched out his hand to receive Holy Radiance. That familiar feeling of light warmed his cold palm.

The holy sword emitted a clear sword hum as well, as though it was the joyful yelp of having returned to its master.

Shi Xiaobai converted Holy Radiance into light and stored it in his right hand. Next he looked at Sunless and asked softly, "How long have you been waiting here?"

Sunless shook her head. "A short while."

Shi Xiaobai naturally would not believe that it was really a short while. He apologized, “This King thought you would be in Transcendence, so he went there first.”

Sunless blinked her eyes and lowered her head slightly, saying, “I thought you will kill the Infernal King.”

They both thought in the shoes of the other.

Shi Xiaobai gave a helpless laugh, “But you and This King would never imagine that This King actually was the Infernal King!”

The lengthy conversation finally came back to the main point, as though it had experienced an unnecessary bedding of foundations.

But it was in fact not unnecessary.

Liu Yu eagerly said, “Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, don’t keep us guessing any further. This Penniless Priest believes you are the real Shi Xiaobai. Isn’t that enough? Quickly explain why you would suddenly claim to be the Infernal King? Was it done to fool the Infernal Queen and send her away?”

Everyone cast their gazes on Shi Xiaobai. They were also filled with questions on this matter. Since Shi Xiaobai was the real Shi Xiaobai, why would he suddenly claim to be the Infernal King?

Was it as Liu Yu guessed that he was only doing this to send the Infernal Queen away, so he came up with the idea to lie?

Shi Xiaobai shook his head and said, “Of course it’s not to send the Infernal Queen away, but that This King realized the truth. Sorry everyone, This King is really the Infernal King of the Infernal domain!”

Liu Yu frowned and said, “This explanation doesn’t make sense. You are clearly a trial-taker that exists for real, and the Infernal King is a fictional figure created by the assessment program. How can you be the Infernal King?”

“No, it can be explained, and in fact, it’s very simple.”

Shi Xiaobai calmly said, “In fact, This King initially had his doubts. In the beginning, This King thought that the Infernal Queen was mistaken because of This King’s aura or some other factor, but the Infernal Queen was able to pinpoint certain characteristics of This King’s body. Furthermore, she knows of This King’s name to the point of even saying words of ‘clothes sewn personally’. If This King continues probing, she definitely would be able to recite the dimensions of This King’s clothes and shoes. This proves a very important point. The Infernal Queen is rather familiar with This King!”

Everyone listened quietly as they pricked their ears up. At this moment, Shi Xiaobai was like a detective explaining the case, and he was resolving what seemed like an unresolvable mystery step by step.

No one interrupted as Shi Xiaobai continued, “When This King

realized that the Infernal Queen is truly familiar with This King, and that it wasn't a coincidence, This King suddenly had a question. Why is the Infernal Queen so familiar with This King? Then, This King thought of the first answer. The Infernal Queen is created by the assessment program. Then, her memories, actions are naturally controlled by the assessment program! In fact, This King had previously been unconscious for a moment. This King's clothes were changed by Ka...someone. The assessment program might have gotten unique information of This King's body from that period of time, as well as the dimensions of This King's clothes and shoes! As long as the assessment program passes this information to the Infernal Queen, it can then be explained how the Infernal Queen is so familiar with This King. Then, why would the assessment program pass This King's information to the Infernal Queen, to the point of letting the Infernal Queen use this information to fool us, accusing This King as the Infernal King?"

The crowd who were listening with relish were momentarily puzzled when Shi Xiaobai asked. They instinctively asked, "Why?"

Shi Xiaobai nodded in satisfaction. He asked the question, not because he wished that they could immediately think of the reason, but did so as a form of explanation through a question and answer format.

"That's because This King has been targeted by the assessment program!"

Shi Xiaobai said seriously, "This King has been targeted by the assessment program, and it is no joke, nor are they words of arrogance. Instead, it's a guess, but it's a guess that This King is

even more certain of. But soon, This King thought of another simple question. Why would the assessment program use such a lowly technique to target This King? By letting the Infernal Queen make all of you think that This King is the Infernal King, wouldn't this tactic appear a bit too sloppy?"

Everyone nodded their heads in a daze. They also felt that the assessment program could use much cleverer tactics to target Shi Xiaobai. By slandering Shi Xiaobai with such an identity appeared rather sloppy.

Then, why did the assessment program do it?

"Because, the assessment program did so not to slander This King, but because...This King's identity in the seventh level has been set as the Infernal King!"

With this said, everyone snapped out of their daze. The doubts in their eyes seemed to be brushed aside as it became clear!

Such a simple and direct guess could explain everything!

"The seven of you have been transported into this world as Bravehearts. Then, This King naturally has an identity here in this world as well. And this identity clearly isn't the eighth Braveheart. Why did This King not clear the level despite becoming the champion of the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament? That's because This King isn't a Braveheart, so he did not have the qualification to even participate in it!"



Shi Xiaobai said with a deep voice, “Why does the Infernal Queen know so much about This King, to the point of having such deep feelings for This King? It’s because her memories were created and given to her by the assessment program. In her memories, This King is the Infernal King! And the Infernal King is This King’s identity in the world of this level! This King is really the Infernal King!”

The more complex a puzzle was, the simpler the answer usually was.

Since the assessment program could designate the trial-takers as Bravehearts, why couldn’t it designate Shi Xiaobai as the Infernal King? Although this was something that had never happened historically, Shi Xiaobai’s breaking of the sixth level’s rules by becoming the eighth person to reach the seventh level was already something that had never happened in the past!

To the assessment program, Shi Xiaobai was special. It was an existence that could ignore the rules!

Everyone was shocked beyond words. They never expected that the answer was so incredulous, but it was so reasonable. Even though it was just Shi Xiaobai’s guess, his guess was enough to explain everything. So this had to be the answer!

“What do you plan on doing?”

Liu Yu said with a deep voice, “If the assessment program is really targeting you, and designates your identity as the Infernal

King, it must have other tricks up its sleeves. It would not do this for nothing. What do you plan on doing next?”

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his eyes turned bright as he grinned. He said in a high-spirited manner without thinking, “This King is the Infernal King, which means that the entire Infernal domain is This King’s! To target This King, there has to be a price to be paid!”

Having become the Infernal King without any good reason, any other person would be trembling in panic.

However, Shi Xiaobai was not alarmed. Instead, he was overjoyed. By becoming the king of the Infernal domain, it was equivalent to owning the entire Infernal domain!

Shi Xiaobai only had one thought regarding the treasures in the Infernal domain—take them all, snatch them all, eat them all!

Regardless of the tricks the assessment program had prepared for him, he would strike first and eat first as a form of politeness!

However, there was a hidden concern in Shi Xiaobai’s bright eyes.

There was actually a very important basis for judging that he was the Infernal King.

However, he did not tell anyone else because this basis came from

the Absolute Choice that he had to keep secret.

Complete the King's Mandate.

Don't forget that the Infernal King is also a King!

...

# Chapter 390: Gods And Demons

---

There were a myriad of signs that indicated that the assessment program had assigned Shi Xiaobai the identity of Infernal King. Although it was just a form of inference and speculation, it was already able to explain nearly all the doubts. It was like a master key that could simultaneously unlock many locks at once.

As for becoming the Infernal domain's Infernal King, Shi Xiaobai was overjoyed instead of being afraid.

However, the situation made Shi Xiaobai involuntarily feel apologetic towards the people beside him. He said with a sigh, "Sorry, it seems the method of killing the Infernal King will not work."

For the trial-takers whose identities were Bravehearts, 'killing the Infernal King' was one of the four known methods to clear the seventh level. However, if Shi Xiaobai was really the Infernal King, it was definitely impossible for the people in front of him to choose this method. Therefore, it was equivalent to cleaving away one of the means of clearing.

However, the people in front of him apparently did not mind. Sunless did not care if she could clear the seventh level, while the silver-haired girl also shook her head with a beaming smile, indicating that she did not mind it.

Feng Yuanlin shrugged his shoulders and said, "I came here just to join in the bustle. Only four people have been able to clear the

seventh level, so I definitely wouldn't dare have any hopes of it!"

Pulp Farmer said in a self-deprecating manner, "The three of us couldn't even defeat Moya, so how could we expect ourselves to defeat the Infernal King?"

Liu Yu shook his head with a chortle as he said, "Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, your apology is somewhat redundant. To speak the truth, This Penniless Priest was already feeling extremely nervous from seeing the Infernal Queen. This Penniless Priest would likely be running if he faced the real Infernal King."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he shook his head helplessly and asked, "Then, what do all of you plan on doing next?"

Since the few of them had arrived to the seventh level, it was impossible for them to quit midway or give up easily. They would definitely try their best in an attempt to clear the level, so as to not leave any regrets even if they failed.

However, the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament had already finished, and Shi Xiaobai had for some reason become the Infernal King. This meant that there were two fewer methods.

The path ahead appeared to turn a lot narrower.

Liu Yu said softly, "Now, there are three obvious methods. First, survive a hundred days, second, challenge the legend of the Hero King, and third, find a fifth method to clear the level! To be

honest, This Penniless Priest is not confident with any of the three methods.”

“No, there is actually only two methods left.”

Pulp Farmer shook his head and said, “Did you forget that the legend of the Hero King is related to the Infernal King?”

Liu Yu faltered slightly and said with a wry smile, “Well, you are right. This Penniless Priest carelessly overlooked that. In that case, other than finding a method to clear it ourselves, there’s only the most screwed up way of surviving a hundred days?”

Surviving a hundred days didn’t sound difficult, but in fact, a hundred days represented a total of thirty-four calamities barraging trial-takers. It was not only a test of strength, but a test and torture of endurance and will.

Typically, only trial-takers who failed to find any other method or failed the other methods would finally choose the last method of surviving for a hundred days. Other than Overlord Ji Feng, no one had been able to last that long.

And the trial-takers that had experienced this would mostly describe such a method with two words—screwed up.

When Shi Xiaobai, who had been always curious about the Hero King’s fourth story but always forgot to inquire, heard Pulp Farmer say that the ‘legend of the Hero King was related to the

Infernal King’, he could not help but ask, “What did the Hero King do on the seventh level?”

...

...

Since time immemorial, gods and demons stood on opposite sides in an eternal clash!

This was an irrefutable truth. It clearly illustrated a single thing—gods and demons were mutually exclusive entities. It was like light and darkness, good and evil.

But it also had an implicit truth hidden in it—With gods, there would be demons. With demons, there would be gods!

Why was light considered light? Because of the existence of darkness!

Why was good called good? Because of evil!

This was the simplest and most unassailable fact in the world. There were always two sides of the coin that reinforced or opposed each other.

And the world in the seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower was such an example.

Although this world's era was termed as the Age of Bravehearts and the Infernal King, in fact, there were existences in this world that were the complete opposite from the devils—gods.

However, gods were just a legendary existences to most people. They were entities of made-up fantasies.

As gods had departed the world, no longer participating in worldly strifes, it was as though they had been wiped from the face of the mortal world.

Only very few mighty figures knew that this world had gods. Other than the Infernal domain and the mortal world, there was a third hidden kingdom, known as the...Celestial domain!

In the ancient books of the sages, a line said that—the Celestial domain is above the mortal world.

Many people believed that the sentence meant that the Celestial domain lorded above the mortal world.

But in fact, the sages vaguely indicating the existence of the Celestial domain and telling everyone where it was located!

The Celestial domain was above the mortal world, which meant that it was in the sky!



On the barren lands, Speechless kept heading north. The speed at which he proceeded wasn't fast, with him stopping and walking at times. Even though he did not appear too tired, he would occasionally sit or lie down on a cold and dead piece of rock. It looked like he was resting, but it looked more like he was wasting time.

When night fell, he would simply lie down on the desolate lands and have a good night's sleep.

Speechless was clearly heading in a particular direction, but he did not seem to be in a rush. Furthermore, it looked like he was intent on delaying the time of his arrival.

Even with him deliberately wasting time, Speechless finally arrived at the northern ends of the Silent Desolate Lands at noon of the second day.

The western end of the Silent Desolate Lands was the Door of the Bravehearts, and it was the only entrance to the Infernal domain.

On the eastern end of the Silent Desolate Lands was Transcendence, the city closest to the Infernal domain. It was also called the edge of the mortal world.

And on the northern end of the Silent Desolate Lands, there was an endless sea!

This sea was deserted because it did not have any living creatures

in it. There was only constantly churning dark blue seawater as well as the occasional storm or tsunamis.

When Speechless came to the shore, he stared at the silent and churning sea from afar.

After a while, a pair of gigantic crystal wings spread out behind Speechless. With a flap, he flew towards the sea.

As fast as lightning, he flew in the sky. From afar, he was like a bright line that split the sky above the sea.

The sea was boundless, but it was extremely boring. The sights one saw while flying was like a video being constantly repeated. Other than the ripples of the waves or the shapes of the clouds, there was nothing else that seemed to change.

Such a flight was easy but boring.

However, this deserted sea was apparently not that simple.

After Speechless flew for half an hour, an enormous change suddenly took place in front of him.

The clear and bright sky suddenly turned dark. Billowing thunderclouds covered the entire sky, as though night had fallen. There was the occasional deafening thunder rumbling and bright flashes of lightning that illuminated the darkness.

Speechless was still flying, but instead of slowing down, he increased his speed. A few bolts of lightning grazed past him, having nearly struck him. Speechless remained expressionless as he calmly flew forward.

Suddenly, during a brief instance of a flash, a horrifying picture appeared!

Across the vast sea, a spiraling sea current a few hundred meters across flowed from bottom to top, piercing straight into the sky, into the thunderclouds!

The sea current that surged into the sky was like a heavenly pillar. The speed at which the sea current was spiraling was much faster than common tornadoes or vortices. If one was sucked into it, one would instantly be ground into bits!

And such a gigantic sea current that rose up into the sky was just ten kilometers away from Speechless.

Lightning flashed, illuminating this horrifying scene briefly. It was also a warning to visitors that haven't visited this place in a while that this was a land of death which was not to be crossed.

However, Speechless appeared as though he did not see it. He did not even change his direction.

Within a kilometer from the rising sea current, winds raged. And

even closer, space even seem to distort. The spiraling power from the sea current was just the tip of the iceberg, but it already possessed the power to rip apart any ordinary lives.

But in the raging winds and distorted space, Speechless still did not change his direction, nor did he slow down.

He flew straight without stopping, plunging straight into the skyward vortex column!

# Chapter 391: I'm Only Waiting For You

---

“The Celestial domain is in the sky, and the only way to enter the Celestial domain is through a terrifying skyward sea current. The sea current is in a dead sea, and only by using the current’s skyward flow would one be able to enter the Celestial domain. The existence of the Celestial domain is a secret unknown to the inhabitants of this world. But to human trial-takers like us, there have been people who have already discovered the existence of the Celestial domain over countless exploratory trials. There have been people who have done deep research on the Celestial domain’s location and method of entry.”

“Of course, even if it’s known, almost no trial-taker has been able to really enter the Celestial domain because the speed of the spiraling sea current is too horrifying. It’s a force no human body can withstand, and it would rip a person to shreds upon entry. Only a few lucky ones with special abilities or amazingly strong freaks of nature have a chance at heading to the Celestial domain.”

Liu Yu said, “And back then, the Hero King was one of the extremely few trial-takers who successfully entered the Celestial domain!”

When Liu Yu said this, he paused slightly.

Shi Xiaobai immediately motioned for Liu Yu to continue. He never expected that the world had such an interesting historical background. Not only were there devils and the Infernal King, there were gods that isolated themselves!

If he knew of the existence of the Celestial domain, and that the difficulty of entering it was so high, Shi Xiaobai might have attempted it first.

Liu Yu clearly liked to keep people hanging with his storytelling skills. He came to an abrupt stop for ten seconds before saying, “The Hero King successfully reached the Celestial domain through the skyward sea current and with his impressive strength, he obtained the recognition of the race of the gods, the Celestials, where he was given a grand reception. Even the distinguished Celestial King hosted a banquet for him!”

Liu Yu gave a sly smile and suddenly said, “Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, try guessing what the Hero King did next!”

Shi Xiaobai rolled his eyes and after a little thought, he came up with the simplest answer, “Kill the Celestial King? Or defeat the Celestial King, and after that became the new Celestial King?”

This was the easiest answer to think of, but it was clearly not the real answer, or Liu Yu would not have made Shi Xiaobai guess.

However, Shi Xiaobai could not be bothered and said the answer Liu Yu wanted to hear.

Liu Yu shook his head in a happy mood before saying, “You guessed wrong. The Hero King did not challenge the Celestial King, but on the day of the banquet, he stole the most precious Celestial Jade from the Celestials!”

“Ah?”

Shi Xiaobai was truly astonished. Even though he did not know the deeds of the Hero King, a man who created the Age of Heroes was imaginably a righteous hero.

Why would he steal a treasure of the Celestials?

He believed that even if it was not a duel with the Celestial King, he must have done something that made one's blood boil.

But it was unexpected that the Hero King entered the Celestial domain to steal a treasure?

Shi Xiaobai murmured, “It must not have been this simple.”

Liu Yu immediately said with a laugh, “Of course it's not that simple! Not only did the Hero King steal the Celestial Jade, he even gave the Celestial Jade to the Infernal King! After that, he stole the Infernal King's Infernal Sword and rushed to give it to Leonis! Finally, through a technique stolen from the Celestials, he destroyed half the foundation of the Transcendence Holy Tree. All of this was accomplished by the Hero King within three days. It was such a short period of time that the three kings failed to react in time. By the time they reacted, they realized that their treasures were in the hands of another. They mistook it for the other party stealing their treasures. Therefore, this was how war that broke out in the Celestial domain, the Infernal domain and the mortal world, was instigated!”

Shi Xiaobai was dumbfounded when he heard this. By stealing the treasure of the Celestial King and pushing the blame to the Infernal King, he later stole the Infernal King's treasure to push the blame on Leonis, and then pushing the blame to the Celestials by destroying the Transcendence Holy Tree, the Hero King had directly sparked a trifecta hatred relationship between the three races! To be able to accomplish such a difficult feat in three days was astounding.

However, wasn't this the act too despicable?

By instigating a war between the three domains, wasn't it cold-blooded and ruthless?

Was the Hero King that pioneered the Age of Heroes a hero that shouldn't be admired?

Shi Xiaobai asked in a deep voice, "This was what the Hero King did? This is the most interesting story out of the four stories on the seventh level of the Transcendental Tower?"

Liu Yu chortled and said, "That's right. It's the most interesting story, one of the legendary stories of the Hero King!"

Shi Xiaobai fell silent before his eyes lit up slightly, "The story hasn't ended."

This was not the legendary story that he had in his mind. It wasn't even considered interesting, so how could it be called



legendary!

There was certainly more to the story.

“Of course!”

Liu Yu grinned and said, “The story has only just begun.”

...

...

What sort of existence was the Celestial domain?

Speechless had a clear imagination of the place through countless pieces of information. It was an imagination he was even sick of.

But when he truly arrived in the Celestial domain, he had the mistaken feeling that it was both familiar and unfamiliar.

It might have been a result of him being giddy after the constantly spiraling sea current, but he felt that he had come to this place thousands of times, but it also felt like he had never ever been here before.

This contradictory illusion made him feel a hazy sense of reality.

Speechless closed his eyes and rested for a while before slowly opening his eyes and taking slow steps forward.

Beneath his feet were snow-white clouds. Walking on the clouds felt like he was stepping on cotton. Occasionally, there would be a hole in the clouds, allowing him to see the distant ground through it. It was a deep abyss that did not seem to have an end.

One needed to be careful while walking on such clouds,

but Speechless began to increase his walking speed.

Before arriving, he did not want to arrive too quickly.

But after arriving, he began to feel eager.

“What a fool.”

Speechless gave a self-deprecating laugh. After walking on the ground made by clouds for a few minutes, he finally came in front of a gigantic stone door in the expanse of whiteness.

The door was the entrance to the Celestial domain.

“I’m finally here.”

Speechless felt mixed emotions as he looked at the door.

Suddenly, Speechless' pupils contracted slightly as a flicker of surprise flashed in his eyes.

There was a figure standing beside the stone door!

A person had reached the Celestial domain before him!

Although Speechless had deliberately wasted a lot of time on his journey here, it was still a surprise that someone reached the Celestial domain before him. This was because very few trial-takers had the ability to ride the skyward water current into the Celestial domain.

“I never expected that there would be such hidden talents in such a minor rookie selection.”

Speechless reflected over this matter as he walked towards the door. Soon, he saw the figure's face.

It was a girl.

It was a girl with short brown hair with a delicate beauty!

Speechless suddenly felt a sense of familiarity from the girl's looks. He quickly approached and the girl noticed his arrival as she opened her brown eyes.

The girl stood quietly where she was and remained motionless. She did not speak either, as she quietly watched Speechless walking towards her.

The closer he was, the more Speechless felt that the girl he was apparently seeing for the first time was someone he had previously seen or known.

When he came to five meters away from the girl, Speechless suddenly said in surprise, "It's you!"

Speechless remembered the girl. She was from a memory that was now covered in dust where she was a tiny figure, with the same brown hair and eyes.

"Mu, Mu, Mu..."

Speechless wanted to say out the girl's name, but it was as if his memories were grass weighed down by a rock. It could not surface in his mind, so all he could do was say a single word of her name.

"Mu Yuesheng."

Mu Yuesheng smiled and said softly, "Yue as in the moon, Sheng as in flute and pipes. Mu Yuesheng."

Speechless laughed in a somewhat embarrassed manner. He said apologetically, "Sorry about that. I remember you, but for some reason, I couldn't remember your name."

Mu Yuesheng shook her head and said, “It’s alright. It’s been ten years after all.”

Speechless said with reflective emotions, “Yes, it’s been ten years. It’s been so long, and I never expected to meet you here.”

Mu Yuesheng smiled and remained silent.

Speechless fell silent for a moment and said softly, “It doesn’t seem like you just arrived. Why do you stay in front of the Celestial domain’s door and not enter? You must know that I would choose to come here, and you must know that I will not back down against anyone on this matter.”

Mu Yuesheng nodded and said, “I know, I’m only here to...wait.”

Speechless pricked up his eyebrows slightly and asked, “Waiting for who?”

Mu Yuesheng replied in a delicate manner, “For you.”

## Chapter 392: In Order To Not Be Bored

---

The Hero King stole the Celestial King's Celestial Jade, giving it to the Infernal King, and then he stole the Infernal King's Infernal Sword, giving it to Leonis. After that, he pretended to be a Celestial and destroyed half of the Transcendence Holy Tree, causing the Celestials to hate the Infernals, the Infernals to hate the Transcendents, and the Transcendents to hate the Celestials. It instigated the first three-realm war in history!

It was not an easy task to do the three things simultaneously. The Celestial Jade and the Infernal Sword were the most precious treasures of the Celestial King and Infernal King respectively, so it was obvious how high the security around the two items was. It was not easy at all to steal them from their respective kings' hands.

And destroying the Transcendence Holy Tree was something unbelievable. After all, the holy tree was termed the guardian holy tree of Transcendence. Legends said that the tree had a sacred spirit in it. Trying to destroy it, even if it was just a portion of it, was unfathomably difficult.

However, the Hero King had managed to do it all, in just three days.

It was truly something admirable which was understandable that the feat would gain the assessment program's approval, but why did he do so?

Why did he use such a 'despicable' method to instigate a three-

realm war that was destined to cause death and destruction?

The matter was definitely not simple. The Hero King definitely had his reasons for doing so—a reason which fitted his bearing as a ‘Hero’.

Just like how Shi Xiaobai destroyed fifteen cities in the second level, he was originally accused as a City Destroyer Villain, but his final goal was to quickly gather all the rookies in one city before launching a counteroffensive on the Demon City. He used the actions of a ‘villain’ to complete the feat of a ‘hero’. This resulted in him finally receiving the cheers of being a “City Destroyer Hero”.

The deeds of a man, who had the title ‘Hero King’, ought to conform to the word ‘hero’!

This was what Shi Xiaobai believed so he said with great affirmation, “The story hasn’t ended.”

Liu Yu’s answer was—”The story has only just begun.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes immediately lit up slightly as he quietly waited for Liu Yu to continue his story.

“The Celestials had isolated themselves from the world, and did not participate in the conflict between the mortal world and the Infernal domain, but in fact, it serves as a balancing weight between all three factions. The reason why the Infernal King does

not dare to rashly attack the mortal realm, and the reason why the mortals use Bravehearts to challenge the Infernal King as a means of defeating him instead of forming an army is because of the existence of the Celestial domain. The Infernal domain and the mortal realm are both afraid that the Celestial domain would benefit from their internecine struggle, so they did not dare to risk beginning a full-out war. And what the Hero King did completely disrupted the delicate balance of the three factions!”

Liu Yu said without any haste, “Once upon a time, the war that broke out between the three races—three most powerful factions—was obviously brutal. Nearly all life was snubbed out, and the war was a massacre. The flames of war that raged and the battlefield where it was in its most intense state was originally a green and lush plain. In less than a year after the war, it turned into a desolate and barren desert, which is the area we know as the Silent Desolate Lands that is situated in between the Infernal domain and Transcendence. However, the new war that should have been called a nightmare only lasted for three days before coming to an end. Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, can you guess what happened?”

Upon hearing Liu Yu’s question, Shi Xiaobai pricked his eyebrows up slightly and could not help but ponder.

A three-sided war was different from a battle between two sides. If one side was overwhelmingly strong, it was possible to still call it a country after three days, and it could even cause a race to unconditionally surrender. However, a three-sided war would definitely begin with a probing period, as well as an awkward situation where each party held back the other, so how could it end in three short days?



Was it because the three kings realized how tragic war was? So they ended the war through peaceful negotiations?

Or could it be that the three kings realized something was amiss, and that the Hero King had ‘despicably’ sown discord?

As Shi Xiaobai was pondering, a voice suddenly shouted out.

“It’s because the Hero King killed the Celestial King, the Infernal King and King Leonis!”

Shi Xiaobai felt a jolt as he turned his head and saw that the voice came from Feng Yuanlin beside him.

Liu Yu’s grumbling voice immediately shouted, “Feng Yuanlin, how can you give a spoiler! The wise words of the sages—spoilers are a moment of happiness, but result in eventual death. Feng Yuanlin, you are committing a grave sin!”

Feng Yuanlin rolled his eyes, “I’m not giving a spoiler, but preventing your shameless act of wasting time. It’s such a simple matter, but you managed to drag it on for so long. If this goes on, the sky will darken!”

Liu Yu said in a speechless manner, “It’s you who doesn’t know the art of telling a story! Heavens, This Penniless Priest was able to go on for another half an hour, but your simple sentence has destroyed This Penniless Priest’s line of thought and interest!”

Feng Yuanlin made a commotion and said, “Wow, thank heavens I’m clever. If I listened to you dragging out another half an hour, I would probably have fallen asleep!”

Liu Yu said in an exasperated manner, “Pfft, speaking to you is simply preaching to the wrong audience!”

Shi Xiaobai gave a helpless smile and interrupted them, “Don’t argue, let This King finish hearing the story!”

Feng Yuanlin immediately turned his head and gave a placating smile, “Boss Shi Xiaobai, don’t blame me for giving you a spoiler. Actually, the story after this isn’t complicated at all. That fellow Liu Yu insisted on going in circles, but a few sentences would explain everything! The story is described in primary school textbooks. On the third day of the war, the Hero King suddenly appeared, telling the three kings that the war was instigated by him. After that, all three kings were incensed and simultaneously attacked the Hero King, but he ended up killing all three alone. The textbooks summarize the story with a single line—killing three kings alone, leaving no king to the three domains.”

Liu Yu immediately denigrated him, “Feng Yuanlin, do you know by saying that, how many details were left missing? Why did the Hero King suddenly appear on the third day? Why did the three kings attack simultaneously? This is the true crux of the issue. Do you know why the story is interesting? It’s because of the unnatural development of the plot, and it was machinated by the Hero King alone. His goal from the beginning was to fight all three at once! By stealing the Celestial Jade and Infernal Sword, and by destroying the Transcendence Holy Tree, he sparked the war

between the three domains, all in order to make the three kings attack him! You didn't even grasp the essence and fundamental parts of the story! You darn spoiler dog!"

Feng Yuanlin smacked his lips and he had an expression that said—so what if I spoiled the story, try biting me!

Shi Xiaobai was at a loss whether to laugh or cry, but he finally understood the whole story. So the Hero King had done all of this to kill the three kings himself.

By killing the Celestial King, Infernal King and King Leonis alone indeed sounded more shocking than Overlord Ji Feng's hundred day survival, Sword Immortal Xu Taibai's victory at the Braveheart Martial Arts Tournament or the Conquest King's slaying of the Infernal King. It was no wonder it was called the most exciting story of the four.

However, it was completely different from what Shi Xiaobai was thinking.

"Why did the Hero King do such a thing?"

Shi Xiaobai asked with a solemn voice.

The matter definitely had a reason.

Why was he willing to stir a debilitating war just to kill the three kings alone? There must have been a reason behind it to support

the nefarious scheme of causing the death of thousands of living beings, so as to explain this act of a pure villain.

Shi Xiaobai wanted to know why.

Why did the Hero King, a man that was called the most amazing hero, do something that completely ran counter to the concept of a 'hero'.

“There was no why.”

Liu Yu said with a serious expression, “This is why the story is interesting. It is also one of the reasons why it is called one of the legends of the Hero King’s life. The Hero King did it without a reason, or why. It was done in order to not be bored.”

# Chapter 393: Yesterday's Villain, Tomorrow's Hero

---

“There was no why.”

Liu Yu said with a serious expression, “This is why the story is interesting. It is also one of the reasons why it is called one of the legends of the Hero King’s life. The Hero King did it without a reason, or why. It was done in order to not be bored.”

Shi Xiaobai was left surprised for a few moments before he slowly turned silent.

It was done in order to not be bored?

Because he was bored, he instigated a brutal war that would end countless lives?

“Are you disappointed?”

Liu Yu said with a chuckle, “Back when This Penniless Priest first heard of the Hero King’s story, This Penniless Priest was just like you, extremely disappointed. That’s because what the Hero King did could not be considered heroic. It was even worse than a villain’s act. He instigated a war, killing the three kings alone because surviving a hundred days, becoming champion of the tournament or challenging the Infernal King was too easy for him. It did not pose a challenge for him. The Hero King was one of the most amazingly talented people in all of human history. At the

Psionic Mortal Realm, his strength could leapfrog three realms, defeating a large number of famous mighty figures. He machinated it in such a way that made the Celestial King, Infernal King and King Leonis attack him together, so as to prevent boredom during the trial of the seventh level. This clearly sounds selfish and ruthless, but why would such a person be called the Hero King? Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, do you have such thoughts on your mind?"

Shi Xiaobai nodded silently.

Shi Xiaobai believed that there would be a reversal to the story, that the Hero King had a hidden motive for his actions, but he never expected that the reason would be so disappointing.

At that moment, Liu Yu said, "Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, you are destined to be disappointed, because this story does not have any reversals at all. It's the story of a selfish and cold-blooded genius!"

"But why is such a story widely known to the point of it entering the textbooks? It's because this is the only stain on the Hero King's life! Back then, the Hero King was extremely young, and you could even call him naive. His world view and fundamental values had not taken form, and all he did from the moment he was born was cultivate and engage in battles. But during the three days, for some reason, or maybe it was because he witnessed the tragic and devastating effects of war, or maybe something stirred him, the Hero King, who was like a cold cultivating machine, suddenly possessed feelings! The sprouting of the thoughts of being a hero was a result of a foolish sin in his youth. Therefore, this story became the Hero King's most important turning point."

He was young, rash and foolish. A cold machine that only knew how to cultivate. In order to make a trial harder, he did not consider the consequences when he instigated the war. Finally, he repented in regret, and the seeds of kindness began sprouting.

That was the story of the Hero King's youth.

“A hero isn't born nor is it fated. You might be a murderer that had committed countless sins yesterday, but if you were to be enlightened today and repent, using your actions to redeem your sins, you could become a hero tomorrow!”

Liu Yu said softly, “This is a sentence the Hero King said when he established the Hero Alliance. He had used his life experience to prove his statement. Due to a rash and ignorant act in his youth, he had caused thousands of deaths. Although these lives were fake existences created by the assessment program, the Hero King still claimed that his hands were covered in sin. However, in the Hero King's life, he saved more than thousands of times the thousands of lives that were lost in the world. Benefactor Shi Xiaobai, this is the Hero King. He was not born a hero or a saint. He was once ignorant and heartless. But because of that, what he did in his entire life appeared grander!”

Shi Xiaobai gaped slightly, momentarily at a loss as to what to say.

He did not know much about the Hero King, so he did not know the greatness of the Hero King. However, Shi Xiaobai agreed with the Hero King's words—a hero isn't born nor is it fated.

The story was indeed very interesting, and it taught people a valuable lesson.

At that moment, Feng Yuanlin interrupted, “Regardless of the case, whatever the Hero King did was truly amazing. How can anyone succeed in slaying three kings alone? Just stealing the Celestial Jade and Infernal Sword to instigate the war between the three realms is already ridiculously difficult. So, no one has been able to replicate the Hero King’s legend. And there isn’t anyone who wants to replicate it. At least, no ordinary person would try to replicate whatever the Hero King did in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower. Therefore, we can forget the fourth clearing method. Now, we should think about the only remaining method left to clear the level, and that’s to survive a hundred days!”

What Feng Yuanlin said made Shi Xiaobai suddenly recall of something strange.

Was it true that no one would replicate what the Hero King did in the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower?

Then, what was going on with the youth named Speechless Li?

Shi Xiaobai remembered that Speechless refused to tell him of the fourth story of the Hero King because Speechless wanted to replicate the Hero King’s legend. Furthermore, Speechless believed that Shi Xiaobai would also choose the same path after hearing the fourth story.



Shi Xiaobai frowned slightly.

After hearing the fourth story, he did not have any thoughts of attempting to replicate the story. Fighting the three kings alone sounded really challenging, but to instigate a war that would wipe out life, that was way too heartless.

Why was Speechless planning on doing this?

Why did Speechless think that he would do the same?

Shi Xiaobai's mind was immediately filled with questions.

At that moment, a faint voice echoed from a distance.

“Darling!”

Shi Xiaobai turned his head in shock as he saw the Infernal Queen walked out of the Door of the Bravehearts. There she stood alone in the distance.

Only then did Shi Xiaobai realize that the story had gone on for too long. The Infernal Queen could not wait any longer in the Infernal domain.

Shi Xiaobai immediately suppressed the questions in his heart and turned to look at everyone. He said, “This King plans on

heading into the Infernal domain. If there is nothing pressing for you, why don't you accompany This King and enter the Infernal domain?"

Since he was now the king of the Infernal domain, it would not be a problem for him to invite the people beside him as guests.

With Shi Xiaobai saying this, Liu Yu's eyes immediately lit up. He said, "Great. This Penniless Priest happens to have such thoughts. To be honest, the goal This Penniless Priest had for coming to the Infernal domain was to attempt if he could secretly enter the Infernal Library in the Infernal domain. It's said that there are all sorts of valuable secret manuals stored in there!"

Shi Xiaobai immediately grinned and said, "Everything in the Infernal domain is This King's."

Feng Yuanlin hurried said as well. "I, I want to see the Infernal King's arsenal, can I?"

Shi Xiaobai said with a nod, "No problem. You can take any weapon."

Shi Xiaobai turned to look at the others.

Pulp Farmer nodded his head to indicate that he did not mind. He did not make any demands.

Sunless and Shi Xiaobai looked each other in the eye, before

Sunless whispered the words, “Sword manual.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded with a smile.

The silver-haired girl lifted her writing board as well. It read, “Then I’ll join in the fun and see if there’re any delicious delicacies in the Infernal domain.”

With that, the people present agreed to head into the Infernal domain with Shi Xiaobai.

The Infernal Queen, who was standing afar, was stunned when she heard this.

Why did she suddenly have an ominous feeling?

...

Three minutes later, Shi Xiaobai and company entered the Infernal domain. The poor Infernal domain still did not know that it had just ushered in a group of ‘bandits’ that entered in broad daylight.

...

...

# Chapter 394: Because You Want To Be Speechless Li

---

In front of the stone door to the Celestial domain.

“Waiting for me?”

Speechless’ eyebrow pricked up.

Mu Yuesheng nodded and said, “I never had a chance to thank you for what happened when I was little. Brother Speechless, thank you for standing forward to plead for me.”

Speechless faltered for a moment. Some faded but never forgotten memories began to surface as he realized which matter Mu Yuesheng was referring to. Immediately, he said with a wry smile, “Why is there a need to thank a meaningless request? I was too young at the time. They heard what I said, but they completely ignored it. It was like they were listening to an unruly kid’s tantrum. Sorry, I didn’t managed to help you, not one bit.”

Mu Yuesheng shook her head and seriously said, “How could it be meaningless? Back then, my parents faced it in silence. The elders that always loved me also remained silent. Only you stood up. In my saddest and most despairing moment, you warmed up my nearly frozen heart. As for whether it served any purpose, how can I blame it on you? Offspring who fail to make the mark are driven out of the country, sent to collateral relatives. The rules of the Mu family have always been ruthless. The only thing to be blamed is my low Mind Expanse, and how I awakened my superpowers too

late.”

“It’s all bullshit rules!”

Speechless said with a sneer, “So what if your Mind Expanse is low? A bunch of idiots who only know to talk about talent. Over the past hundred years of the Mu family, how many of their descendants have been able to reach the seventh level of the Nine Revolutions Transcendental Tower? As for you, just because of a meaningless test you took at the age of three, you were unreasonably driven out of the family because of ‘failing to meet the mark’! Geniuses are not born, nor are they fated! What bullshit rules. This Emperor will abolish them sooner or later!”

Mu Yuesheng smiled slightly and said gently, “You will abolish them, and you definitely will be able to do so. I’ll look forward to that day. However, you do not need to be angry for me. In fact, their act was partially for my own good. After all, by being part of the Mu family, we are born to shoulder the responsibilities of the Mu family. We would receive all sorts of training and tests from a young age. With my Mind Expanse, it is true that I wouldn’t be able to catch up with children my own age. That would only increase the suffering. I haven’t only suffered once because of my low Mind Expanse for the past ten years. The reason why I could reach the seventh level is also because I got to know an impressive...friend. If I didn’t receive his help, I might never have been able to come to this point.”

“Oh?”

Speechless was slightly surprised as he asked, “An impressive

friend?”

Mu Yuesheng nodded and said, “I’m not sure if you have met him, but I believe that both of you can definitely become friends. That’s because both of you are not only the most amazing geniuses I have ever met, but the both of you are the kindest people as well.”

Speechless immediately said with a chuckle, “In terms of kindness, your Brother Speechless doesn’t dare to brag about it. It’s only of the standard of ‘checking if there is a grandma crossing the road to help, or take a seat on the public transport so that the seats can be given up if there’s a pregnant lady, or willing to spend ten bucks for a cab to a police station to hand one cent found on the streets to the police’. If your friend is also of that standard, he is indeed quite amazing. However, geniuses that can be compared to me, I have never seen one up to now. I’m very curious who your friend is for you to give such an evaluation.”

Mu Yuesheng was clearly amused as she could not help but laugh a few times. After a few moments, she wiped her smile from her face and said seriously, “You must have heard his name. His name is...Shi Xiaobai.”

When Mu Yuesheng said the words ‘Shi Xiaobai’, she had subconsciously increased her tone. It was as though the name itself was filled with energy.

Speechless was left dumbfounded. After a long period of time, he said seriously, “About Shi Xiaobai, I met him not long ago. He is indeed an impressive genius. If you say that he can compare to me,

that would barely count. You mentioned that we can become friends, and that is true too. But! But Little Yue, as your cousin, there is something I have to say. That Shi Xiaobai is a monster. He, he dares to eat anything, and can eat anything! Heavens, you better stay away from him. What if he loses his mind one day and eats you out of not being able to discern man from beast, what then?”

Mu Yuesheng was surprised, momentarily failing to understand what Speechless meant.

Eat her out?

After a moment, Mu Yuesheng came to a sharp awakening and immediately turned red. She said angrily, “Brother Speechless, I want to take back the words I just said. You have turned nasty and you are not upright at all. How can you say...such shameless words! Shi Xiaobai would definitely not do such a thing. He is more upright than you!”

Speechless fell silent.

How were his words shameless? Was Mu Yuesheng thinking that he was insulting Shi Xiaobai?

Speechless thought to himself.

My dear girl, you haven’t seen the fellow picking up rocks and eating them like drumsticks or the way he was eating them in relish.

However, Speechless also knew that no one would believe it if they didn't see it with their own eyes. He did not plan on harping on this matter. He immediately said, "Anyway, just be a little more alert! By the way, it couldn't be that you specially rode the skyward sea current into the Celestial domain and waited for me in front of the Celestial domain's stone door just to thank me, right?"

When Mu Yuesheng heard this, her agitated heart which was a result of her embarrassment gradually calmed down. Her expression turned calm again as she looked at Speechless and nodded her head seriously. She muttered, "The reason why I'm waiting here for you...is to stop you!"

Speechless was surprised as he asked, "Stop me?"

Mu Yuesheng nodded and said, "Brother Speechless, I knew that you would come to the Celestial domain, and I knew you would choose to go down the same path as the Hero King. However, I know that you do not wish to do so. How can the kind and upright you be willing to instigate a war that is destined to wipe out life? You would definitely do it because you have to do it. Therefore, I want to stop you, and I have to stop you. If my hindrance can become your reason and excuse, then please do not hesitate."

When Speechless heard her, he fell into a prolonged silence.

"You can't stop me."

Speechless said with a smile, "No one can stop me. It will not



become an excuse because the Li family would not accept such an excuse. You should know that as a progeny of the Li family, and as the most talented progeny in the past few millennia, my destiny has been set from the beginning. By being born from the Li family, the family that bears the same surname as the Hero King, my life has been always about becoming the second Hero King by doing my best to replicate the Hero King's legends and life."

Mu Yuesheng shook her head hastily, "No, your life belongs to you! Brother Speechless, you hate and resist those rotten rules. You once said that you admire the Hero King, but you do not want to be him, because you want to be Speechless Li. I have always remembered that sentence, and I have always used it to motivate myself. I..."

Speechless stretched out his hand to interrupt the agitated Mu Yuesheng. He said with a sigh, "Ten years is a long period of time. It can change many things."

Mu Yuesheng gaped and lowered her head in sadness. She muttered, "Do...do you really plan on instigating the war between the three realms?"

Speechless said with a chuckle, "What do you think?"

Mu Yuesheng lifted her head once again, with a look of stubbornness in her eyes. She said firmly, "If that's the case, I will stop you. I will give my everything to stop you. Yesterday's villain may become tomorrow's hero, but everyone knows that what the Hero King regrets the most is yesterday. I do not wish for you to regret this matter. Just like you came forward ten years ago to defy

the Mu family's rules. This time, it's my turn to step in front of you!"

Speechless faltered in silence. The stubbornness in her eyes was identical to the one she had in her childhood. Back then, it was that stubborn look that moved him, giving him the courage to step forward.

It had been ten years but her eyes were no different. Nothing had changed.

Speechless smiled, a smile that came from the bottom of his heart. He suddenly took out an envelope and gently said, "Silly girl, take a look at what this is."

# Chapter 395: Darling, Do You Want To Take It Off Yourself?

---

Mu Yuesheng suddenly looked up and her gaze landed on the envelope in Speechless' hand. There were two big words written on the surface of the envelope.

“Challenge Letter!?” Mu Yuesheng exclaimed.

Speechless grinned and said, “I’m willing to replicate the Hero King’s legend because his legend is truly magnificent and I would not go as far as going against the family. However, it does not mean that I’m silly enough to do what the Hero King once did wrong. Is it necessary to instigate a war between the three realms in order to single-handedly challenge the three kings? There is no need for it to be so complicated. I just need to steal the Celestial Jade and leave a letter of challenge for the Celestial King. Following that, I can steal the Infernal King’s Infernal Sword, and leave behind a letter of challenge. Similarly, by destroying the Transcendence Holy Tree and leaving a third letter of challenge for King Leonis, everything will be done. Although by doing so, the three kings will not be as angry as after experiencing war, they would unlikely to show mercy to the person who stole or destroyed their treasures. The effect would be the same. Silly girl, do you really think your brother is as stupid as those rotten old men?”

When Mu Yuesheng heard this, her serious expression slowly turned softer, as a smile slowly suffused across her lips.

At that moment, a commanding voice echoed in the clouds!

“Who dares to cause a din outside the Celestial domain!”

And following that, the sound of stone door to the Celestial domain opening was heard.

Speechless and Mu Yuesheng turned their heads and saw a three-meters-tall armored wolf-headed guard, who held a spear in hand, walking out slowly from the Celestial domain’s stone door.

It was a guard of the Celestial domain’s stone door!

Speechless turned his head sideways and said to Mu Yuesheng, “I’ll be making a move then.”

After saying that, Speechless kept the letter of challenge and approached the wolf-headed guard. He said loudly, “I come from afar and have defeated all mighty figures in the world and remain undefeatable. I heard that the Celestial domain has hidden mighty figures and deliberately came to take a look. Quickly get your strongest person in the Celestial domain. A trash like you doesn’t even have the right for me to stretch out a finger. Of course, if you want to try without any thoughts for your life, you can go ahead and try. If you can even touch me, I’ll concede defeat.”

These words were what the young and rash Hero King said when he previously came to the Celestial domain.

Back then, the wolf-headed guard angrily attacked, but the Hero

King sneezed and sent him flying. Immediately after that, the divine army of the Celestial domain surged out but were no match for the Hero King. They didn't even manage to touch the Hero King, causing a stir throughout the Celestial domain.

The Hero King wreaked havoc throughout the Celestial domain and finally forced the Celestial King out. The Hero King deliberately hid his strength to tie with the Celestial King. As the saying goes, friendship grows only when you exchange blows, the Celestial King invited the Hero King as a guest, and hosted a banquet for him.

As Speechless recalled the story, his mouth curled into a smile.

He was using the Hero King's method, but he would definitely do it better than the Hero King.

Speechless slowly sucked in the air, waiting for the wolf-headed guard to angrily attack him, so that he could sent him flying.

However, what happened next was something completely unexpected for Speechless and Mu Yuesheng!

They saw the wolf-headed guard stared with widened eyes, and after a momentary daze, he knelt down in panic!

The wolf-headed guard trembled and said, "Your Majesty, how would this lowly person dare to touch you, the Celestial King? How would I be able to get the mightiest person from the Celestial

domain out? You, are the mightiest person of the Celestial domain! If this lowly person had done something wrong, feel free to punish me. A joke like that...is something, this lowly person cannot afford!”

...

...

### Infernal domain, Infernal King's Palace

Under the Infernal Queen's lead, Shi Xiaobai and company arrived in the Infernal King's palace. Along the way, they met several Infernal devils. Most of them were ugly as expected, but there was also no lack of beautiful succubi who were palace maids. However, in front of the Infernal Queen, these succubi appeared lackluster. It was like a rice grains in front of a bright pearl.

And after entering the Infernal domain, it had confirmed Shi Xiaobai's guess. He had been designated the role of Infernal King by the assessment program. It was not only limited to the Infernal Queen, even the guards and palace maids immediately recognized him as the Infernal King. They would all bow before him when he walked past.

After arriving in the palace, Shi Xiaobai immediately got the Infernal Queen to get the succubus palace maids to take Sunless and company to wherever they wanted to go. He also informed the Infernal Queen to tell everyone in the Infernal domain that meeting Sunless and company was no different from meeting him.

Whoever offended them was no different from offending the Infernal King.

The Infernal Queen could sense that Shi Xiaobai thought highly of the humans, so she did not show any signs of neglect. She instantly made the decree.

Liu Yu immediately headed for the Infernal Library, and since Pulp Farmer had nothing to do, he followed as well. Sunless wanted to accompany Shi Xiaobai by his side, but Shi Xiaobai said that he had things to do, so she went to the Infernal Library as well, hoping to see if she could find any sword manual that was worth browsing.

Feng Yuanlin got his wish of entering the arsenal which was under heavy guard.

The silver-haired girl was brought to where banquets were hosted in the palace. Shi Xiaobai specially ordered the palace maids to get the chefs to make a feast for her.

Although it was unknown what the delicacies the Infernal domain had, it was surely not bad. It was clear along their journey through the Infernal domain that it did not resemble a dark and horrifying world. Instead, they saw several plantations, with fruit trees and vegetable crops. It looked like a paradise.

Soon, there was only Shi Xiaobai and the Infernal Queen left in the palace.

Although Shi Xiaobai wanted to taste the delicacies of the Infernal domain with the silver-haired girl, he did have something important he needed to do.

Shi Xiaobai turned to look at the Infernal Queen and softly said, “Let’s go. Bring This King back to the room.”

The main reason why Shi Xiaobai entered the Infernal domain was for him to figure out a matter—If the “King’s Mandate” mentioned by the Absolute Choice referred to the “Infernal King’s Mandate”, what would be the Infernal King’s Mandate?

Shi Xiaobai had to be clear of the matter. And with matters regarding a mandate, there were typically clues or traces left behind in one’s most private location.

For example, a notebook would be hidden in a certain place, or something was written down on a piece of paper.

And the place with all these clues was clearly the Infernal King’s bedroom!

However, Shi Xiaobai did not know where the Infernal King’s bedroom was, so he needed the Infernal Queen to lead the way.

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she exclaimed verbally, as her snow-white skin flushed with a red glow. She turned her head and looked at the bright sky outside the compound. She lowered her head and said, “Now?”



Shi Xiaobai nodded as though it was taken for granted, “Yes, now.”

The Infernal Queen’s ears immediately turned red as she looked up to give Shi Xiaobai a glance. Her eyelashes fluttered and she bit down on her lower lip. With a delicate voice, she asked, “Darling, are you so much in a rush?”

Shi Xiaobai found it odd when he saw the Infernal Queen’s reaction. He did not know why the Infernal Queen was acting in such a manner, but he was indeed in rush. The Absolute Choice had left a psychological scar on him, so Shi Xiaobai did not wish to delay even for a moment. He wanted to figure out what it meant by the “King’s Mandate”.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai said seriously, “Yes, there is no time for delay!”

The Infernal Queen gaped as a struggle flashed in her eyes. Finally she sighed and said faintly, “I’ll do as you wish. As long as... Darling is happy.”

After the Infernal Queen said that, she turned and slowly walked into the inner sanctums of the palace.

Shi Xiaobai immediately followed closely behind.

The Infernal Queen walked rather slowly, as though she was

deliberately prolonging the trip to the room. However, the Infernal King's bedroom was not far from the palace's hall, so in less than three minutes, they had arrived in front of the bedroom.

After entering the door, the large bedroom came into view.

The Infernal King's bedroom had almost everything. There was a large and soft bed. There were desks and bookshelves, and there was even a bathing pool in the bedroom. It was extremely spacious.

Shi Xiaobai immediately cast his gaze at a desk that was filled with books and paper slips. His eyes lit up slightly because the clues he was searching for could very well be on that desk.

At that moment, the Infernal Queen slowly closed the doors to the room, and a feminine voice sounded from her.

“I'll first do a dance?”

Shi Xiaobai turned to give her a look and saw the Infernal Queen having her head deeply bowed. He could not see her expression, and did not understand why the Infernal Queen would talk about dancing the moment she entered. There was ample space in the room, so she could dance as she wished, but he had no mood to watch the Infernal Queen dance.

Shi Xiaobai was eager for the Infernal Queen to leave so that he could search for the 'secret of the Infernal King' in the room.

However, he could not find a good excuse to make her leave. Considering how she would be dancing, it was possible that she would not notice that he was rummaging through the desk.

Therefore, Shi Xiaobai said with a nod, “Alright, go ahead and dance.”

After saying that, Shi Xiaobai turned and headed towards the desk.

At the same time, the Infernal Queen lifted her toes and began dancing.

The Infernal Queen had a beautiful body with slender curves. Her loose clothes could not hide the proud figure she had. It was truly a beautiful sight when she began dancing.

However, Shi Xiaobai’s eyes and mind could not appreciate such an act that would make the blood of most males boil to the point of them losing control. He began burying his head into the desk as he began searching. He flipped through the book that was on the desk.

It was a book on political governance. Shi Xiaobai was slightly astonished. From the looks of it, the Infernal King he was playing was a good ruler that governed the country well?

As Shi Xiaobai read it for a while, he immediately felt exhausted. Reading books was truly something not suited for him.

Shi Xiaobai shook his head helplessly and instinctively glanced at the dancing Infernal Queen. He wanted to see if the Infernal Queen was paying him any attention.

When Shi Xiaobai looked up, he was immediately given a fright!

“What are you doing!?”

Shi Xiaobai exclaimed in surprise!

It was unknown when the dancing Infernal Queen had shed her colorful gown. The only thing left on her body was a red bodice known as a dudou. However, it could not hide the two ample breasts and the white undergarment by her crouch. A large area of snow-white and milky skin was exposed. The sexiness exuded by her was suffocating.

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she immediately stopped dancing and with both arms holding her chest, she turned sideways. She looked somewhat embarrassed, and said with a tone of grievance, “I was dancing a striptease. Darling, don’t you like it? You said, it will be more...appealing.”

Shi Xiaobai was startled.

He liked watching stripteases?

He never expected that the Infernal Queen's memories of him as the Infernal King was as such!

Shi Xiaobai was rendered speechless and said to her, "This King doesn't like it. This King is not such an Infernal King!"

The Infernal Queen slowly lifted her head as she gave a perplexed look. Suddenly, her eyes flashed a look of enlightenment!

She gently bit her lower lip and with slightly red cheeks, she walked towards Shi Xiaobai without wearing the clothes left on the ground. She came to a gradual stop when she came to the study desk.

The Infernal Queen slowly closed her eyes and placed her arms behind her. Lifting her chest with a deep ravine, she pursed her lips gently and said in a faint voice.

"Darling, do you want to take it off yourself?"

...

# Chapter 396: Because You Are Not The Strongest Transcendent

---

## Transcendence

City walls that were more than a hundred meters tall stretched out for miles in all directions.

Unlike the other three city walls, the western wall was especially reinforced. It was built with even harder materials.

This wall was extremely special because it was closest to the Silent Desolate Lands, and it was also the city wall that was closest to the Infernal domain. If the Infernal King would come attacking, this wall was the first to be hit.

Therefore, this city wall was not only a city wall. It was the first line of defense Transcendence had against the Infernal domain. Even though the Infernal domain had not invaded Transcendence for millennia, the Transcendents did not lax on the construction of the city wall that faced the Infernal domain.

But...at that moment, something that shocked the Transcendence was reverberating through the country. It was even something that caused great panic. A gaping hole in the western gate that had been specially reinforced had been ripped apart!

The gap went from top to down, stretching a hundred meters or more. The gap from left to right was also a hundred meters wide. It

was as though a hundred-meter squarish gap had burst through the city walls.

What sort of terrifying force could create such appalling damage?

And most surprising of all, the hundred-meter-tall gargantuan that always sat behind the western city wall like a mountain had suddenly disappeared!

Combining these two points, the truth to the matter could easily be inferred. Furthermore, a few eye-witnesses had seen an unbelievable scene. The gatekeeping gargantuan had torn a hundred-meter-wide gap in the city wall with his bare hands before leaving Transcendence through the hole!

The entire city fell into panic as they discussed the matter.

The gatekeeping gargantuan was brought by Leonis a decade ago from the outside world. Back then, the gargantuan was only slightly more than ten meters tall.

And according to what Leonis said, the gargantuan was a mixed child between the Transcendents and the Gargantuans. He had happened to encounter the child and brought him back.

Although the gargantuan was large in size, the Transcendents did not feel any fear of him after they got accustomed to seeing him. This was because in their established expressions, the Gargantuans were as weak as ants in front of the Transcendents.

With the entrenched racial discrimination, they only looked at the mixed-blood gargantuan with contempt.

However, Leonis handed the important task of guarding the gates to the gargantuan. Although Leonis said that he was not guarding the gates but watching it, it still resulted in the jealousy and protests from rogues.

Therefore for the past decade, there were several Transcendents that deliberately came to mock and bully the gargantuan. After learning that the gargantuan was a weak coward who did not dare to fight back, to the point of not even daring to speak back at all, the Transcendents went from bad to worse.

The gargantuan only faced the city wall and had his back facing everyone else. He was like a lonely mountain, as his back endured the mockery and bullying of the Transcendents, but the only response he gave was silence and tolerance.

And what was even more astonishing was that in a decade, the gargantuan went from a height of ten meters to about a height of hundred meters. He far exceeded the impression the Transcendents had of Gargantuans.

However, his increase in size did not make the Transcendents feel any fear for the gatekeeping gargantuan. It was because the gargantuan had also been influenced by the racial discrimination, as the belief that the race of the Transcendents was the strongest race became entrenched in him.



He would be extremely polite to Transcendent beggars, but would hurl invectives at Bravehearts of other races. He was like a Transcendent more like any other Transcendent. He stubbornly believed that the bloodline of any other race was garbage.

And it included his Gargantuan bloodline.

As the saying goes, whoever is pitiful must have a cause to be despised. It was probably the most apt description of the gatekeeping gargantuan.

But at this moment, the gargantuan had left after the few humans left. He had left Transcendence, leaving the spot he had never left for a decade!

Why did the gatekeeping gargantuan suddenly leave?

Furthermore, why did he leave in such a shocking and exaggerated manner? The hundred-meter-wide gap looked like the gaping hole of an enraged behemoth.

However, what was even more astonishing ensued.

King Leonis had disappeared as well!

...

...

## Silent Desolate Lands

Yellow sand stirred as a massive figure walked on it. Its speed was not too fast, but every step was filled with force. Each step on the desolate ground caused a loud rumble as the land quaked like an earthquake.

The firm ground caved in, forming deep holes. They connected into a path and they were footprints of anger.

The hundred-meter-tall gargantuan was walking on the vast expanse. He was heading west, where the Infernal domain was.

Suddenly, an extremely fast figure chased the gigantic footprints from afar.

“Stop!”

A commanding voice resounded.

The voice obviously reached the gargantuan’s ears and when he heard the voice, he suddenly stopped his angry footsteps like a tame lion.

The gargantuan turned back and said with a humble and respectful attitude, “Your Majesty.”

The person who chased after him was obviously King Leonis. However, Leonis did not seem to look fine. He was chasing after the gargantuan with his third form. However, his trembling feet indicated his weakness and how he could barely maintain his form.

When Leonis came close to the hundred-meter-tall gargantuan, he looked like an ant in front of an elephant. However, the gargantuan's humble stance of bowing his head made it seem like he was the ant that could be easily trampled.

Leonis tried his best to hide his weak pants. It sounded like angry breathing, causing the gargantuan to lower his head even lower.

“Why are you leaving Transcendence?”

Leonis asked with a solemn tone.

However, the gargantuan did not respond. He was silent, like an ice-cold mountain.

Leonis's expression turned increasingly gloomy, but he did not force the gargantuan for an answer. Instead, he asked a question, “Where do you plan on going?”

The gargantuan remained silent.

Leonis narrowed his eyes as he stared at the gargantuan. After a

moment, he said with a deep voice, “So do you think that you have grown up and can now think independently?”

The gargantuan finally looked up and slowly opened his mouth.

But he did not answer any of Leonis’s questions. Instead, he used a firm, but somewhat crazy voice to say deeply, “The race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world!”

Leonis faltered slightly as a wry smile suffused across his lips. He said, “This King had once thought so too, but This King has lost. He has lost to a human. Child, This King still believed that the race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world, but maybe there should be a prefix of ‘one of’.”

The gargantuan shook his head and decisively said, “No, there is no ‘one of’! You once said over and over again that the race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world and that I, who have Gargantuan blood flowing inside me, is more wretched than Transcendent beggars. I believed in every word you said. Furthermore, I completely embraced it. I even tolerated the humiliation of Transcendent beggars, but if you tell me that everything isn’t real, and that my decade of concession and tolerance was worth nothing, I will not be able to accept it. Neither can I accept it! The race of the Transcendents has to be the strongest race in the world, not one of the strongest!”

When Leonis heard this, he fell into a prolonged silence. He took a deep breath and slowly said, “Child, This King was afraid that you would cause trouble and wished that you would keep a low profile. That is the reason for those words. You have done well for

the past decade, but This King's concern for you has been lacking to not know that you had suffered such humiliation. It is the fault of This King. But when you are down a path of mistakes, stopping is also a form of progress. Child, This King wants to correct his mistakes. The race of the Transcendents isn't the strongest race in the world. Be it the Infernal King or that human, they can defeat This King. You do not need to remain humble against any Transcendent, including This King."

The gargantuan fell silent for a moment before the humility in his eyes gradually vanished. He said in a deep voice, "Your defeat does not represent the defeat of the Transcendents, because...you are not the strongest Transcendent!"

# Chapter 397: Why Don't You Die Now?

---

Leonis's pupils contracted slightly as he said coldly, "So the reason why you left Transcendence in such a hurry is because you want to defeat or even kill that human. You want to prove that you are the strongest person in Transcendence?"

The gargantuan shook his head slowly and said, "There's no need to prove it, because you and I both know very well that ten years ago, you were already not my match. I have always been the strongest person among the Transcendents. But don't you worry. I will never defeat the human that defeated you. Because if that happens, everyone will know that I'm stronger than you. And that is the reason why you have always wished for me to remain a silent watchdog of the city gates. You do not wish to lose your position, and I will never vie for it. However, I need to prove that the race of the Transcendents is the strongest race in the world because it has been a faith that I have always devoted myself into believing in order to tolerate the acts against me. So, I want to kill the Infernal King and destroy the Infernal domain, so that everyone will understand that the Transcendents are still extremely strong!"

When Leonis heard this, he turned pale as he said with a trembling voice, "You are out of your mind! Yes, you are stronger than me. You were in the fourth form of the Transcendents at your birth. And you can even use the fifth or even sixth form. You can very likely be really stronger than the Infernal King, but! In the Infernal domain, your enemy is not only the Infernal King, but also the unfathomably strong Infernal Queen, the three Infernal Generals that can fight This King, as well as the entire Infernal army. By heading there alone, there is no chance of survival!"

The gargantuan said in a deep voice, “So what if I were to die? I’m different from you. I’m not afraid of death!”

Leonis’s expression was livid as his hideous face looked like rage was consuming him. However, Leonis eventually sighed as his expression turned soft. He asked softly, “Why are you in such a hurry? When This King hands the throne over to you, you will be able to be the king of the Transcendents, and even the king of the world. When the time comes, you can call on the strongest army in the world to attack the Infernal domain. If you can become the king of the world and the Infernal domain, then everyone will have to admit that the race of the Transcendents is the strongest race.”

The gargantuan was left stunned as his gigantic eyes lit up slightly, as though he was attracted by the proposal. He could not help but ask, “Then, when will you hand over the throne to me?”

Leonis sighed and muttered, “When This King dies...”

“Shut up!”

The gargantuan said angrily, “Are you kidding me?”

Leonis lowered his head slightly, “Child, This King’s days are numbered, why must you be in such a hurry?”

“Since your days are numbered.”

The gargantuan's voice suddenly turned cold, "Why don't you die now? My dear...father."

...

Infernal domain. Infernal King's bedroom.

"Darling, do you want to take it off yourself?"

Such ambiguous words that made one fantasize were said by the Infernal Queen in a shy voice but with bold undertones. Furthermore, with her ample breasts and her hands behind her back, the charming pose that seemingly gave her husband free reign over her body truly boiled the blood of any men who saw her. It was a test of self-control.

The abdomen that did not have a hint of cellulite, the slim waist that could be gripped with one hand, the fair thighs that had a pinkish glow to them, and the curvaceous bodyline as well as every inch of her skin were all breathtakingly beautiful.

The Infernal Queen, who was wearing only a [red dudou](#) and white underpants, was truly an epitome of beauty that could make one go crazy for.

Shi Xiaobai finally realised what was happening in front of him, as well as the strange changes the Infernal Queen had undergone after entering the bedroom.



He was now the Infernal King, and the Infernal Queen was his wife. Getting the Infernal Queen to bring him back to the bedroom was needlessly ambiguous.

However, Shi Xiaobai wasn't aware of this at all, nor did he have any such intentions.

But as he looked at the top beauty who was within reach of him and about to fully expose herself, Shi Xiaobai felt a little thirsty as his body slowly heated up.

Shi Xiaobai was a youth that had never partaken in the acts of humanly pleasure, but he was also a male creature that was biologically normal. While facing such a fatal attraction, Shi Xiaobai instinctively turned fidgety.

This was a biological instinct of a male, and it would get out of hand if not curbed.

However, Shi Xiaobai was never a person who gave in to instinct. He could easily overcome his instinctual fear, so he naturally would not be defeated by his instinctual unease.

Shi Xiaobai's eyes shimmered for a moment before they returned to their original clarity.

He used a calm pair of eyes to look at the beauty in front of him who had her eyes closed and cheeks red. Even her ears were completely red. Immediately, Shi Xiaobai felt a headache.

The Infernal Queen had even taken off her clothes, so what reason could he come up with to refuse her?

“Darling.”

Just as Shi Xiaobai was suffering from his headache, the Infernal Queen had opened both of her eyes and she had lowered her head slightly. Her hands wrapped around her chest once again, as she said hesitantly, “It’s still a little early. I’m a bit...why don’t, why don’t we defer it to the evening before we...”

The Infernal Queen, who looked charming and enchanting, was actually a very conservative woman. Doing such acts in the day made her feel like she was engaging in a shameful act, so it was somewhat difficult for the Infernal Queen to accept it. Of course, she was willing to let go of her shame for the person she loved. She was even willing to do a striptease.

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, his eyes lit up. The Infernal Queen’s words perfectly helped him resolve the awkward situation.

However, Shi Xiaobai very cleverly revealed a look of reluctance. After a moment of silence, he said, “This should have been an act between two consenting adults, so how can This King force you. There is no need to rush it, so let’s leave it to the evening. This King is somewhat hungry and will get some food first.”

After Shi Xiaobai said this, he headed out of the room with a

deadpan expression.

“Darling...”

Shi Xiaobai pretended not to hear the Infernal Queen’s gentle voice that had a struggle in it. Instead, he quickened his pace and quickly left the room alone.

...

Shi Xiaobai had nearly ran out of the Infernal King’s bedroom. Although he had extremely strong self-control, he felt that it would be an extremely strange test of his willpower if the Infernal Queen did not wear a single article of clothing.

Shi Xiaobai could only pretend to be angry and leave alone. He temporarily put aside his search for clues regarding the “King’s Mandate”.

Along the way, Shi Xiaobai casually called a succubus palace maid to lead the way, and soon, he arrived at the dining room where feasts were held.

In the spacious room, there was only one large table placed in the middle with all sorts of food placed on it.

The overwhelming amount of food exceeded a hundred varieties as they emitted a rich fragrance.

And sitting by the side of the table was a person who was about to dine on the food.

As the only person to enjoy the table of food, the silver-haired girl grinned slightly. Her gaze, which seemed to struggle, was on the food that covered the table. Despite holding chopsticks, she had yet to begin eating.

Only when Shi Xiaobai slowly walked over did the silver-haired girl put down her chopsticks and wave her hands. She blinked and planned on greeting him.

When Shi Xiaobai saw that the table of food had yet to be touched, he puzzledly asked, “Why aren’t you eating? Does it not match your appetite?”

The silver-haired girl shook her head and wrote on the writing board: “There’s too much food. I have no idea which one to eat first. All of them look so delicious, so it’s so difficult to choose. T∩T!”

The silver-haired girl pouted slightly and her struggling look made her resemble a kitten that did not know which fish to eat.

## Chapter 398: An “Ouch”

---

Shi Xiaobai was somewhat surprised as he said, “Won’t you know if you just try one mouthful of each?”

The silver-haired girl immediately rolled her eyes and wrote on the writing board, “Eating too much is fattening!”

Shi Xiaobai could not help but laugh as he shook his head. After a moment of consideration, he looked towards the succubus palace maid and asked, “Which of the dishes here are the most delicious?”

The palace maid hurriedly said apologetically, “These dishes are the best dishes of the palace chefs. This slave does not have any right to eat them, so she doesn’t know which are the most delicious ones.”

Shi Xiaobai nodded his head nonchalantly when he heard this. He obviously would not blame the palace maid. As he glanced at the silver-haired girl who was staring at the table full of food while in a struggle as to which to eat first, he laughed with a shake of the head as he grabbed a pair of chopsticks.

“This King happens to be hungry as well. Let This King try and see which tastes better.”

When he said that, the palace maids standing by the side stared with widened eyes. The distinguished Infernal King was taking the initiative to be a food taster, it was something that made them momentarily unable to believe their ears.

The silver-haired girl was also slightly surprised, but she quickly squinted her eyes and gave a sweet smile. She wrote, “Brother Shi Xiaobai, you are really the best!”

Shi Xiaobai smiled slightly. In fact, he wasn’t hungry, but he had a craving. The aroma from table of food was tantalizing, and in his opinion, it was even more attractive than the Infernal Queen, who had nearly stripped completely.

Shi Xiaobai stretched out his chopsticks and grabbed a piece of grilled meat that was oozing with aromatic juices. It was unknown which creature the meat came from, but it looked fresh and delicious.

Shi Xiaobai placed the piece of grilled meat into his mouth without hesitation as he began chewing.

The grilled meat was slightly hot, and as he chewed at it, the meat juice was like a bubble that burst as its aroma filled his mouth, and an intoxicating fragrance went straight to his head. As for the grilled meat, it was very chewy, but it was not vexing to chew on it. The doneness was perfect.

Delicious. The piece of grilled meat was no doubt a delicacy.

However, Shi Xiaobai frowned.

It was a delicacy, but it was a dish that failed his standards

because...the piece of grilled meat's nutritional value was nearly negligible!

The nutritional value referred here was different from the common nutritional value people understood. Ever since he fell unconscious in the sixth level, Shi Xiaobai realized that he had become odd. Not only did he have a baffling sense of hunger, he was able to eat anything. He could even taste the flavor of chicken from a hard piece of rock.

Shi Xiaobai knew that it was not an illusion caused by hunger, but because his physique had undergone a baffling change. And the most obvious manifestation was how Shi Xiaobai could clearly feel how much energy each food he consumed had.

He could even give a value to measure the energy contained in different foods, which is the value of the food. If the stones in the Silent Desolate Lands were used as reference, and were considered as food with a nutrition value of one point, then the gigantic black scorpions had nutritional value of ten. The fruit on the Transcendence Holy Tree was at 10,000, or even higher.

As for the nutritional value of the piece of grilled meat in front of him?

It was a pathetic two points!

It was just a little more than a stone!

The nutritional value was not only a pure number. It did not mean that eating 10,000 rocks would accumulate the energy that matched the holy tree's fruit. One's body would reach a level of saturation or even turn immune to any food. The lower the nutrition value of the food, the amount of yield would definitely be lower, regardless of the amount eaten.

Shi Xiaobai was very displeased with the piece of grilled meat. Even though it was very tasty, the nutritional value was just too low!

Shi Xiaobai immediately used his chopsticks to pick at another dish.

However, after he took a mouthful, Shi Xiaobai frowned once again. The nutritional value of the dish was even lower. It was at 1.5!

Since Shi Xiaobai had taken the initiative to be a food taster for the silver-haired girl, he felt that he had a certain degree of responsibility of choosing the best dish for her. The taste was only secondary, for the real key was the food's nutritional value.

Shi Xiaobai continue tasting the food again and again, and ate dozens of dishes consecutively, but Shi Xiaobai's eyebrows only became more furrowed.

Out of the dozens of dishes, the dish with the highest nutritional value was only three points!



What was going on?

The materials used to make these dishes did not look inferior to the gigantic black scorpions, but why were their nutritional value so low?

Was it a problem with the chef's handling?

Or were the materials used by the Infernal domain only deceptively good?

The palace maids noticed that the Infernal King was constantly testing the food, but his expression was turning ugly. They immediately lowered their heads as their hands trembled. They thought that the food was too unpalatable that in his rage, not only would the chef suffer, even they as palace maids would suffer his wrath.

However, when the silver-haired girl saw Shi Xiaobai's expression, her smile became even sweeter. It had to be Shi Xiaobai being extremely meticulous and serious in his selection for him to be so picky, instead of being perfunctory. This made her very happy.

However, was none of the food really tasty?

The silver-haired girl was somewhat puzzled. The fragrance from the food was very enticing.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai's eyes lit up slightly.

“It's this!”

Shi Xiaobai pointed with his finger. He had just taken a mouthful of the the Honey-glazed Steak.

The steak's nutritional value was only eight points, but it was outstanding compared to the pile of food that was lower than three points!

Shi Xiaobai was relieved. Thankfully, not all the hundred dishes were junk food. The Honey-glazed steak's nutritional value was pretty good, and its flavor did not lose out to the other dishes. So this shall be it!

Shi Xiaobai had taken a long time to pick the food, and finally chose this dish after testing dozens of dishes, so the silver-haired girl did not hesitate at all. She immediately reached out with her chopsticks and grabbed a piece of steak. She placed it in her mouth with great anticipation and eagerly began to chew.

The silver-haired girl had been famished since a long time ago. She squinted her eyes, making her look like a kitten that was enjoying its food.

However, after a few bites, the silver-haired girl's expression changed drastically.

“Ouch!”

The silver-haired girl cried out in pain as she spat out a half-chewed piece of meat. Inside the meat, there was a black bead that resembled a peach’s core.

It was obvious that the hard black pearl had caused pain to the silver-haired girl, causing her to involuntarily cry out in pain.

Wait?

She cried out in pain?

Wasn’t the silver-haired girl a mute?

Shi Xiaobai immediately looked at the silver-haired girl in surprise.

At that moment, Shi Xiaobai suddenly felt an invisible energy surge from every direction, as though he was being surrounded by hard boulders. It felt like that they would crush him, so with a change of expression, Shi Xiaobai immediately circulated his psionic power to resist the energy.

At the same time, several screams sounded almost simultaneously. Several palace maids fell into a black rift that suddenly opened and without any resistance, they vanished.

As for the table that was covered with food, it disintegrated as food splattered onto the floor.

The silver-haired girl hurriedly covered her mouth as tears welled up in her eyes.

...

...

# Chapter 399: How Can It Be Put Into The Mouth Just Like That. Hands Had To Be Washed First!

---

Tears welled in her eyes before streaming down her fair cheeks. The silver-haired girl covered her mouth with all her might, forcing herself not to cry. She looked like she had her mouth blocked. Even her cries were choked back.

The invisible and raging energy finally disappeared. And the empty room was already in ruins. The floor and walls had holes in them or they were cracked. The table of food and the plates it was holding were all shattered to the ground. And worst of all, the four palace maids that were standing by the side had been sent into a spatial rift, leaving nothing of them behind.

Why did such a situation suddenly happen?

From the silver-haired girl's reaction, the conclusion could be easily drawn.

The invisible energy came from the silver-haired girl when she instinctively cried out 'Ouch!' in pain.

The silver-haired girl was not a mute, but a simple 'Ouch' created damage blindly. So how could the kindhearted girl dare to speak?

Shi Xiaobai instantly understood the situation. He once found it strange and pitiable that the silver-haired girl was a mute despite

having such a talkative personality. Now, he realized that she was not a mute, but because she had no choice but be a mute.

She liked chatting, but she could not speak. It was not because she couldn't, but because she did not dare to speak!

Seeing the silver-haired girl that was trying her best to cover her mouth while being sad and feeling remorse, but was afraid that she would make a sound from her cries, Shi Xiaobai felt his heart pain for her.

If she could not escape the devil-like voice, she would only live in more pain the more kind she was.

Shi Xiaobai could not help but take a step forward and hugged the silver-haired girl into his arms. He let her head rest on his chest as he gently stroked the girl's back and said softly, "You did not do it on purpose."

If she could make a sound, the girl would have been muttering about how she didn't mean to do it. However, she could not even speak, not even her sobs could be uttered.

"It's not your fault."

Shi Xiaobai whispered gently into the silver-haired girl's ears, "It was a mistake of This King. The dish was chosen by This King for you. If This King was more careful and realized that there was something wrong with the dish, this would not have happened. If

there is anyone to blame, it should be on This King.”

Shi Xiaobai’s eyes flashed a hint of remorse. The words he said were not only to comfort the girl, but because he truly felt that he should have discovered something wrong with the dish.

Why did the dishes that were at best three points in nutritional value suddenly have a dish with eight points of nutritional value? Shi Xiaobai only believed that his luck was good, and did not go a step further to think of the reason.

And now, the reason was revealed. Inside the steak, there was a demonic beast core. The reason why the other dishes had low nutritional value was because the chef had specially removed the demonic beast’s core when handling the dishes. As for this dish, the chef had been careless and did not remove it. It caused the silver-haired girl to accidentally munch onto the demonic beast core.

Back when Shi Xiaobai was eating the gigantic black scorpions and steel rhinoceroses, he had directly eaten the demonic beast cores. They were no different from biting on toffee sweet.

However, the silver-haired girl was an ordinary person. She had bitten on a demonic beast’s core that was harder than steel without any warning, so it was obvious she would cry out in pain.

The silver-haired girl immediately shook her head vigorously when she heard his words before sinking her head into Shi Xiaobai’s chest. Her hand was still tightly covering her mouth and

her trembling shoulders made her seem like she was sobbing in grief, but she did not make a sound.

Shi Xiaobai said with a sigh, “Cry, cry out verbally. This King will be fine.”

The girl obviously refused. She shook her head vigorously once again as she buried her head deeper, as though she wanted to hide into Shi Xiaobai’s chest, and escape the tragic reality.

Suddenly, Shi Xiaobai’s nose scrunched up, as he frowned.

He smelled a hint of blood.

Shi Xiaobai’s heart missed a beat as he released his arms and took a step back. He stretched his hand out and raised the silver-haired girl’s head up. His pupils could not help but constrict violently. He noticed that there was shimmering blood in between the girl’s fingers that covered her mouth.

...

The silver-haired girl’s physique was weaker than Shi Xiaobai imagined. After she bit down on the demonic beast’s core, she had shattered a tooth.

Shi Xiaobai forcefully pulled the girl’s hands away, and even continued by opening her mouth. He saw her oral cavity completely covered in blood. The hole where her tooth had



cracked was still seeping with blood.

The girl wanted to dodge and shake her head to indicate that she was fine, but it was impossible for Shi Xiaobai to forget it. The girl frowned in pain as she tried her best to not make a single sound. It truly wrenched one's heart.

Without any hesitation, Shi Xiaobai immediately used his left hand to open the girl's lips. He stretched his right hand's index and middle finger right into the girl's oral cavity and gently covered the bleeding gums.

With a foreign object inserted into her sensitive oral cavity, the girl's eyes widened when her soft tongue touched the unfamiliar fingers. She looked incredulously at Shi Xiaobai.

The girl instinctively struggled.

“Don't move.”

Shi Xiaobai whispered, “Your wound needs to be treated.”

The girl was appalled but she quickly realized that the painful wound that she could hardly endure was healing. The pain was also subsiding. Shi Xiaobai's fingers were emitting a warm energy that healed her wound.

The girl was startled. Although she knew that Shi Xiaobai was doing it for her own good, such intimate contact made her feel shy

and embarrassed. However, Shi Xiaobai's forceful attitude did not give her a chance to reject him. Furthermore, she did not have any means of making a sound to refuse Shi Xiaobai's good intentions.

As Sunless had already returned Holy Radiance to him, Shi Xiaobai's right hand once again possessed Holy Radiance's power of light. Shi Xiaobai's first thought was to use the healing powers of Holy Radiance to treat the girl's wound. Therefore, he had inserted his fingers into the girl's oral cavity without any hesitation.

When he stuck them in, Shi Xiaobai somewhat regretted.

Shi Xiaobai gave the girl an apologetic look. He thought to himself. This King should not have done it. How could he do such a thing? How could he be so reckless?

Hands had to be washed first!

The girl noticed the apologetic look in Shi Xiaobai's eyes and thought to herself. Brother Shi Xiaobai did so unintentionally. He's only worried for me.

The girl closed her eyes as her cheeks turned red.

The power of light covered her gums. The tender flesh began to slowly heal as an unbearable itch immediately rushed to the girl's head.

The girl subconsciously used her tongue to lick the itchy spot but accidentally licked Shi Xiaobai's fingers. The girl retracted her tongue in shock as her ears suddenly turned red. She felt like her head was on fire.

As she was opening her mouth, saliva began to gather naturally and secrete after a long period of time. The sticky liquid began dripping out of her mouth, and naturally stained Shi Xiaobai's fingers.

The silver-haired girl was so embarrassed that she would rather die.

If this was a punishment from the heavens, wasn't it a bit too cruel? However, should she supposed to gladly endure the hardship?

The silver-haired girl's mind was in chaos.

At that moment, a cold voice like a winter wind sounded.

“Darling, what are the both of you doing!?””

...

# Chapter 400: A King That Doesn't Know How To Bow His Head Has No Right To Stand Above The Heads Of His Subjects

---

The commotion caused by the girl was not trivial. With the Infernal Queen's strength, she quickly sensed the abnormality of the situation and rushed here from the bedroom.

The first thing she saw was the crumbling walls and the cracks on the ground. The Infernal Queen felt slightly alarmed, but the next scene she saw rendered her astounded.

Her husband was holding the silver-haired girl's chin and had two of his fingers inserted between her pink lips!

And the silver-haired girl had her eyes closed. Her cheeks were red and the tears on her face had yet to dry.

From the scene of destruction and the tears on the girl's face, as well as the intimate actions the duo was presently in, the Infernal Queen began to automatically imagine what had just happened.

Shi Xiaobai had used force to sexually harass the silver-haired girl. He had caused the destruction in front of her, and the girl was no match for him, so all she could do was bear the humiliation with tears streaking down her cheeks!

The Infernal Queen could not believe that such a scene had happened. But combined with the fact of how Shi Xiaobai wanted

to go back to the bedroom upon arriving in the Infernal domain, the Infernal Queen had no way to deny the guess—her husband’s desires could not be fulfilled!

The Infernal Queen could not help but shout out to interrupt the hot scene in front of her.

“Darling, what are the both of you doing!?”

The Infernal Queen’s cold voice gave the silver-haired girl a fright. She suddenly opened her eyes and immediately stretched out her arms to hold onto Shi Xiaobai’s right arm. Taking advantage of the moment when Shi Xiaobai was in a daze, she pulled out his two fingers from her mouth. She took a big step back and hurriedly freed herself from the embarrassing situation.

The silver-haired girl’s heart was beating like a drum. She lowered her head and did not dare to lift it up. She was not entirely repugnant to Shi Xiaobai’s good intentions, but to be seen in the act, it was a fatal blow to a girl’s reservations.

The silver-haired girl only wished that there was a hole for her to burrow into. Furthermore, with what had just happened, she felt like her mind was in disarray. She needed to calm down.

“I’ll go back and sleep.”

The silver-haired girl hurriedly took out her writing board and wrote a few nearly unrecognizable words. Without even waiting

for Shi Xiaobai's reply, she rushed out of the room like she was fleeing. The Infernal Queen had already prepared individual bedrooms for all of them, so what the silver-haired girl wanted to do now was to hide in her room and cover herself with a blanket.

From the beginning to the end, she bowed her head deeply.

The Infernal Queen sighed in her heart as she glanced at the silver-haired girl's back. She was even more sure of her guess. Look at that girl, she was running like she was fleeing for her life. She must have been extremely reluctant.

Shi Xiaobai hesitated for a moment, but he did not retain the girl. Although he had not fully healed the wound in her mouth, what the silver-haired girl needed most at the moment was to be alone.

“Darling, what were you doing?”

The Infernal Queen asked the question once again. She was still reluctant to believe her guess and hoped that it wasn't the truth.

Shi Xiaobai faltered slightly before he turned to look at the Infernal Queen. After a moment of hesitation, he replied truthfully, “This King was treating her wounds.”

The Infernal Queen was stunned, but as she opened her mouth, she did not continue what she wanted to say. Eventually, she did not say a word.

She naturally could not believe that he was treating a wound by inserting his fingers into a young girl's mouth. It was the most ridiculous joke.

However, Shi Xiaobai had given her such a crappy excuse which could be easily exposed. It was obvious that he was feeling guilty conscience.

The Infernal Queen finally confirmed her guess, but she did not want to harp on the matter any further. In the end, if she had not been too reserved by not willing to have intercourse with Shi Xiaobai during the day, such a situation would not have happened.

The Infernal Queen's love was great and selfless. So even though Shi Xiaobai had been unloyal, she blamed it on herself. She had failed to satisfy him.

The Infernal Queen fell silent, but Shi Xiaobai said, "Sorry. The destruction here and the death of the four palace maids was the fault of This King. This King..."

Shi Xiaobai never evaded his responsibilities, nor would he shirk his responsibilities. Although the destruction and the death of the four palace maids was a result of the silver-haired girl's cry, the root cause was because of his carelessness. He had failed to discover the demonic beast core in the steak. It was he who chose the dish, so the responsibility was something he had to bear.

Shi Xiaobai did not want to explain the situation in detail because the devil-like voice was probably a secret the silver-haired girl

wanted to hide. Therefore, he would obviously not reveal it without her permission.

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she looked up and glanced at Shi Xiaobai. She interrupted Shi Xiaobai's words and said gently, "Darling, there's no need to blame yourself. If not for Darling, the Infernal domain would not be enjoying its current peace and happiness. Every citizen in the Infernal domain is willing to die for Darling, much less the four palace maids. Leave this to me. The relatives of the four palace maids will receive the compensation they deserve."

When Shi Xiaobai heard this, he could not help but fall silent. The Infernal Queen's words gave him a deep sense of the Infernal King's status in the Infernal domain. In fact, after he entered the Infernal domain, the devilish citizens he encountered along the way looked at him with fervent awe. It was as if he was their religion.

Shi Xiaobai did not doubt the words of the Infernal Queen. Although the citizens of the Infernal domain were willing to die for him, this only gave him a heavy sense of pressure.

He was not the real Infernal King. He did not make any contribution to the Infernal domain, so he was not worthy of the four palace maids sacrifice for him.

However, he did not have any other means. He could not save lives that were lost. In front of death, he was equally helpless.



“This King wants to personally apologize to their families,” said Shi Xiaobai earnestly.

Apology and compensation was useless to the dead but to the survivors, it was an essential comfort.

The Infernal Queen said in shock, “Definitely not. Darling is the most noble king, so how can...”

Shi Xiaobai stretched out his arm and interrupted her words. He said seriously, “A King that doesn’t know how to bow his head has no right to stand above the heads of his subjects.”

When the Infernal Queen heard this, she was stunned for a few seconds. The look in her eyes gradually turned soft as she gave an appreciating smile. She said, “I understand.”

...

...

After Shi Xiaobai washed his hands, he left the palace with the Infernal Queen incognito.

The two of them were extraordinarily powers, but in order to not cause unrest, they deliberately left the palace secretly. No one noticed that the two noblest existences in the Infernal domain had already mixed into the populace.

When they came to the first palace maid's home, the person who opened the door was an elderly succubus. She was given a fright before she venerated herself in front of the Infernal King and Infernal Queen.

When Shi Xiaobai explained the reason for his appearance—sadly informing the old succubus of her loss and extend to her his most sincere of apologies—the old succubus revealed a smile.

What she said remained on Shi Xiaobai's mind for a very long time.

“Death befalls all devils alike—it may be weightier than Mt. Infernal or lighter than a feather—but it's her honor to die for you. My dear king, if you blame yourself, please sit on the throne for one additional second. By just doing so, her death will be filled with value.”

Shi Xiaobai could tell that the old succubus was not forcing a smile, but that she truly felt that her daughter had a worthy death. He said that it was his fault and did not even tell her how the palace maid had died but the old succubus did not inquire any further.

In the eyes of the old succubus, the king in front of her was more important than anything else.